Charles H. Bradford.

SCHOOL EDITION.

SPIERS' FRENCH DICTIONARY.

THE ONLY ABRIDGMENT MADE BY SPIERS HIMSELF OF HIS CELEBRATED WORK, AND THE ONLY ABRIDGED SPIERS' DICTIONARY PUBLISHED IN THIS COUNTRY.

REVISED, CORRECTED, AND ENLARGED,

WITH THE PRONUNCIATION AFFIXED OF EVERY FRENCH WORD, AND A KEY TO THE PRONUNCIATION; TOGETHER WITH THE IRREGULAR TENSES AND PERSONS OF ALL THE FRENCH VERBS, ARRANGED IN THEIR ALPHABETIC PLACE IN THE DICTIONARY.

BY J. L. JEWETT,

EDITOR OF "OLLENDORFF'S NEW METHOD OF LEARNING FRENCH."

NOTICES OF THE PRESS.

"We do not hesitate to pronounce it the best French and English Dictionary of its size that exists."—*N. Y. Courier and Enquirer.*

"This is one of the most thorough and correct manuals for learning French now before the public."—*N. Y. Tribune.*

"The best, most comprehensive, and convenient work of the kind that has been published."—*Boston Atlas.*

"We know of nothing that ought to be added to make this the best small French Dictionary in the market."—*N. Y. Times.*

"We are confident it will prove a useful compendium for the student. It is particularly adapted for the use of schools."—*Boston Morning Jour.*

"It is full, complete, and precise, and adapted as well for a work of general reference as for use in the school-room, or to the self-instructing student."—*N. Y. Express.*

"In every respect an elegant and useful publication: it is, perhaps, the best small French Dictionary ever issued."—*Boston Post.*

"This is an admirably-arranged School edition of Mr. Spiers' work, and will no doubt substitute all those at present in use in educational establishments."—*N. Y. Herald.*

"It is a useful manual for all classes. The printing is of unusual beauty."—*N. Y. Churchman.*

THE PRONOUNCING SCHOOL DICTIONARY OF THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH LANGUAGES, is an abridgment by Professor Spiers of his *General French and English Dictionary*, a work which has well-nigh replaced all others of its class in Europe and America.

The superiority of Spiers' Pronouncing School Dictionary over other works of its class, will be readily seen by an enumeration of its leading characteristics; and in order that it may in a slight degree speak for itself, a specimen page is herewith appended, and the reader is requested to turn to the words referred to.

1. It is newly composed from the latest original Dictionaries in the two languages, and therefore contains the words and phrases, both English and French, of modern literature, science and art.

2. The words of one language are rendered with precision and accuracy into the other by equivalents, and not by definitions; when definitions are necessary, they are printed in a different type, and placed in parentheses, that the learner may not confound them with the proper equivalent. [See in the accompanying page of the Dictionary, the word *terre.*] N. B. This mark (—) denotes the repetition of the leading *French* word; and this (=) the repetition of the first *English* word that translates the French word marked thus (—).

3. The various acceptations of words, being modifications of one and the same idea, are arranged in logical order, and separated by figures, in order that they may not be taken for synonyms of the same acceptations. [See the word *terme.*]

4. Acceptations peculiar to certain objects, or to certain arts and sciences, are given in the alphabetical order of their designation. [See the words *tenue; ter; terne.*]

5. The principal distinctions to be observed in translation, that is, whether the senses are to be applied to persons or things, in a good or bad sense, are uniformly designated. [See the words *tentative; tenue.*]

6. The idioms are given in a separate paragraph, and so classified into series that one may be readily found without the whole being perused. Nouns are presented, 1, with adjectives; 2, with other nouns; 3, with prepositions; 4, with verbs. Verbs are arranged, 1, with adjectives or adverbs; 2, with nouns; 3, in any part of their conjugation; 4, attended by prepositions or adverbs. [See under the words *terrain; tenir; se tenir*, etc.]

7. The compound words of the two languages have been increased tenfold. The importance of this feature will be seen, when it is considered that frequently a compound in one language is a simple term in another.

8. The irregular tenses and persons of all the French irregular verbs, and the irregular plurals of nouns, are inserted in their alphabetical place.

9. Its system of pronunciation is the one adopted in French Dictionaries for the use of Frenchmen. A mastery of the sounds of the French alphabet, as contained in the "Key to the Pronunciation," will therefore enable a learner to pronounce French words correctly.

10. The English-French Part is the same in its arrangement with the French-English, and has been executed with equal care and precision, with the design to furnish every facility to learners for *speaking* and *writing* French. In addition to the accurate rendering of English words into their French equivalents, it therefore contains the equivalent French for the principal English idioms and colloquial phrases.

11. By its superior typographical arrangement, it is estimated to contain one-third more matter than any other School Dictionary of the French and English languages.

In conclusion, the Publishers ask nothing for this work but a careful examination, and comparison with other School Dictionaries.

☞ Copies will be sent to any part of the country, by mail, postage paid, by remitting $1 50. **F. J. HUNTINGTON, 23 Park Row.**

IN PRESS—TO BE ISSUED DURING THE AUTUMN,

SPIERS' COMPLETE FRENCH DICTIONARY.

It will contain many valuable features and improvements, including copious additions to the English-French Part, only to be found in this edition. The price will be so moderate as to bring it within reach of every one desirous of possessing the

Best French and English Dictionary extant.

PINNEY'S FRENCH COURSE.

PINNEY'S FIRST BOOK IN FRENCH.

182 pages 18mo, cloth. Price 50 cents. This book is more simple and easy for beginners than any heretofore published in the New Method, and is designed to precede Mr. Pinney's large work.

PINNEY'S FIRST BOOK IN FRENCH, WITH KEY.

237 pages 18mo, cloth. Price 63 cents.

THE PRACTICAL FRENCH TEACHER.

By NORMAN PINNEY and M. C. BADOIS. New and improved edition. 408 pages 12mo, cloth. Price $1 13.

KEY TO THE PRACTICAL FRENCH TEACHER.

128 pages 12mo, cloth. Price 63 cents.

PINNEY'S PROGRESSIVE FRENCH READER,

With a Lexicon. Adapted to and intended to accompany the Teacher. 278 pages 12mo, cloth. Price $1.

The leading peculiarity in these works is, that they exercise the student throughout in the constant practice of speaking. The preparation of every lesson is a preparation for speaking the language, and every lesson is an actual conversation in it. These conversations, too, are progressive and systematic; commencing with the simplest elements of the language, and advancing, one by one, through all the parts of speech, till the rudiments are thoroughly learned. The whole has been prepared with a view to overcome the difficulties which an American meets in acquiring a knowledge of that so necessary part of a finished education.

Pinney's French Books are used and recommended by many of the ablest teachers in the country. It is believed that those who become experimentally acquainted with the merits of these text-books will not willingly use any others in this department.

SPECIMEN PAGE FROM SPIERS' SCHOOL DICTIONARY.

Tendu, e, pa. p. (*V.* **Tendre**) 1. *tight* (not loose); 2. *bent*; *intent*; 3. (of style) *stiff*; *studied*; 4. (nav.) *taught*.

Non —, (*V.* —) *untrained*.

Tendre, v. n. 1. *to lead*; 2. *to tend*; *to conduce*; 3. *to hang out tapestry*; 4. *to lay snares*.

Tendrement [tan-dre-man] adv. *tenderly*; *lovingly*.

Tendresse [tan-drèss] n. f. 1. *tenderness*; *tender love*; *fondness*; *love*; 2. —s, (pl.) *tender caresses*.

— extravagante, (*V.* —) *dotage*. Avec —, *with tenderness*; *tenderly*; *lovingly*.

Tendron [tan-dron] n. m. 1. *shoot* (of plants); 2. *girl*; 3. *gristle*.

Ténèbres [té-nèbr] n. f. (pl.) 1. *darkness*; 2. *night*; 3. *dark*; *gloom*.

Âge, siècles des —, *dark ages*. Né des —, *night-born*.

Ténébreu-x, se [té-né-breu, z] adj. 1. *dark*; 2. *gloomy*; 3. *obscure*; 4. *secret*; *underhand*; 5. (pers.) *melancholy*; *gloomy*.

Teneur [tneur] n. f. 1. (law) *text*; *terms*; 2. *tenor*; *purport*.

Teneur, n. m. (com.) *keeper*.

— de livres, *book-keeper*.

Ténia [té-ni-a] n. m. (helm.) *tænia*; *tape-worm*.

Tenir [tnir] v. a. irr. 1. *to hold*; 2. *to keep*; 3. *to occupy*; 4. *to possess*; *to be possessed of*; 5. *to believe*; *to esteem*; *to think*; *to look on*; 6. (b. s.) *to detain*; 7. *to keep in order*; *to manage*; 8. *to keep* (accounts, books); 9. *to keep* (an agreement); *to perform*; 10. *to hold* (assemblies); 11. (pers.) *to be confined to* (o.'s room); 12. *to be sponsor to* (a child); 13. *to keep* (the field); 14. *to hold* (a language); *to speak*; 15. *to observe* (a medium); 16. *to be of* (a party); 17. *to keep* (a promise); *to make good*; 18. *to pursue* (a road, way); *to take*; 19. (feud.) *to hold*.

— bien ferme, (*V.* —) *to hold fast*, *tight*; — en l'air, (*V.* —) *to keep up*; — à distance, *to keep off*, *away*. Faire — q. ch. à q. u., (*V.* —) *to convey*, *to forward a. th. to a. o.*

Se tenir, pr. v. 1. *to hold*; *to hold fast*; *to cling*; 2. *to hold each other*; 3. (th.) *to adhere*; *to stick*; 4. *to stand*; 5. *to sit*; 6. *to lie*; 7. *to remain*; *to keep*; *to stay*; *to be*; 8. *to hold*, *to keep o.'s self*; 9. *to abide*; *to stand*; 10. *to stop*; 11. *to contain o.'s self*; 12. *to refrain*; *to help*; 13. *to consider*, *to think o.'s self*; 14. (of assemblies) *to sit*; 15. (of fairs, markets) *to be held*.

S'en — à, 1. *to rely on*; 2. *to adhere to*; *to stand to*; *to keep to*; s'y tenir, (cards) *to stand*. — en arrière, 1. *to keep back*; 2. *to stand back*; — debout, *to stand*; *to stand up*; — écarté, à l'écart, 1. *to stand back*, *off*; 2. *to keep away*; 3. *to hold back*; — éloigné, à distance, 1. *to keep away*, *off*; 2. *to stand off*; 3. *to hold back*; — enfermé, (pers.) *to keep in*; — en haut, (*V.* —) *to keep up*; s'en — là, 1. *to stop short*; *to stop*; 2. *to let it alone*; — près, (nav.) *to stand by*.

Tenu, e, pa. p. (*V.* **Tenir**) 1. *bound*; *obliged*; 2. *repaired*; *held*; *considered*.

Non —, (*V.* **Tenir**) 1. *unoccupied*; 2. *unkept*; 3. *unpossessed*; 4. (of agreements) *unperformed*; *unexecuted*.

Tenir, v. n. irr. 1. *to hold*; 2. *to hold fast*; 3. (th.) *to adhere*; *to stick*; 4. *to be adjacent*; 5. (th.) *to remain*; *to keep*; 6. *to hold together*; 7. *to subsist*; *to hold good*; 8. *to be connected*; *to be bound*; 9. *to be attached*; 10. *to attach importance*; *to be anxious*; 11. *to proceed*; *to result*; 12. (impers.) *to depend*; 13. *to resist*; *to withstand*; *to stand*; 14. *to support*; *to bear*; *to put up*; 15. *to resemble*; *to be like*; 16. *to be of the nature*; 17. *to participate*; *to partake*; 18. *to perform*; *to do*; 19. *to perform* (engagements); *to keep*; 20. (of assemblies) *to be held*, *holden*; *to sit*; 21. (of fairs, markets) *to be held*; 22. (mil.) *to hold*; 23. (nav.) *to stand*.

En —, (*V.* —) *to be caught*. — bon, (*V.* —) 1. *to hold on*; 2. *to stick fast*; 3. *to keep*, *to stand o.'s ground*; 4. *to hold out*; — ferme, (*V.* —) 1. *to hold fast*; 2. *to stand fast*, *firm*; 3. *to hold out*; ne pas —, ne pas — ferme, (*V.* —) *to get loose*. Tiens! tenez! 1. *take it*; 2. *hear!* 3. *here!* 4. *there!* tiens! tiens! *bless me!* *bless my heart!* tiens bon! (*V.* — bon) (nav.) *avast!* Qu'à cela ne tienne! 1. *never mind!* 2. *do not let that make any difference!*

Tenon [tnon] n. m. (arts) *tenon*.

Ténor [té-nor] n. m. (mus.) *tenor*.

Tension [tan-cion] n. f. 1. *tension*; 2. *application*. [*tentacle*; *feeler*.

Tentacule [tan-ta-kul] n. m. (ent.)

Tentant, e [tan-tan, t] adj. *tempting*. D'une manière —e, *temptingly*.

Tentateur [tan-ta-teur] n. m. 1. *tempter*; 2. † *tempter*.

Tentation [tan-tâ-cion] n. f. 1. *temptation*; 2. † *temptation*.

Sujet à la —, *liable to* — ; *temptable*. Induire en —, *to lead into* —.

Tentative [tan-ta-tiv] n. f. 1. *attempt*; *endeavor*; *trial*; 2. (b. s.) *attempt*.

Faire une —, 1. *to make an attempt*; *to attempt*; 2. (b. s.) *to make an* — ; 3. *to attempt*; faire une — de, (law) *to attempt*. [*er*; *temptress*.

Tentatrice [tan-ta-triss] n. f. *tempt-*

Tente [tantt] n. f. 1. *tent*; 2. *pavilion*; 3. (surg.) *tent*.

Tenter [tan-té] v. a. 1. *to attempt*; *to try*; 2. *to tempt*.

Tenté, e, pa. p. *V.* **Tenter**.

Non —, 1. *unattempted*; *untried*; 2. *untempted*. [*hangings*.

Tenture [tan-tur] n. f. *tapestry*;

Ténu, e [té-nu] adj. (did.) *tenuous*.

Tenue [tnü] n. f. 1. *holding*; 2. *session*; 3. (pers.) *attitude*; *sitting*; 4. (pers.) *deportment*; *carriage*; 5. (of troops) *appearance*; 6. (th.) *steadiness*; 7. (of books, registers) *keeping*; 8. (mil.) *dress*; *uniform*; 9. (nav.) *anchor-hold*.

Grande —. (mil.) *full-dress*; *uniform*; petite —, (mil.) *undress*. — des livres, *book-keeping*. [*ity*.

Ténuité [té-nu-i-té] n. f. (did.) *tenu-*

Tenure [tnur] n. f. (feud.) *tenure*.

Tépide [té-pid] adj. (did.) *tepid*.

Tépidité [té-pi-di-té] n. f. (did.) *tepidity*.

Ter [tèr] adv. 1. *third*; 2. (of numbers of houses) *three-quarters*.

Tercet [tèr-cè] n. m. (vers.) *tercet*.

Térébenthine [té-ré-ban-tinn] n. f. *turpentine*.

De —, 1. *turpentine*; 2. *terebinthine*.

Térébinthe [té-ré-baintt] n. m. (bot.) *turpentine-tree*. [*terebration*.

Térébration [té-ré-brâ-cion] n. f.

Tergiversation [tèr-ji-vèr-çâ-cion] n. f. *tergiversation*; *evasion*.

Tergiverser [tèr-ji-vèr-çé] v. n. *to tergiversate*; *to evade*.

Terme [tèrm] n. m. 1. *limit*; *bound*; *boundary*; 2. *term*; 3. *termination*; *end*; 4. *quarter-day*; 5. *quarter's rent*; *rent*; 6. *term*; *word*; *expression*; 7. —s, (pl.) *state*; *condition*; 8. (arch., arts) *term*; 9. (gram., log., math.) *term*.

Avant —, *untimely*; *before o.'s time*. Arriver à son —, *to come to an end*; mettre un — à, *to terminate*; *to put a period*, *an end to*. [*mite*.

Termès [tèr-mèss] n. m. (ent.) *ter-*

Terminaison [tèr-mi-nè-zon] n. f. 1. *end*; *ending*; *termination*; 2. (gram.) *termination*; *ending*.

Terminal, e [tèr-mi-nal] adj. (nat. hist.) *terminal*.

Terminati-f, ve [tèr-mi-na-tif, tiv] adj. (gram.) *terminational*.

Terminer [tèr-mi-né] v. a. 1. *to end*; *to terminate*; 2. *to bound*; *to limit*; 3. *to finish*; *to get through*; 4. *to close*; *to conclude*.

Se terminer, pr. v. (th.) 1. *to end*; *to terminate*; 2. *to be bounded*, *limited*; 3. *to finish*; 4. *to conclude*; *to close*; 5. *to come off*; *to go off*; 6. *to come out*.

Terminé, e, pa. p. *V.* **Terminer**.

Non —, (*V.* —) *unfinished*; *unclosed*.

Terminologie [tèr-mi-no-lo-ji] n. f. *terminology*. [*mite*.

Termite [tèr-mitt] n. m. (ent.) *ter-*

Ternaire [tèr-nèr] adj. *ternary*.

Terne [tèrn] adj. 1. *dull*; 2. *wan*; 3. (of style) *tame*; *spiritless*; *dull*.

Un peu —, 1. *dullish*; 2. *wannish*.

Terné, e [tèr-né] adj. (bot.) *tern*.

Ternir [tèr-nir] v. a. 1. *to tarnish*; 2. *to sully*; *to stain*.

Se ternir, pr. v. 1. *to tarnish*; 2. *to be sullied*; *to be stained*; 3. (of colors) *to fade*.

Terni, e, pa. p. *V.* **Ternir**.

Non —, 1. *untarnished*; 2. *unsullied*; *unstained*.

Ternissure [tèr-ni-çur] n. f. *dullness* (being tarnished).

Terrain [tè-rain] n. m. 1. *ground*; 2. *piece of ground*; 3. *ground-plot*; 4. *soil*; 5. (mining) *repository*.

— avantageux, *vantage-ground*; — élevé, *upland*. Des —s élevés, (pl.) *high* —; *upland*; sur le —, 1. *on the* —; 2. *in the field*. Céder le —, *to give* —; défendre son —, *to stand o.'s* —; sonder le — chez q. u., *to feel a. o.'s pulse*. [*queous*

Terraqué, e [tè-ra-ké] adj. *terra-*

Terrasse [tè-rass] n. f. *terrace*.

À —, *terraced*. Former en —, *to terrace*. [(build.) *earth-work*.

Terrassement [tè-rass-man] n. m.

Terrasser [tè-ra-cé] v. a. 1. *to fell in behind with earth-work*; 2. *to throw on the ground*; 3. *to fell*; 4. *to knock down*; 5. *to push down*; 6. *to dinnay*; 7. *to confound*; *to nonplus*.

Terrassier [tè-ra-cié] n. m. 1. *digger*; *excavator*; 2. *navigator*.

Terre [tèr] n. f. 1. *earth*; 2. *ground*; 3. *land*; *soil*; 4. *territory*; *dominion*; 5. *estate* (land); *grounds*; 6. *world*; 7. *potter's earth*; 8. (chem.) *earth*.

— arable, *arable land*; *arable*; — cuite, *baked clay*; — ferme, 1. *dry*

THE

PRACTICAL SPANISH TEACHER;

OR

A NEW METHOD

OF

LEARNING TO READ, WRITE, AND SPEAK,

THE

SPANISH LANGUAGE,

IN A SERIES OF LESSONS:

WITH A SYSTEM OF PRONUNCIATION; A SYNOPSIS OF GRAMMAR; AND A TABLE OF SPANISH VERBS.

BY NORMAN PINNEY, A. M.
LATE PROFESSOR OF LANGUAGES IN TRINITY COLLEGE,
AND JUAN BARCELÓ.

NEW YORK:
F. J. HUNTINGTON AND MASON BROTHERS,
23 PARK ROW, OPPOSITE THE ASTOR HOUSE.
1855.

STEREOTYPED BY
RICHARD H. HOBBS
HARTFORD, CONN.

PREFACE.

THE superior value of the oral method, for imparting a knowledge of the modern languages, is now so generally acknowledged, that nothing need be said on the importance of applying it to so beautiful and useful a language as the Spanish. In the present work, it has been my endeavor to meet especially the wants of the American learner. I have labored at the same time for completeness and brevity. While I have endeavored to omit nothing which is necessary to a full, clear, and systematic presentation of the Spanish grammar, all superfluous matter has been carefully excluded. The rules, it is believed, will be found brief, and abundantly illustrated, the repetitions as numerous as the method requires, and the progress, from the simple to the complicated, so gradual that the faithful student must find the whole book as easy and agreeable, as the study of a new language can well be made.

The verbs are treated here in the same way as in the Practical French Teacher. The irregular forms belonging to each tense are all introduced, one at a time, and made familiar to the learner, before the general rule for the formation of that tense is given. By this simple and easy means, not only is all study of exceptions avoided, but a practical familiarity, a spontaneous ease and readiness, in the use of the irregular verbs is given, which no mere study or committing to memory of paradigms can ever bestow.

It will be seen, that with each of the vocabularies and collections of oral exercises, except in a few of the first lessons,

are given also selections to be translated into English. These are adapted throughout to the grammatical advancement of the learner, and through the last half of the book are selections from the best Spanish writers. This volume is, therefore, grammar, dictionary, and reader in itself; and, he who has studied it thoroughly, which can be done in no great length of time, will be able to express his ideas in Spanish, both orally and in writing, and to enter with ease and satisfaction upon the perusal of Spanish authors.

To Señor Don JUAN BARCELÓ, of New York, whose name is associated with my own on the title page, the present work is indebted for the system of pronunciation, and many other valuable additions and suggestions, which, as a native of Spain, an eminent scholar, and a skillful and experienced teacher, he was peculiarly qualified to make.

N. PINNEY.

MOBILE, 1855.

INDEX.

The numbers in this index refer to the pages of the grammar.

SPANISH ALPHABET.

A,	a,	*ah.*	M,	m,	*amay.*
B,	b,	*bay.*	N,	n,	*anay.*
C,	c,	*thay.*	Ñ,*	ñ,*	*anyeay.*
Ch,*	ch,	*chay.*	O,	o,	*o.*
D,	d,	*day.*	P,	p,	*pay.*
E,	e,	*a.*	Q,	q,	*koo.*
F,	f,	*effay.*	R,	r,	*erray.*
G,	g,	*hay.*	S,	s,	*asay.*
H,	h,	*atchay.*	T,	t,	*tay.*
I,	i,	*e.*	U,	u,	*oo.*
J,	j,	*hotah.*	V,	v,	*vay.*
K,	k,	*kah.*	X,	x,	*akiss.*
L,	l,	*alay.*	Y,	y,	*egreeága.*
Ll,	ll,*	*ulyeay.*	Z,	z,	*thaytah.*

RULES FOR PRONUNCIATION.

VOWELS:	A,	E,	I,	O,	U,	Y.
PRONUNCIATION:	ah,	a,	e,	o,	oo,	e.

1. Vowels, in Spanish, always preserve the same sound.

2. The vowel *u* is not pronounced in the syllables *que, qui, gue, gui;* as, *guerra, guirnalda; queso, quinta.*

3. The vowel *u* is pronounced in the syllables *que, qui, gue, gui,* when the diæresis is used: *Vergüenza, güeldres.*

* *Ch, ll,* and *ñ,* constitute distinct letters by themselves, and are arranged as such in most Spanish dictionaries.

CONSONANTS.

4. B, F, K, L, M, N, P, Q, T, V, X, are pronounced as in English.

5. *H* is never pronounced in Spanish.

6. *C* is pronounced like *th* (in *think*,) before *e*, *i*; *cedro*, *cicion*; and like *c* (in *cap*,) before *a*, *o*, *u*; *cabeza*, *colina*, *cuerpo*.

7. *Ch* is pronounced as in the English word *charity*: *chal*, *cherna*, *chispa*, *chorro*, *chucheria*.

8. *G* is pronounced like *h* (in *hen*,) before *e* and *i*: *gente*, *gigante*; in every other case, as *g* in *gap*: *gana*, *goloso*, *guapo*.

9. The Spanish *J* is always pronounced like *g* before *e* and *i*: *jabeque*, *jefe*, *jilguero*, *jornada*, *juez*.

10. The Spanish *Ll* (a consonant in itself, different from *L*,) is pronounced like the English *lli*, in the word *William*: *Llama*, *lleneza*, *llovizna*, *lluvia*.

11. *Ñ*, (a consonant differing from *n*,) is pronounced like *ni* in the word *onion*: *ñaque*, *ñoño*, *niño*, *niñez*.

12. The Spanish *R* is rolled, except when between two vowels; in the last case it is pronounced like the *r* in the word *very*: *rama*, *region*, *rio*, *roca*, *rubí*, *ara*, *pera*.

13. The double *r* is rolled, and pronounced like a single *r*: *arrabal*, *arreglo*, *arroyo*, *arribo*, *arruga*.

14. *S* is pronounced as in the word *six*: *salve*, *selva*, *pasion*, *posesion*.

15. *Z* is pronounced as *th* (in *theme*) before all vowels: *zapato*, *zelo*, *azúcar*.

16. *L* is pronounced as in the word *blind*: *blanco*, *bledo*, *biblia*.

17. *D* is pronounced like *th* at the end of a word: *amistad*, *verdad*, *salud*; and like *d* in *do*, in all other cases: *dama*, *dueña*, *don*, *doña*, *aduana*, *Eduardo*.

18. *K* is now used only in a few words taken from other languages.

STRESS OF THE VOICE.

1. Words of more than one syllable, ending with a vowel, place the stress on the last syllable but one: *monte*, *palabra*.

2. Words ending with a consonant, place the stress on the last syllable: *amor*, *salud*.

3. Persons of verbs, whether they end with a vowel or a consonant have the stress on the last syllable but one: *amo*, *canto*, *hablan*, *pasaron*, *viven*, *saben*, *comieron*, *salieron*.

EXCEPTIONS.

4. When a word differs from the preceding rules, an accent (´) is placed on the vowel on which the stress is placed: *árbol*, *hábil*, *cantó*, *hablé*, *pasábamos*.

5. The imperfect and conditional of verbs of the second and third conjugations, also the conditional of the first conjugation, have the stress on the *i* of the last syllable: *Comia*, *sabian*, *mataria*, *aprenderia*, *sabrian*, *ofenderian*, *poseian*, *partiria*, *saludaria*.

REMARKS.

When any vowel except *y* is used as a part of speech, the accent (´) is placed upon it: *Padre é hijo; Hablo ó callo; Voy á ver á mi padre.*

Some words have the accent to distinguish them from others of the same letters: *él* (he), *el* (the); *sé* (I know,) *se* (himself, etc.,); *sí* (himself), *si*, (if); *dé* (I may give), *de* (of, from); *tú* (thou), *tu* (thy); *té* (tea), *te* (thee), etc.

The plural never changes the pronunciation of words.

The Spanish Academy and most writers use the letter *z* rather than *c* with words that have *z* in their origin: *Zelo*, (*Zelus*). The same authority is to be found for the use of the *g* in many words rather than *j*: *genealogía*, *etc.* Also in the use of *y* instead of *i*: *Hablar poco y escuchar mucho; ví y leí; leyendo*, *ley*, *yerro*, *etc.* It must be observed that the *y* is used as a conjunction; also at the end of a word, when preceded by a vowel forming with it but one syllable; and at the beginning of a syllable when followed by a vowel. Although some persons differ in this, I prefer in all cases to follow the rule of the Academy, and would advise all students to do the same.

The learner will often find a difference among Spanish writers in the use of letters which have similar sounds. He will find such letters frequently used for each other; as

c and *q*, in *cuando*, *quando*; *cuanto*, *quanto*.
j and *g*, in *mujer*, *muger*; *dije*, *dige*.
j and *x*, in *lejos*, *lexos*; *reloj*, *relox*.
x and *s*, in *extranjero*, *estranjero*; *excelente*, *escelente*.

He will sometimes find used in this way also, *b* and *v*, *c* and *ch*, *c* and *s*, *c* and *z*, *f* and *h* in the beginning of a word, and *i* and *y*. Thus, for *albedrio* he may find *alvedrio*, for *herido*, *ferido*, etc.

DIPTHONGS.

In dipthongs the two vowels are sounded, but form only one syllable. They are sixteen in number.

1. ai, ay,	*dais*,	*hay*.	9. io,	*medio*,	*apio*.
2. au,	*causa*,	*pausa*.	10. iu,	*ciudad*,	*viudez*
3. ei, ey,	*veis*,	*ley*.	11. oe,	*poesía*,	*héroe*.
4. ea,	*línea*,	*Bóreas*.	12. oi, oy,	*sois*,	*doy*.
5. eo,	*veo*,	*cutaneo*.	13. ua,	*lengua*,	*agua*.
6. eu,	*deuda*,	*deudor*.	14. ue,	*puente*,	*sueño*.
7. ia,	*gloria*,	*hacia*.	15. ui, uy,	*guia*,	*muy*.
8. ie,	*viento*,	*cielo*.	16. uo,	*arduo*,	*mutuo*.

When in the dipthongs *i* and *u* are accented, each forms a separate syllable; as, *brío*, *efectúa*.

The tripthongs are four: *iai*, *iei*, *uai* or *uay*, *uei* or *uey*; as *apreciais*, *vacieis*, *santiguais*, *Paraguay*, *averigüeis*, *buey*.

SPANISH GRAMMAR.

1. LECCION PRIMERA.

ARTICLES, NOUNS, ETC.

The.	{ *El,** (masculine.) { *La*, (feminine.)
The *wine*. The *bag*, *sack*.	El *vino*. El *saco*.
The *gold*. The *cheese*.	El *oro*. El *queso*.
The *thread*. The *cloth*.	El *hilo*. El *paño*.
The *nail*. The *hat*.	El *clavo*. El *sombrero*.
You, (singular.)	*Usted*, (contracted V., Vd., Vm.)

REMARK 1. *Usted* is a noun of the third person, syncopated from *Vuestra Merced*, (Your Honor,) and of course takes verbs and pronouns of the third person.

Have you, (has Your Honor?)	¿ *Tiene* V.?

REMARK 2. An interrogation point is placed both at the beginning and end of a question in Spanish.

I have.	*Yo tengo.*
Have you the gold?	¿ Tiene V. el oro?
I have the gold.	Yo tengo el oro.
Yes. Yes, *sir*.	*Si.* Si, *señor*.
Yes, sir; I have the gold.	Si, señor; yo tengo el oro.

Have you the wine? I have the wine. Have you the bag? I have the bag. Have you the cheese? I have the cheese. Have

* Words introduced for the first time, are printed in italics.

you the thread? I have the thread. Have you the cloth? Yes, sir; I have the cloth. Have you the nail? Yes, sir; I have the nail. Have you the hat? Yes, sir; I have the hat. Have you the gold? Yes, sir.

---

2. LECCION SEGUNDA.

NOUNS, ETC.

The *sofa*. The *umbrella*.	El *sofá*. El *paráguas*.
The *map*. The *poem*.	El *mapa*. El *poema*.
The *gun*. The *bread*.	El *fusil*. El *pan*.
The *biscuit*. The *coffee*.	El *bizcocho*. El *café*.
The *tea*. The *chocolate*.	El *té*. El *chocolate*.
The *sugar*. The *egg*.	El *azúcar*. El *huevo*.
No. No, sir.	*No*. No, señor.
Have I? You have.	*¿ Tengo yo? V. tiene.*
Have I the sofa?	¿ Tengo yo el sofá?
You have the sofa.	V. tiene el sofá.
Have I the umbrella?	¿ Tengo yo el paráguas?
No, sir; you have the map	No, señor; V. tiene el mapa.

Have I the poem? You have the poem. Have I the gun? You have the gun. Have I the bread? You have the bread. Have I the biscuit? You have the biscuit. Have I the coffee? You have the coffee. Have I the tea? You have the tea. Have I the chocolate? You have the chocolate. Have I the sugar? No, sir; I have the sugar. Have you the egg? I have the egg. Have I the wine? No, sir; you have the tea. Have I the bag? No, sir; you have the gold. Have I the cheese? Yes, sir. Have I the thread? No, sir; you have the cloth. Have I the nail? Yes, sir; you have the nail. Have I the hat? No, sir. Have you the sofa? No, sir; I have the umbrella. Have you the map? No, sir; I have the poem. Have you the gun? I have the gun. Have you the bread? No, sir; I have the biscuit.

3. LECCION TERCERA.

NOUNS, ADJECTIVES, ETC.

Not.	*No*, (before the verb.)
Have you not the coffee?	¿No tiene V. el café?
I have not the coffee.	Yo no tengo el café.
Have I not the chocolate?	¿No tengo yo el chocolate?
You have not the chocolate.	V. no tiene el chocolate.
And. The sugar and the egg.	*Y.* El azúcar y el huevo.
Of, from. My. My coffee.	*De. Mi.* Mi café.
Your.	*Su*, or *El de V.*, or *Su de V.*
Your bread.	Su pan, or Su pan de V., or El pan de V.
I have your gun.	Yo tengo su fusil. Yo tengo su fusil de V. Yo tengo el fusil de V.

REMARK 1. *Su de V.* is more respectful and polite than *el de V.*

Blue. Green.	*Azul. Verde.*
What? (adjective.) What wine?	*¿Que?* ¿Que vino?
What bag have you?	¿Que saco tiene V.?
I have your bag.	Yo tengo su saco de V.
Have you my gold?	¿Tiene V. mi oro?
I have your gold.	Yo tengo su oro de V.
Have I my cheese?	¿Tengo yo mi queso?
You have your cheese.	V. tiene su queso.
Have I not my thread?	¿No tengo yo mi hilo?
You have not your thread.	V. no tiene su hilo.
Have you not your cloth?	¿No tiene V. su paño?
I have not my cloth.	Yo no tengo mi paño.
What cloth have you?	¿Que paño tiene V.?
I have the green cloth and the blue.	Yo tengo el paño verde y el azul.

REMARK 2. Adjectives are commonly placed after their nouns.

Have you the nail? No, sir; I have not the nail. Have you the hat? Yes, sir; I have the hat. Have I your sofa? You have my sofa. Have I your umbrella? You have my umbrella. Have you not the map? I have not the map. Have you not my poem? I have not your poem. Have I not your gun? You have not my gun. Have I not my bread? You have not your bread. Have you the biscuit and the coffee? No, sir; I have not the biscuit. Have

you the tea? Yes, sir; I have the tea, the sugar, and the coffee. Have you not the chocolate? No, sir; I have not the chocolate. What egg have you not? I have not your egg. What hat have I? You have the blue hat and the green. Have you not the green cloth? I have not the green cloth; I have the blue.

---

4. LECCION CUARTA.

GENDER OF NOUNS.

RULE. Nouns ending in *a, d, ion, umbre, ie,* and abstract nouns in *ez,* are all, with few exceptions, feminine gender. Almost all nouns of other terminations are masculine. The article agrees in gender with its noun, i. e. the feminine noun takes *la,* as the masculine does *el.*

The *coat*, (dress-coat.) The *stocking*.	La *casaca*. La *media*.
The *shirt*. The *cravat*.	La *camisa*. La *corbata*.
The *cloak*. The *bed*.	La *capa*. La *cama*.
The *silver*. The *net*.	La *plata*. La *red*.
The *cow*, or *beef*. The *boot*.	La *vaca*. La *bota*.
The coat of cloth. The nail of silver.	La casaca de paño. El clavo de plata.
Have you the coat?	¿Tiene V. la casaca?
I have not the coat; I have the cloak.	No tengo la casaca; tengo la capa.

REMARK. The subject is often sufficiently indicated by the termination of the verb, or by the construction, and it may then be omitted.

Have I not your cravat?	¿No tengo yo la corbata de V.?
You have my cravat and my stocking.	V. tiene mi corbata y mi media.
Have you the shirt?	¿Tiene V. la camisa?
I have the shirt and the cravat.	Tengo la camisa y la corbata.
What net have you?	¿Que red tiene V.?
I have the blue net and the green.	Tengo la red azul y la verde.

Have you the bed? I have the bed. Have you not the silver? I have not the silver. Have I your cow? You have my cow. Have I not the boot? You have not the boot. What coat have I?

You have the blue coat. What stocking have I? You have your stocking. Have you the shirt and the cravat? Yes, sir; and I have the cloak and the bed. What silver have you? I have my silver. What net have you? I have your net. Have you not my cow? I have not your cow. What boot have I? You have my boot. Have you my wine? No, sir; I have not your wine; I have your bag and your gold. Have I not the cheese? Yes, sir; you have the cheese and the bread. Have I not your thread? Yes, sir; and you have my cloth. What nail have I? You have the nail of gold. Have you not my hat? Yes, sir.

---

5. LECCION QUINTA.

GENDER OF ADJECTIVES.

RULE. Adjectives ending in *o*, change *o* into *a* for the feminine, and those ending in *an, on, or*, and national adjectives, add an *a;* all other adjectives are the same in both genders. Adjectives agree in gender with their nouns.

Good.	*Bueno*, (masculine,) *buena*, (feminine.)
New.	*Nuevo*, (masculine,) *nueva*, (feminine.)
Old.	*Viejo*, (masculine,) *vieja*, (feminine.)
Small. Fine.	*Pequeño, a. Fino, a.*
Pretty. Handsome.	*Lindo, a*, or *bonito, a. Hermoso, a.*
Large. Excellent.	*Grande. Excelente.*
The new sofa. The new coat.	El sofá nuevo. La casaca nueva.
The old umbrella. The old stocking.	El paráguas viejo. La media vieja.
The fine cloth. The fine shirt.	El paño fino. La camisa fina.
The pretty map. The pretty cravat.	El mapa lindo. La corbata bonita.
The handsome gun.	El fusil hermoso.
The handsome cloak.	La capa hermosa.
The large egg. The large bed.	El huevo grande. La cama grande.
The excellent bread.	El pan excelente.
The excellent beef.	La vaca excelente.

Bueno is often placed before the singular noun, and then loses the final *o*, masculine.

The good poem.	El buen poema, or poema bueno.
The good silver.	La plata buena.
Have you not the good biscuit?	¿No tiene V. el buen bizcocho?
No, sir; I have the good beef.	No, señor; tengo la vaca buena.
Have I not the new hat?	¿No tengo yo el sombrero nuevo?
Yes, sir; and you have the new boot.	Si, señor; y V. tiene la bota nueva.

Have you the good coffee? Yes, sir; and I have the good tea. Have you not the new silver? Yes, sir; and I have the new gold. Have I your old net? No, sir; you have my old boot. Have I not the good chocolate? Yes, sir; and you have the good sugar. Have you the small hat? No, sir; I have the small coat. Have you not the fine thread? Yes, sir; and I have the fine cravat. What stocking have I? You have the pretty stocking. Have I not the handsome cloth? No, sir; you have the handsome cloak. Have you the large bag? Yes, sir; and I have the large net. Have you the excellent tea? Yes, sir; and I have the excellent beef. What net have I? You have the green net and the blue. Have I the nail of silver? Yes, sir.

---

6. LECCION SEXTA.

NOUNS, ADJECTIVES, ETC.

The *man*. The *woman*, *wife*.	El *hombre*. La *mujer*.
The *boy*. The *girl*.	El *muchacho*. La *muchacha*.
He, *it*. *She*, *it*.	*El*, (masculine.) *Ella*, (feminine.)
Has he? He has.	¿Tiene él? El tiene.
Has she? She has.	¿Tiene ella? Ella tiene.
Has the boy? The boy has.	¿Tiene el muchacho? El muchacho tiene.
Has not the woman?	¿No tiene la mujer?
The woman has not.	La mujer no tiene.
The *horse*. The *ox*.	El *caballo*. El *buey*.
White. *Black*.	*Blanco*. *Negro*.
The white horse. The black ox.	El caballo blanco. El buey negro.
Has the man your horse?	¿Tiene el hombre su caballo de V.?
He has not my horse.	El no tiene mi caballo.

What ox has the girl?	¿Que buey tiene la muchacha?
She has the white ox.	Ella tiene el buey blanco.
His, her, its, their.	*Su.*
Has not the man his wine?	¿No tiene el hombre su vino?
He has his wine.	El tiene su vino.
What bag has the woman?	¿Que saco tiene la mujer?
She has her bag.	Ella tiene su saco.

REMARK. When *su* means *your*, and not *his* or *her*, etc., *de V.* must always be annexed, unless the context is such as to avoid ambiguity.

Has not the boy your hat?	¿No tiene el muchacho su sombrero de V.?
No, sir; he has his hat.	No, señor; él tiene su sombrero.
Has the girl her thread?	¿Tiene la muchacha su hilo?
No, sir; she has your thread.	No, señor; ella tiene su hilo de V.

Has the man his black ox? He has his black ox and his white horse. Has not the boy your horse? No, sir; he has not my horse; he has his ox. What horse has the man? He has his black horse. What ox has the boy? He has your white ox. What gold has he? He has the good gold. What bag has the woman? She has her small bag. Has she her thread? No, sir; she has your cloth. What cheese has the girl? She has the new cheese. Has she the nail of silver? No, sir; she has the old umbrella. Have I not your hat? No, sir; you have the hat of my boy. Have you not the small stocking? Yes, sir; and I have the fine cravat. What cloak has the girl? She has her handsome cloak. Have you not the large bed? Yes, sir; and I have the excellent cloth.

---

7. LECCION SÉPTIMA.

NOUNS, ADJECTIVES, ETC.

What, (interrogative.)	*Que.*
What have you?	¿Que tiene V.?
Red. The *calf.*	*Colorado.* El *ternero.*
The *stick*, *cane.* The *shoe.*	El *baston.* El *zapato.*
The *bull.* The *dog.*	El *toro.* El *perro.*
Yellow. The yellow shoe.	*Amarillo.* El zapato amarillo.
The red stick. The green stick.	El baston colorado. El baston verde.

Of the. *Del*, (masculine,) *de la*, (feminine.)

REMARK 1. *Del* is a contraction for *de el*.

The man's hat, or the hat of the man. El sombrero del hombre.

REMARK 2. The Spanish have no possessive case of nouns, but instead of it place *de* before the possessor, as in this last phrase.

The boy's coat, or the coat of the boy.	La casaca del muchacho.
The girl's fruit, or the fruit of the girl.	La fruta de la muchacha.
The woman's shoe.	El zapato de la mujer.
The *father*. The *mother*.	El *padre*. La *madre*.
My father's stick.	El baston de mi padre.
Your mother's cow.	La vaca de su madre de V.
What has your father?	¿Que tiene su padre de V.?
He has the boy's calf.	Tiene el ternero del muchacho.
What has my mother?	¿Que tiene mi madre?
She has the man's sugar.	Tiene el azúcar del hombre.

Has the man the woman's cow? No, sir; he has the boy's calf. What has the girl? She has the man's cane. Has she not the red shoe? No, sir; she has the black. Has your father the white bull? Yes, sir; and he has the little dog. What has the boy? He has the girl's yellow shoe. What has she? She has her fruit. What have you? I have the boy's gun. Has he not your umbrella? He has not my umbrella; he has the man's cane. What net have you? I have the red net. Have you not the man's bread? No, sir; I have his biscuit. Has he the tea and the coffee? No, sir; he has the chocolate. What has the girl? She has the woman's fruit. Has she the boy's pretty dog? No, sir; she has not his dog. What has the man? He has the egg and the bread. Have you the man's large horse? Yes, sir; and I have the boy's pretty dog, and the woman's excellent cow.

---

8. LECCION OCTAVA.

NOUNS, PRONOUNS, ETC.

Him, it. *Her, it.* *Le*, (masculine.) *La*, (feminine.)

Has my father his bull? ¿Tiene mi padre su toro?

He has him.	Le tiene.

REMARK 1. The above pronouns are placed before the verb in Spanish.

Has he the boy's cheese?	¿Tiene él el queso del muchacho?
He has it.	Le tiene.
Has your mother the girl's cow?	¿Tiene su madre de V. la vaca de la muchacha?
She has her.	La tiene.
Has she not the good bed?	¿No tiene ella la cama buena?
She has it.	La tiene.
The *judge*. The *light*.	El *juez*. La *luz*.
Has the judge your light?	¿Tiene el juez la luz de V.?
Yes, sir; he has it.	Si, señor; la tiene.

REMARK 2. The English adjective with *one* annexed, is rendered into Spanish by the adjective only.

The large one. The small one.	El grande. El pequeño.
The new one. The old one.	El nuevo. El viejo.
What light has the judge?	¿Que luz tiene el juez?
He has the good one.	Tiene la buena.
Has he the pretty one?	¿Tiene él la linda?
He has it not.	No la tiene.
Or. The red one or the green one.	*O*. El colorado ó el verde.
Have you the calf or the cow?	¿Tiene V. el ternero ó la vaca?
I have the calf and the cow.	Tengo el ternero y la vaca.
Has your father the white bull or the black one?	¿Tiene su padre de V. el toro blanco ó el negro?
He has the black one.	Tiene el negro.

Has the man the judge's horse? He has him. Has he his ox? He has him not. What stocking has the woman? She has the white one. Has she not the handsome sofa? No, sir; your father has it. Has she the large bed? She has it. Has the boy his black dog? He has him. Has he the judge's cane? He has it not; he has the man's cane. Has he not the green one? No, sir; he has the yellow one. What has the girl? She has her yellow shoe. Has she not the green one? She has it not. Has she not the boy's light? She has it. Has she the large one, or the small one? She has the large one. What have you? I have the judge's silver. Have you the new, or the old? I have the new. What map have I? You have the girl's map. Have you the large map, or the small? I have the small. Have I not your gun? You have it.

9. LECCION NONA.

NOUNS PRONOUNS, ETC.

We. Have we?	*Nosotros. ¿ Tenemos nosotros?*
We have.	Nosotros tenemos.
Have we not?	¿ No tenemos nosotros?
We have not.	Nosotros no tenemos.
Our. Our *copper.*	*Nuestro.* Nuestro *cobre.*
Your *brass.*	Su *bronce* (or *el bronce*) de V.
Have we our copper?	¿ Tenemos nosotros nuestro cobre?
We have it.	Nosotros le tenemos.
Have we not our brass?	¿ No tenemos nuestro bronce?
We have it not.	No le tenemos.
What have we?	¿ Que tenemos nosotros?
We have the large horse.	Tenemos el caballo grande.
Have we him?	¿ Le tenemos nosotros?
We have him.	Le tenemos.
What cow have we?	¿ Que vaca tenemos nosotros?
We have the man's cow.	Tenemos la vaca del hombre.
Have we not her?	¿ No la tenemos nosotros?
We have her not.	No la tenemos.
Small. The *foot.*	*Chico.* El *pié.*
The small dog.	El perro chico.
He has the foot large.	El tiene el pié grande.
The *iron.* The nail of iron.	El *hierro.* El clavo de hierro.

REMARK. *O* becomes *ú* before a word beginning with *o* or *ho*; and *y* becomes *é* before one beginning with *i* or *hi*.

Silver or gold.	Plata ú oro.
Brass and iron.	Bronce é hierro.

Have we not the copper? We have the copper. What brass have we? We have our brass. Have we the little nail? We have it not. Have we the copper, or the gold? We have the copper and the gold. Have we not our brass? We have it. What iron have we? We have our iron. What light has the judge? He has the good one. Have we it not? We have it not. Have we not your mother's cow? We have her not. Have we your father's horse? We have him. What shoe have we? We have the yellow one.

Have we not the man's bull? We have him not. Have we not the boy's red cane? We have it not. Have we your mother's cow? No, sir; we have her not. Have we the girl's cloak? We have it. Have we not the man's ox? We have him. Has the woman the black calf? She has him. Has she the calf, or the cow? She has the calf.

---

10. LECCION DÉCIMA.

PLURAL OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

The, (plural.) *Los*, (masculine,) *las*, (feminine.)

RULE. Substantives and adjectives ending in an unaccented vowel, or an accented é, form the plural by adding *s*, those ending in a consonant, or in a vowel accented, (i. e. on which the stress of voice is laid,) except *e*, form it by adding *es;* and, articles and adjectives agree with their nouns in number.

The bags. The coats.	Los sacos. Las casacas.
The good hats.	Los buenos sombreros.
The good cloaks.	Las buenas capas.
The small nails.	Los clavos pequeños.
The small stockings.	Las medias pequeñas.
The large bags.	Los sacos grandes.
The large shirts.	Las camisas grandes.
The pretty sofas.	Los sofás lindos.
The pretty nets.	Las redes lindas.
The guns. The sticks.	Los fusiles. Los bastones.
You, your Honors, (plural.)	*Ustedes*, (contracted, *VV.*, *Vds.*, *Vms.*)
My, (plural.) Our, (plural.)	Mis. Nuestros, as.
Your, (plural.)	Sus; or Sus de V., or VV. / Los de V., or VV.
His, her, its, their, (plural.)	Sus.
What cravats have you?	¿Que corbatas tiene V.?
I have my white cravats.	Tengo mis corbatas blancas.
Of the, (plural.)	*De los*, (masculine,) *de las*, (feminine.)
The men's boots.	Las botas de los hombres.
The women's shoes.	Los zapatos de las mujeres.

We have the boys' stockings.	Nosotros tenemos las medias de los muchachos.
Has your father the large beds?	¿Tiene su padre de V. las camas grandes?
No, sir; he has the small ones.	No, señor; tiene las pequeñas.
Them.	*Los*, (mas.,) *las*, (fem.,) before the verb.
Have you your shoes?	¿Tiene V. sus zapatos?
I have them.	Los tengo.
Has the man his horses?	¿Tiene el hombre sus caballos?
He has them not.	No los tiene.
Have we not the woman's cows?	¿No tenemos nosotros las vacas de la mujer?
We have them.	Las tenemos.

REMARK. *Z* final is changed into *ces* for the plural.

The lights. The judges.	Las luces. Los jueces.
Have we the judges' lights?	¿Tenemos nosotros las luces de los jueces?
We have them not.	No las tenemos.

Have we the guns of your father? We have them not; we have his nets. Have we not our mother's lights? Yes, sir; we have them. Have we not the boy's shoes? No, sir; we have them not. Has he not the feet large? He has them large. Have you my guns? No, sir; I have the man's guns. Have I not your cravats? Yes, sir; you have them, and you have the man's boots. Have we the new boots? No, sir; we have the old ones. What calves have we? We have the men's calves. Have we not their oxen? No, sir; we have their horses. What shoes have you? I have my yellow shoes and my black boots. Has the woman her cows? She has them. Have I not your cane? No, sir; you have the boy's cane. Have we the large eggs, or the small ones? We have the large and the small ones. What dogs have we? We have the boys' black dogs. Have we their blue cravats? No, sir; we have them not.

---

11. LECCION UNDÉCIMA.

THIRD PERSON PLURAL OF THE VERB.

Have you? (plural.) We have.	*¿Tienen VV.?* Nosotros tenemos.
Have we? You have.	¿Tenemos nosotros? VV. tienen.

Have we not? You have not.	¿No tenemos nosotros? VV. no tienen.
Have you not? We have not.	¿No tienen VV.? Nosotros no tenemos.
The *lead*. Our *steel*.	El *plomo*. Nuestro *acero*.
My *money*. His *hammer*.	Mi *dinero*. Su *martillo*.
My *brother*. Your *sister*.	Mi *hermano*. La (su) *hermana* de V.
A.	*Un*, (masculine,) *una*, (feminine.)
A man. A woman.	Un hombre. Una mujer.
One.	*Uno*, (masculine,) *una*, (feminine.)
Two. *Three*.	*Dos*. *Tres*.
Our *uncle*. Our *aunt*.	Nuestro *tio*. Nuestra *tia*.
My *cousin*.	Mi *primo*, (masculine,) mi *prima*, (fem.)
Two brothers. Two sisters.	Dos hermanos. Dos hermanas.
Three uncles. Three aunts	Tres tios. Tres tias.
Our cousins, (mas.) Our cousins, (fem.)	Nuestros primos. Nuestras primas.
Have you my lead?	¿Tienen VV. mi plomo?
No, sir; we have your steel.	No, señor; tenemos su acero de V.
Has your brother my money?	¿Tiene su hermano de V. mi dinero?
No, sir; my sister has it.	No, señor; mi hermana le tiene.
Has your uncle the hammer?	¿Tiene su tio de V. el martillo?
He has it.	Le tiene.
Have you an aunt?	¿Tienen VV. una tia?
We have an aunt and an uncle.	Tenemos una tia y un tio.
I have two cousins and you have three.	Yo tengo dos primos y VV. tienen tres.

Have you our lead? We have it. Have we not your steel? You have it not. Have you not my brother's money? We have it not; your sister has it. Have we your uncle's hammer? You have it. Have you not two uncles? Yes, sir; we have three. What have you? We have our cousins' lead. Have you not their steel? We have it. Have we not the hammers of iron? We have them. Has my cousin the money? She has it. Have you a brother? I have a brother and a sister. Have you not three uncles? We have three uncles and three aunts. Has your cousin the lead and the steel? No, sir; he has the copper. Has your cousin her money? She has it. Have we our guns? You have them. What has your father? He has the lead and the steel? Have you my brother's money? We have it not. Have you not my cousin's boots? We have them. Have you the red, or the black ones? We have the black ones.

12. LECCION DUODÉCIMA.

PRONOUNS, ETC.

They.	*Ellos*, (masculine,) *ellas*, (feminine.)
Have they?	¿ Tienen ellos, (or ellas?)
They have.	Ellos (or ellas) tienen.
Have they not?	¿ No tienen ellas, (or ellos?)
They have not.	Ellas (or ellos) no tienen.
The *neighbor.*	El *vecino*, (masculine,) la *vecina*, (fem.)
The *merchant.*	El *comerciante*, el *mercader.*
The *candlestick.* The *button.*	El *candelero.* El *boton.*

REMARK 1. *De* is placed before the material to denote that of which any thing consists or is made.

The gold buttons.	Los botones de oro.
The silver candlesticks.	Los candeleros de plata.
The iron hammers.	Los martillos de hierro.
The cloth cloaks.	Las capas de paño.

REMARK 2. *The one, the ones*, with such material is rendered by the article only.

The copper one, or the one of copper.	El de cobre, (mas.,) la de cobre, (fem.)
The brass one, or the one of brass.	El de bronce, (mas.,) la de bronce, (fem.)
The iron ones, or the ones of iron.	Los de hierro, (mas.,) las de hierro, (fem.)
The leaden ones, or the ones of lead.	Los de plomo, (mas.,) las de plomo, (fem.)
Have the neighbors their buttons?	¿ Tienen los vecinos sus botones?
They have them.	Ellos los tienen.
Have not the neighbors the merchants' candlesticks?	¿ No tienen las vecinas los candeleros de los mercaderes?
They have them not.	Ellas no los tienen.
What nails have the boys?	¿ Que clavos tienen los muchachos?
They have the iron ones.	Tienen los de hierro.
What coats have they?	¿ Que casacas tienen ellos?
They have the cloth ones.	Tienen las de paño.
Has your cousin the silver button?	¿ Tiene su prima de V. el boton de plata?
No, sir; she has the one of gold.	No, señor; tiene el de oro.
What cloak has she?	¿ Que capa tiene ella?
She has the cloth one.	Tiene la de paño.

What have our neighbors? They have the merchant's candlesticks. Have they not the lead ones? No, sir; they have the steel ones. Have your brothers the neighbor's money? No, sir;

they have not his money. What candlesticks have our sisters? They have the brass ones. Have they not the copper ones? No, sir; they have them not. What hammer has your uncle? He has the iron one. What boots has your aunt? She has the cloth ones. What cloak has your cousin? She has the cloth one. Have the neighbors our uncle's money? They have it. What have the merchants? They have our neighbor's excellent fruit. Have you the merchant's tea? We have his tea and his coffee. Have you not the man's calf? I have it not. Have you the neighbor's horses? We have them not. Have you an uncle? I have an uncle, two aunts, and three cousins. Have they the large eggs? No, sir; they have the small ones.

---

13. LECCION DÉCIMA-TERCIA.

SUBJECT OF THE VERB.

TO HAVE, TO HOLD. TENER, (INFINITIVE.)

INDICATIVE MOOD, PRESENT TENSE.

Yo tengo,	*tú tienes,*	*él tiene,*	*nosotros tenemos,*	*vosotros teneis,*	*ellos tienen.*
I have,	thou hast,	he has,	we have,	you have,	they have

Thou. Thy. — *Tú. Tu,* (singular,) *tus,* (plural.
You. — *Vosotros. Vos.*
Your. — *Vuestro,* (singular,) *vuestros,* (plural.

REMARK 1. The learner has already seen that a verb agrees with its subject in number and person; that is, the *first person* singular, as above, is always used with *yo*, or its equivalent, the *second* with *tú*, or its equivalent, and the *third* with *all other subjects singular:* the *first person plural* is always used with *nosotros* or its equivalent, the *second* with *vosotros* or its equivalent, and the third with all *other subjects plural.*

REMARK 2. When, however, two or more nouns singular form the subject, the verb is used in the plural.

My father and mother have the fruit.	Mi padre y madre tienen la fruta.
My brother and sister have the lights.	Mi hermano y hermana tienen las luces.
Hast thou thy money?	¿Tienes tú tu dinero?
No, sir; thou hast it.	No, señor; tú le tienes.
You have your guns.	Vosotros tenéis vuestros fusiles.

REMARK 3. *Usted* and *ustedes*, although of the third person, are, as we have seen, generally used to denote the second person singular and plural. *Tú* is used as denoting familiarity and endearment, between intimate friends and members of the same family, in speaking to little children, and in the sublime style. *Vos* refers to but one.

Vosotros is used by speakers in addressing public assemblies, by superiors as kings and nobles to their people, and by parents to their children.

Dost thou wish? I wish.	*¿ Quieres tú? Yo quiero.*
The *book*. The *paper*.	El *libro*. El *papel*.
The *pen*. The *ink*.	La *pluma*. La *tinta*.
This.	*Este*, (masculine,) *esta*, (feminine.)
These.	*Estos*, (masculine,) *estas*, (feminine.)
That.	{ *Ese*, (masculine,) *esa*, (feminine.) { *Aquel*, (masculine,) *aquella*, (fem.
Those.	{ *Esos*, *esas*. { *Aquellos*, *aquellas*.

REMARK 4. *Este* refers to an object nearer the speaker, *ese* to one nearer the person spoken to, and *aquel* to one remote from both. *Este* denotes sometimes the latter in opposition to *aquel* the former.

Dost thou wish for this book?	¿ Quieres tú este libro?
No, sir; I wish for that paper.	No, señor; quiero ese papel.
Dost thou wish for those pens?	¿ Quieres tú esas plumas?
I wish for those pens and this ink.	Quiero esas plumas y esta tinta.
Dost thou not wish for that candlestick?	¿ No quieres tú aquel candelero?
Yes, sir; and I wish for those buttons.	Si, señor; y quiero aquellos botones.
I wish for these books; dost thou wish for them?	Yo quiero estos libros; ¿ los quieres tú?
I do not wish for them.	No los quiero.

Dost thou wish for those books, or these papers? I wish for these books, I do not wish for those papers. Dost thou wish for this pen? I wish for that pen and that ink. What dost thou wish for? I wish for that handsome horse. Hast thou not thy pen? I have it not. Have you not my black ink? No, sir; that merchant has it. Have we not the money of those merchants? We have it not. Have you not our silver candlesticks? No, sir; those men have them. Hast thou thy cloth? I have it not. What cloth have you? I have the blue. What pens have we? We have the gold pens. Have you the red ink, or the black? We have the red and the black. What paper has that boy? He has thy paper. Has he the white paper, or the yellow? He has the white. What have those girls? They

have their books. What has our neighbor? She has her excellent fruit. What have your cousins? They have their books and papers. Have you a good horse? Yes, sir; I have two good horses.

---

14. LECCION DÉCIMA-CUARTA.

VERBS, ADJECTIVES, ETC.

INDICATIVE PRESENT OF QUERER, TO WISH, TO BE WILLING.

Yo quiero,	*tú quieres,*	*él quiere,*	*nosotros queremos,*	*vosotros quereis,*	*ellos quieren.*
I wish,	thou wishest,	he wishes,	we wish,	you wish,	they wish.

The *inkstand.* The *handkerchief.*	El *tintero.* El *pañuelo.*
The *crayon.* The *pencil-case.*	El *lápiz.* El *lapicero.*
The *cotton.* The *silk.*	El *algodon.* La *seda.*
What do you wish for?	¿Que quiere V.?
I wish for my inkstand.	Quiero mi tintero.
Dost thou wish for thy money?	¿Quieres tú tu dinero?
Yes, sir; *if you please.*	Si, señor; *si V. gusta.*
No, sir; *I thank you.*	No, señor; *doy á V. las gracias,* or *le doy las gracias.*
Does the neighbor wish for his inkstand?	¿Quiere el vecino su tintero?
No, sir; he wishes for his handkerchief.	No, señor; quiere su pañuelo.
We wish for the crayon and the pencil-case; do you not wish for them?	Nosotros queremos el lápiz y el lapicero; ¿los quieren VV.?
We do not wish for them.	No los queremos.
Do your sisters wish for the cotton or the silk?	¿Quieren sus hermanas de V. el algodon ó la seda?
They wish for the cotton and the silk.	Quieren el algodon y la seda.
What do you wish for?	¿Que quieren VV.?
We wish for the merchant's good tea.	Queremos el buen té del comerciante.

REMARK. *Mi, tu, su,* are abbreviations for *mio, tuyo, suyo.* These adjectives are always abbreviated when placed before the noun, and written in full otherwise.

My brother.	Mi hermano, or hermano mio.
Do you wish for the silver candlestick?	¿Quiere V. el candelero de plata?
I wish for it.	Yo le quiero.
What do your aunts wish for?	¿Que quieren sus tias de V.?
They wish for the merchants' gold buttons.	Quieren los botones de oro de los comerciantes.

Hast thou an uncle? I have an uncle and an aunt. Have you a brother? I have two brothers and a sister. What does your cousin wish for? She wishes for that blue silk. Do you wish for this cotton? No, sir; we wish for that cloth. Do you wish for the tea? No, sir; I thank you; I wish for the coffee. Dost thou wish for the bread? Yes, sir; if you please. What do you wish for? We wish for our new boots. What do thy neighbors wish for? They wish for their father's money. Do you wish for the bread and the cheese? No, sir; I wish for the sugar and the fruit. What fruit dost thou wish for? I wish for thy uncle's fruit. What does thy aunt wish for? She wishes for the merchant's handsome cloth. Do you wish for a good horse? Yes, sir; we wish for two. Do you wish for this iron hammer? We wish for it. Do you wish for these copper nails? No, sir; I thank you. Do those women wish for this fruit? They do not wish for it. Do you wish for these biscuits? Yes, sir; if you please. Has our neighbor a brother? He has three. Has he a cousin? He has one.

Yo tengo un sombrero nuevo y unos zapatos bonitos, y mi hermano tiene una casaca nueva y una corbata blanca. Mi padre tiene un caballo bueno y dos bueyes grandes, y mi hermana tiene un perro bonito. ¿Que quieren VV.? Queremos nuestro dinero. ¿Quieres tú la plata ó el oro? Yo quiero la plata y mi hermano quiere el oro. ¿Que tienen VV.? Tenemos el pan y el queso. ¿Tienes tú mis medias nuevas? No, tú las tienes.

---

15. LECCION DÉCIMA-QUINTA.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

Mine, (singular,) *mine*, (plural.)			*El mio*, (masculine,) *los mios.* *La mia*, (feminine,) *las mias.*
Thine, (singular,) *thine*, (plural.)			*El tuyo*, (masculine,) *los tuyos.* *La tuya*, (feminine,) *las tuyas.*
His, *hers*, *Yours*, *theirs*,	(s.)	*his*, *hers.* *yours*, *theirs.*	(pl.) *El suyo*, (masculine,) *los suyos.* *La suya*, (feminine,) *las suyas.*

Ours, (singular,) *ours*, (plural.)	{ *El nuestro*, (masculine,) *los nuestros.* { *La nuestra*, (feminine,) *las nuestras.*
What book do you wish for?	¿ Que libro quiere V.?
I wish for mine.	Quiero el mio.
Dost thou wish for thine?	¿ Quieres tú el tuyo?
I wish for mine.	Quiero el mio.
What ink do you wish for?	¿ Que tinta quieren VV.?
We wish for ours.	Queremos la nuestra.
Does your sister wish for hers?	¿ Quiere la hermana de V. la suya?
No, sir; she wishes for yours.	No, señor; ella quiere *la suya de V.*

REMARK. When perspicuity requires *el suyo* to be distinguished as meaning *yours*, it is written thus:—

Yours, (singular,) *yours*, (plural.)	{ *El suyo de V.*, (mas.,) *los suyos de V.* { *La suya de V.*, (fem.,) *las suyas de V.*
Does the boy wish for his pens?	¿ Quiere el muchacho sus plumas?
He does not wish for his; he wishes for yours.	El no quiere las suyas; quiere las (or las suyas) de V.
What paper does he wish?	¿ Que papel quiere él?
He wishes for yours.	El quiere el suyo de V., or el de V.
Neither, (conjunction.) *Nor.*	*Ni*, (*no* before the verb.) *Ni.*
You have neither the crayon nor the ink.	Usted no tiene ni el lápiz ni la tinta.
I have neither mine nor yours.	No tengo ni el mio ni el de V.

Do you wish for this book? I wish for that book. Do you wish for this green paper? Yes, sir; if you please. Do you wish for that pen? No, sir; I thank you. Do you wish for the red ink, or the black? We wish for the latter; we do not wish for the former. Does your cousin wish for my silver inkstand, or yours? She wishes for the former; she does not wish for the latter. What does your aunt wish for? She wishes for my cousin's gold pencil-case, her gold pen, and her green paper. Do you wish for the handkerchief, or for the crayon? We wish for the former; we do not wish for the latter. Do you wish for the silk handkerchief? We wish for it. What do you wish for? I wish for the cotton cloth and the gold pencil-case. Do you wish for mine, or for thine? I wish for neither thine nor mine. What silk has the girl? She has the good silk. Has she hers, or ours? She has neither hers nor ours. Has she yours? She has mine. What pens has the boy? He has his and mine. Has he mine, or thine? He has neither mine nor thine.

Tengo un paráguas de seda azul y mi madre tiene dos sofás bonitos. ¿No tienes tú el fusil de mi primo? No, señor; no le tengo. Nosotros tenemos las corbatas blancas y VV. tienen las negras. ¿Quiere V. el pan ó el bizcocho? No quiero ni el pan ni el bizcocho; quiero el azúcar del muchacho y el chocolate. ¿Que quieren aquellos muchachos? Quieren la fruta y los huevos. ¿Quieren VV. el té ó el café? No queremos ni el té ni el café; queremos el vino bueno del comerciante y el bizcocho del hombre. Mi padre tiene dos caballos blancos, y mi hermano tiene un lapicero pequeño de plata.

---

16. LECCION DÉCIMA-SEXTA.

CASE OF POSSESSION.

The man's, that or those of the man.	El del hombre, (mas.,) los del hombre. La del hombre, (fem.,) las del hombre.
The men's, that or those of the men.	El de los hombres, (mas.,) los de los hombres. La de los hombres, (fem.,) las de los hombres.
My father's, that or those of my father.	El de mi padre, (m.,) los de mi padre. La de mi padre, (f.,) las de mi padre.
What books do you wish for?	¿Que libros quieren VV.?
We wish for the neighbor's.	Queremos los del vecino.
Have you the boy's crayon?	¿Tiene V. el lápiz del muchacho?
No, sir; I have the girl's.	No, señor; tengo el de la muchacha.
Hast thou the boy's or the girl's ink?	¿Tienes tú la tinta del muchacho ó la de la muchacha?
I have neither the boy's nor the girl's.	No tengo ni la del muchacho ni la de la muchacha.
Have you my father's books?	¿Tiene V. los libros de mi padre?
No, sir; I have your cousin's.	No, señor; tengo los del primo de V.
What stockings have you?	¿Que medias tiene V.?
I have the merchant's.	Tengo las del comerciante.
I have mine and thine.	Tengo las mias y las tuyas.
The *knife*. The *fork*.	El *cuchillo*. El *tenedor*.
The *spoon*. The *plate*, *dish*.	La *cuchara*. El *plato*.
The *glass*, *tumbler*. The *bottle*.	El *vaso*. La *botella*.
The *ribbon*. The *milk*.	La *cinta*. La *leche*.
The *tobacco*. The *pipe*.	El *tabaco*. La *pipa*.

Remark. When *of* precedes the possessive pronoun, in expressions like the following, it is not to be translated into Spanish.

A knife of mine, one of my knives.	Un cuchillo mio.
A fork of thine, one of thy forks.	Un tenedor tuyo.
A cousin of his. An uncle of ours.	Un primo suyo. Un tio nuestro.
Have you one of my tumblers?	¿Tiene V. un vaso mio?
No, sir; I have a bottle of thine.	No, señor; tengo una botella tuya.
The *servant*.	El *criado*, (mas.,) la *criada*, (feminine.)
What has the servant?	¿Que tiene el criado?
He has a spoon of ours, and a plate of mine.	Tiene una cuchara nuestra, y un plato mio.

What has our servant? She has one of our ribbons. What milk has she? She has the neighbor's. What tobacco has she? She has the man's. What has the girl? She has the servant's pipe. What knife do you wish for? I wish for the servant's. What forks does the servant wish for? She wishes for the merchant's. Do you wish for the spoons, or the plates? We wish for neither the spoons nor the plates. What tumblers have you? We have the neighbor's. Have you not his bottles? No, sir; we have my cousin's. Have the servants the milk and the sugar? They have them. What hast thou? I have the pretty ribbons. Hast thou thine, or ours? I have neither mine nor yours; I have your aunt's. Does the servant wish for the tobacco, or the pipe? She wishes for neither the tobacco nor the pipe. Do you wish for these books? Yes, sir; if you please. Do you wish for this crayon? No, sir; I thank you. What does your mother wish for? She wishes for the ink. Does she wish for the red ink, or the black? She wishes for the black ink and the silver inkstand.

¿Que tiene ese hombre? Tiene mi fusil y el baston de V. ¿Tienes tú el caballo del vecino? No, señor; no le tengo. ¿Que tienen sus primos de V.? Tienen dos bueyes, tres vacas, y un caballo bueno. ¿Quieren VV. las botas coloradas ó las amarillas? No queremos ni las coloradas ni las amarillas, queremos las negras. ¿Que quieres tú? Quiero la pluma, la tinta, y el papel. ¿Quieres tú este tintero? Si, señor; quiero ese tintero y ese papel. ¿Que tiene aquel perro? Tiene el pan del criado. ¿Que tiene su vecina de V.? Tiene la vaca y el ternero. ¿Tiene ella la vaca de su primo? No, señor; tiene la de mi tio.

17. LECCION DÉCIMA-SÉPTIMA.

PRÉSENT TENSE OF IR.

The *house*. *To go*.	La *casa*. *Ir*, (infinitive.)

INDICATIVE PRESENT OF IR, TO GO.

Yo voy,	*tú vas*,	*él va*,	*nosotros vamos*,	*vosotros vais*,	*ellos van*.
I go,	thou goest,	he goes,	we go,	you go,	they go.

To. To his house.	*A*. A su casa.
The *country*, *field*. The *garden*.	El *campo*. El *jardin*.
To the, (singular.)	*Al*, (masculine,) *á la*, (feminine.)
To the, (plural.)	*A los*, (masculine,) *á las*, (feminine.)

REMARK 1. As *al* is a contraction of *á el*, it is used when these words come together although *to the* be not used in the corresponding English.

He is going to the garden.	El va al jardin.
Is he going to mine or to his?	¿ Va él al mio ó al suyo ?
He is going to ours.	El va al nuestro.
Are you going to the country?	¿ Va V. al campo ?
No, sir; I am going to my garden.	No, señor; voy á mi jardin.
Where. *Whither*, *where*.	*Donde*. *Adonde*.

REMARK 2. *Where*, without motion, is *donde*; *where*, denoting motion to, is *adonde*.

Where are you going, (do you go?)	¿ Adonde va V. ?
I am going (I go) to your house.	Voy á su casa, (or á la casa de V.)
Home, *to my* (or *our*) *house*.	*A casa*.
To that of. To that of the man.	*Al de*, *á la de*. Al del hombre.
To my cousin's, or that of my cousin.	Al de mi primo.
To the neighbor's, or that of the neighbor.	Al del vecino.
Are you going to my garden?	¿ Va V. á mi jardin ?
No, sir; I am going to the man's.	No, señor; voy al del hombre.
I am going to that of the merchant.	Voy al del comerciante.
Where art thou going?	¿ Adonde vas tú ?
I am going to the garden.	Voy al jardin.
I am going to the neighbor's.	Voy al del vecino.
Are you going to the country?	¿ Van VV. al campo ?
No, sir; we are going home.	No, señor; vamos á casa.
The merchant is going to his house, and his brothers are going to theirs.	El comerciante va á su casa, y sus hermanos van á las suyas.
The neighbor's, or house of the neighbor.	La casa del vecino.

REMARK 3. When *house* is understood in English, it is expressed in Spanish.

The man's.	La casa del hombre.
The merchant's.	La casa del comerciante.
He is going to the neighbor's.	El va á casa del vecino.
We are going to the merchant's.	Vamos á casa del comerciante.
Art thou going to the man's?	¿Vas tú á casa del hombre?
I am going to my brother's.	Voy á casa de mi hermano.
Where are you going?	¿Adonde van VV.?
We are going home.	Vamos á casa.

Are you going home, (*á su casa?*) I am not going home; I am going to the country. Are you going to our house? We are not going to your house; we are going to the country. Where art thou going? I am going to the garden. Art thou going to thy garden, or to mine? I am going neither to thine nor to mine. Where are you going? We are going home, and our cousins are going to the country. Art thou going to my garden, or to that (*al*) of the neighbor? I am going neither to yours nor to his; I am going to my father's, (that of my father.) Do you wish for a plate and a spoon? No, sir; I wish for neither a plate nor a spoon; I wish for a tumbler of milk. Do the men wish for their pipes, or their tobacco? They wish for neither their pipes nor their tobacco. Do the girls wish for your ribbons? They do not wish for my ribbons; they wish for a plate and the milk. Where does your aunt wish to go? She wishes to go to the merchant's, (to the house of the merchant.) What handkerchief have you? I have the cotton handkerchief. Have you the crayon, or the pencil-case? I have neither the crayon nor the pencil-case; I have the silk and the cotton.

¿Adonde van VV.? Vamos á casa. ¿Adonde va su hermana de V.? Va á casa de mi tia. ¿Vas tú á nuestra casa? No, señor; voy al campo. ¿Adonde va el criado? Va á casa de un primo mio. Tengo un hermano y dos hermanas, y mi primo tiene dos hermanos y tres hermanas. ¿Que tienen VV.? Tenemos los candeleros de cobre y los clavos de hierro. ¿No tiene el muchacho los botones de bronce? No tiene los de bronce, tiene los de plata. Mi madre quiere libros, y mi padre quiere papel y tinta. ¿Tiene él una pluma? Tiene una pluma de oro y un tintero de plata.

18. LECCION DÉCIMA OCTAVA.

NOUNS, RELATIVES, ETC.

A *friend.*	Un *amigo*, (masc.,) una *amiga*, (fem.)
The *basket.* The *broom.*	La *canasta*, el *canasto.* La *escoba.*
The *bucket.* The *sealing-wax.*	El *cubo.* El *lacre.*
Long. Short.	*Largo. Corto.*
Four. Five.	*Cuatro. Cinco.*
Much. Many.	*Mucho. Muchos.*
How much. How many.	*Cuanto. Cuantos.*
Who? Who has my pens?	*¿ Quien?* ¿ Quien tiene mis plumas?
My cousin has them.	Mi primo las tiene.
Who wishes for this ribbon?	¿ Quien quiere esta cinta?
I wish for it.	Yo la quiero.
Who, whom, which, that.	*Que.*

REMARK 1. *Who* interrogative is *quien*; not interrogative *que.*

Who has my book?	*¿ Quien* tiene mi libro?
The boy who is going to the garden has it.	El muchacho *que* va al jardin le tiene.
You have the papers which I wish for.	VV. tienen los papeles *que* yo quiero.
I wish for the servants who are going to my uncle's.	Quiero los criados *que* van á casa de mi tio.
You wish for the servant whom we wish for.	V. quiere el criado *que* nosotros queremos.
You have the inkstand that I wish for.	V. tiene el tintero *que* yo quiero.

REMARK 2. In expressing the material of which any thing consists, *the one, the ones*, are rendered by the article merely. (Les: 12, Rem 2.)

The silver one, the one of silver.	El (or la) de plata.
The lead ones, the ones of lead.	Los (or las) de plomo.
Have you the iron knives?	¿ Tiene V. los cuchillos de hierro?
No, sir; I have the steel ones.	No, señor; tengo los de acero.
Thou hast the silver one.	Tú tienes el de plata.
Who wishes for the steel pens?	¿ Quien quiere las plumas de acero?
My cousins wish for the steel ones.	Mis primos quieren las de acero.
I wish for the gold one.	Yo quiero la de oro.

Who has the iron hammer? One of my friends has it. What basket does your friend wish for? She wishes for the basket which

the servant has. What bucket does your cousin wish for? He wishes for the bucket and the broom which the servant has. Dost thou wish for the sealing-wax which I have? No, sir; I thank you. Do you wish for the long crayon, or the short one? We wish for neither the long one nor the short one; we wish for the crayon which your friend has. How many brooms has the servant? She has four, and her friend has five. How much money have you? I have not much.

Have you many brothers? I have four brothers and five sisters. Who has my sealing-wax? That boy who is going to the neighbor's has it. How many buckets does the servant wish for? He wishes for four or five. What does your friend wish for? She wishes for paper, pens, and sealing-wax. What pens does she wish for? She wishes for the steel one and the gold one. Do you wish for the cotton handkerchief, or the silk one? I wish for neither the cotton one nor the silk one. Have you much money? I have not much. Where are you going? We are going home, and my friend is going to the country.

Un amigo mio tiene una casa grande, cuatro caballos buenos, cuatro bueyes, y muchas vacas. ¿Tiene él muchos terneros? No tiene muchos. ¿Quiere V. el perro que yo tengo? No, señor; doy á V. las gracias. ¿Que quiere aquel hombre? Quiere un cuchillo, un tenedor, un vaso y una botella de vino bueno. ¿Quiere V. el lapicero de oro ó el de plata? Quiero el de oro. ¿Van VV. al campo? No, señor; vamos á su casa. ¿Adonde vas tú? Yo voy al jardin y mi primo va á su casa. ¿Que quiere el criado de V.? Quiere el cuchillo de acero y el tenedor de plata que yo tengo. ¿Quiere el la escoba larga ó la corta? No quiere ni la larga ni la corta.

---

19. LECCION DÉCIMA NONA.

ARTICLES, RELATIVES, ETC.

He who, him who, he whom, him whom, that which, the one which, the one that.	*El que*, (masculine.)
She who, her who, she whom, her whom, that which, the one which, the one that.	*La que*, (feminine.)

They who, those who, they whom, those whom, those which, the ones which, the ones that.	*Los que*, (masculine,) *las que*, (feminine.)
What knife do you wish for?	¿ Que cuchillo quiere V.?
I wish for *the one* (*that*) which you wish for.	Quiero *el que* V. quiere.
What ribbon do you wish for?	¿ Que cinta quieren VV.?
We wish for *that* (*the one*) which you wish for.	Queremos *la que* VV. quieren.
We wish for *those* (*the ones*) which you wish for.	Queremos *las que* VV. quieren.
What tumblers do they wish for?	¿ Que vasos quieren ellos?
They wish for *the ones* (*those*) which we have.	Quieren *los que* nosotros tenemos.
What servant has our friend?	¿ Que criado tiene nuestro amigo?
He has *the one that* (*him whom*) you wish for.	Tiene *el que* V. quiere.
He has *the ones that* (*those whom*) you wish for.	Tiene *los que* V. quiere.
He who has the tea wishes for the sugar.	*El que* tiene el té quiere el azúcar.
Those who have your money are going to your house.	*Los que* tienen el dinero de V. van á su casa.
She who has the ink wishes for the pen.	*La que* tiene la tinta quiere la pluma.
They who are going to the merchant's wish for ribbons.	*Las que* van á casa del comerciante quieren cintas.
What cow has our neighbor?	¿ Que vaca tiene nuestra vecina?
She has *that* (*the one*) which we wish for.	Tiene *la que* nosotros queremos.
The *water*. *Cold*.	El *agua*. *Frio*, *fria*.
I wish for cold water.	Quiero agua fria.

REMARK. Feminine nouns beginning with an accented *a*, take the masculine article in the singular.

The *bird*. A *bird*.	El *ave*, (feminine.) Un *ave*.
The black bird. The black birds.	El ave negra. Las aves negras.
What birds do you wish for?	¿ Que aves quiere V.?
I wish for those which the servant has.	Quiero las que el criado tiene.
We wish for the one which you wish for.	Nosotros queremos el que V. quiere.
The *baker*. The *baker-woman*.	El *panadero*. La *panadera*.
The *cook*.	El *cocinero*, (masc.,) La *cocinera*, (fem.)
What bread does the cook wish for?	¿ Que pan quiere la cocinera?
She wishes for that which the baker has.	Quiere el que el panadero tiene.

Where is the cook going? He is going to the baker's. Art thou

going to the baker's? No, sir; I am going to my friend's. Are you going to the neighbor's? No, sir; we are going home. Where are the servants going? They are going to the garden. Who has the knives and the forks? The servant has them. Has he the silver ones? He has the silver forks and the steel knives. Who have our bottles? The boys have them. What tumblers have they? They have the silver ones. How many brooms has the boy? He has four or five. How much wine do you wish for? I do not wish for much. How many buckets do you wish for? We do not wish for many. Dost thou wish for the long stick, or the short one? I wish for neither the long stick nor the short one; I wish for the one which the merchant has. Do you wish for the tea? Yes, sir; if you please. Do you wish for the wine, or the water? We wish for the cold water. Do you wish for the sealing-wax? No, sir; I thank you.

What basket does the baker wish for? He wishes for that which the cook has. Do the cooks wish for these brooms? No, sir; they wish for those which the baker-woman has. Do you wish for those knives? No, sir; I wish for those which the cook has. What milk does the girl wish for? She wishes for that which the servant has. Has that woman the spoons? No, sir; she who has the plates has the spoons.

El panadero tiene buen pan y buenos bizcochos, y el comerciante tiene vino excelente. Yo tengo una hermana y cuatro hermanos, y mi primo tiene cinco hermanas y un hermano. Mi padre no tiene mucho dinero. ¿Adonde va su amigo de V. El va á casa del panadero, y yo voy á mi jardin. El criado quiere la escoba y el cubo, y aquellos hombres quieren el tabaco y sus pipas. Mi padre tiene buen vino y quiere la botella y el vaso. Queremos la leche de la cocinera y el vino del comerciante. ¿No quiere V. el del vecino? No, señor; quiero el que mi amigo tiene. Mi hermano tiene tres caballos grandes y muchas buenas vacas.

---

20. LECCION VIGÉSIMA.

INDICATIVE PRESENT OF VER, TO SEE.

Yo veo,	*tú ves,*	*él ve,*	*nosotros vemos,*	*vosotros veis,*	*ellos ven.*
I see,	thou seest,	he sees,	we see,	you see,	they see.

The *butcher*. The *shoemaker*. El *carnicero*. El *zapatero*.

The *tailor*. The *meat*.	El *sastre*. La *carne*.
The *roast meat*, the *roast*.	El *asado*.
The *boiled meat*, the *boiled*.	El *cocido*.
How many birds do you see?	¿ Cuantas aves ve V.?
I see four, they see five.	Yo veo cuatro, ellos ven cinco.
Dost thou see the butcher's meat?	¿ Ves tú la carne del carnicero?
I see it.	La veo.
Do you see the boiled, or the roasted?	¿ Ven VV. el cocido ó el asado?
We see neither the boiled nor the roasted.	No vemos ni el cocido ni el asado.

REMARK 1. After a preposition *whom* is *quien*, and *him*, *él*.

Does the butcher see the man whom I see?	¿ Ve el carnicero al hombre á quien yo veo?
He sees him whom you see.	Ve al que V. ve.

REMARK 2. When the object of a transitive verb is a person, a thing personified, the relative *quien*, or the article used as a pronoun, it is preceded by *á*, if spoken of in a definite manner; but, if spoken of in an indefinite manner, the *á* is not to be used.

Dost thou see the shoemaker?	¿ Ves tú al zapatero?
I see the shoemaker and the tailor.	Veo al zapatero y al sastre.
Do you see my brothers?	¿ Ven VV. á mis hermanos?
We do not see them.	Nosotros no los vemos.
Does the judge wish for a servant?	¿ Quiere el juez un criado?
Yes, sir; he wishes for my servant.	Si, señor; quiere á mi criado.

In this last phrase *á* is used before *criado* because it is spoken of definitely; it is omitted in the preceding because it is spoken of indefinitely. So in the two following.

Do you wish for a tailor?	¿ Quiere V. un sastre?
Do you wish for this tailor?	¿ Quiere V. á este sastre?
Whom do they see?	¿ A quien ven ellos?
They see him whom you see.	Ven á aquel á quien ve V.
We are going to see the butcher.	Vamos á ver al carnicero.

REMARK 3. The verb *ir*, to go, takes *á* before a dependent infinitive.

Whom are you going to see?	¿ A quien va V. á ver?
I am going to see the neighbor.	Voy á ver al vecino.

REMARK 4. *A* is sometimes placed before the object of a verb when not a person to avoid ambiguity; and it is sometimes omitted before a person for sound sake.

Does not my horse see your dog?	¿ No ve mi caballo á su perro de V.?
Does not your dog see my horse?	¿ No ve su perro de V. á mi caballo?

The above two sentences without the *á*, would be ambiguous.

Whom do you wish to see? I wish to see the shoemaker and the tailor. Do you not wish to see the butcher? No, sir; I wish to see my friend. Dost thou see my cousin's pretty bird? I see it. Whom

does the cook see? She sees the butcher and the baker. Do you see the shoemaker, or the tailor? We see neither the shoemaker nor the tailor; we see the brother of my friend. Whom do your friends see? They see their neighbors. Do you see the cook's meat? We see the roast and the boiled. Whom is the baker-woman going to see? She is going to see her cousins. Does the cow see the calf? Yes, sir; and the calf sees the cow. Art thou going to see thy father? No, sir; I am going to my uncle's to see my cousin. Do you see my basket? We do not see your basket; we see our bucket. What do those girls see? They see the handsome bird and the merchant's pretty ribbons.

What man do you wish to see? I wish to see the man who has the white cow and the black calf. Do you see this blue bird and that red one? No, sir; I see the yellow one. What do those dogs see? They see those birds. Are you going to see your aunt? No, sir; I am going to see my mother. Dost thou see the silver buttons? No, sir; I see the brass ones and the gold ones. What basket dost thou see? I see that which the servant has. What men do you see? I see those whom you see.

¿Adonde vas tu? Voy á casa de mi amigo. ¿Va su tio de V. al campo? No, señor; va á casa del comerciante. ¿Van VV. á su casa? No, señor; vamos á casa del padre de V. ¿Ves tú el ave que tiene mi hermano? No, señor; veo el que tu primo tiene. ¿Que hombres ven VV.? Vemos los que van á casa del comerciante. ¿Cuantos amigos tiene V.? Yo tengo muchos amigos. ¿Van sus amigos á ver á mi tio? Si, señor; van á ver á su tio y á sus primas de V. ¿Quiere este muchacho ir á su casa? Si, quiere ir. ¿Adonde quiere V. ir? Quiero ir á casa de mi padre. ¿A casa de quien quiere ir su amigo? Quiere ir á su casa de V.

---

21. LECCION VIGÉSIMA PRIMA.

INDICATIVE PRESENT OF SER, TO BE.

Yo soy,	*tú eres,*	*él es,*	*nosotros somos,*	*vosotros sois,*	*ellos son.*
I am,	thou art,	he is,	we are,	you are,	they are.

Art thou not my friend? ¿No eres tú mi amigo?
I am thy friend. Yo soy tu amigo.

Is that man thy father?	¿ Es aquel hombre tu padre?
No, sir; he is my uncle.	No, señor; es mi tio.
Are you not our cousins?	¿ No son VV. nuestros primos?
We are your cousins.	Nosotros somos sus primos.
Are you not the brother of that boy?	¿ No es V. el hermano de aquel muchacho?
No, sir; I am his cousin.	No, señor; soy su primo.
Of whom, whose.	*De quien, cuyo, a.*

REMARK 1. *Cuyo* agrees with the succeeding noun, and in most cases is immediately followed by it. Let the learner note particularly the use of the above relatives in the following phrases:—

Whose book is this?	¿ *De quien* es este libro? ¿ *Cuyo* libro es este?
Whose pen is that?	¿ *De quien* es esa pluma? ¿ *Cuya* pluma es esa?
I see the man whose books you have.	Veo al hombre *cuyos* libros V. tiene.
I see the man whose pens you have.	Veo al hombre *cuyas* plumas V. tiene.
Whose is the book which you have?	¿ *De quien* es el libro que V. tiene?
It is mine.	Es el mio.
Whose is the shoe which the shoemaker has?	¿ *De quien* es el zapato que tiene el zapatero?
It is his.	Es el suyo.
Whose are the buttons which the tailor has?	¿ *De quien* son los botones que tiene el sastre?
They are the merchant's.	Son los del comerciante.
Whose books does your sister wish for?	¿ Los libros *de quien* quiere su hermana de V.?
She wishes for ours.	Quiere los nuestros.
Whose dost thou wish for?	¿ De quien son los que tú quieres?
I wish for thine.	Quiero los tuyos.
Whom does the cook wish for?	¿ A quien quiere el cocinero?
He wishes for his boy.	Quiere á su muchacho.
Any thing. Something.	*Alguna cosa. Algo.*
Not any thing.	*Ninguna cosa.*
Nothing.	*Nada.*

REMARK 2. When these last two follow the verb, they require *no* before it.

Do you wish for any thing?	¿ Quiere V. alguna cosa, (or algo?)
I do not wish for any thing. I wish for nothing.	Nada quiero, or no quiero nada.
What has the butcher good?	¿ Que tiene el carnicero (de) bueno?*

* The adjective *good* or *bad* following *something*, *nothing*, or a verb preceded by *what*, often takes *de* before it.

He has nothing good.	No tiene nada (de) bueno.
Does the tailor see any thing pretty?	¿Ve el sastre alguna cosa linda?
He sees something large.	El ve algo grande.

How many shoes has the shoemaker? He has many. What do those bakers wish for? They wish for the butcher's meat. Whose do you wish for? I wish for mine. Whose roast meat do you wish for? I wish for the cook's. Whose boiled meat do you wish for? I wish for ours. Whose does the tailor wish for? He wishes for the baker's. Do you see that tailor? We see the tailor and the shoemaker. Are they going to the cook's? No, sir; they are going to the baker's. Whose meat does the cook wish for? She wishes for the butcher's. Do you wish for the roast meat and the boiled? Yes, sir; if you please. What has the shoemaker? He has the cook's roast meat. Whose stick has he? He has the merchant's. Do you see the baker who has the roast meat? No, sir; I see him who has the basket. Do you see the servant who has the silver inkstand? I see him.

Whom do you see? I see the baker who is going to your house. Do you see that cook? We see her who is going to our house. What women do you see? We see those who have the blue cloaks. What meat does the baker wish for? He wishes for the boiled. Do you wish for the cold water? No, sir; I thank you. What tumbler do you wish for? I wish for that which you have. What bottle has that boy? He has the cook's. Whose books has that boy? He has ours. Whose has his sister? She has hers. What does the girl wish for? She wishes for the milk and the cold water.

Mi padre va á casa del panadero y mi hermana va á la del zapatero. Aquella mujer es una amiga de mi madre. ¿Adonde van los vecinos? Van á casa del sastre. ¿A casa de quien quiere V. ir? Quiero ir á casa del mercader. Mi hermana tiene un ave amarilla y mi hermano tiene un caballo bueno. ¿Tiene su padre de V. mucho dinero? No, señor; tiene muchos amigos, no tiene mucho dinero. ¿Tiene ese muchacho alguna cosa? No tiene nada. ¿De quien es la canasta que tiene la cocinera? Es la mia. ¿De quien es la que yo tengo? Es del panadero.

22. LECCION VIGÉSIMA SEGUNDA.

PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.

Which, which one.	*Cual*, (singular.)
Which, which ones.	*Cuales*, (plural.)
Lady, Mrs. Yes, madam.	*Señora. Si, señora.*
The *young lady, Miss.* The *climate.*	La *señorita.* El *clima.*
Which of these pens do you wish for?	¿ Cual de estas plumas quiere V.?
Which one does the lady wish for?	¿ Cual quiere la señora?
Which ones does she wish for?	¿ Cuales quiere ella?
Which of the young ladies is going to Mrs. B's, (or house of Mrs. B.?)	¿ Cual de las señoritas va á casa de la señora B.?
Mortal. Tall, high.	*Mortal. Alto.*
Bad, ill, evil. Warm, hot.	*Malo. Caliente.*
Amiable. Insane, mad, crazy.	*Amable. Loco.*
Young, also *a youth. In, into.*	*Jóven. En.*
The *room.* In the room.	El *cuarto.* En el cuarto.
On. On the *table.*	*Sobre.* Sobre la *mesa.*

REMARK 1. The usual place of the adjective is immediately after the noun in Spanish, as it is immediately before it in English. When to give prominence to the adjective therefore, it is removed from its usual place the change is often precisely opposite in the two languages, as:—

Is the captain old?	¿ Es viejo el capitan?
Is it the old captain?	¿ Es el capitan viejo?
Is your brother tall?	¿ Es alto su hermano de V?
It is your tall brother.	Es su hermano alto de V.
Very. Very pretty.	*Muy.* Muy lindo.
Ugly. Very ugly.	*Feo.* Muy feo.
The *captain.* The *carpenter.*	El *capitan.* El *carpintero*
I am thy friend and thou art mine.	Yo soy tu amigo y tú eres el mio.
That man is our captain.	Aquel hombre es nuestro capitan.
We are mortal.	Nosotros somos mortales.
Those carpenters are brothers.	Aquellos carpinteros son hermanos.
You are young.	V. es jóven.
You are not tall.	VV. no son altos.
Miss B. is very pretty, and her cousin is very ugly.	La señorita B. es muy bonita, y su prima es muy fea.
This carpenter is good, and his brother is very bad.	Este carpintero es bueno, y su hermano es muy malo.

REMARK 2. In denoting possession, when the subject of the verb is omitted, the article may also be omitted before the possessor and before the possessive pronoun.

Whose basket is that?	¿De quien es esa canasta?
It is my father's.	Es de mi padre.
This is his.	Esta es la suya.
It is my brother's. It is his.	Es de mi hermano. Es suya.
Is it not mine?	¿No es mia?
No, sir; it is not thine.	No, señor; no es tuya.

Which of those handkerchiefs does the lady wish for? She wishes for the silk one. Which knives does the captain wish for? He wishes for the carpenter's. Thou art tall; is not thy sister tall? She is tall. Do you see the captain who is going into his room? I see him. Are you not young? We are young. Are not those young ladies amiable? They are amiable and very pretty. Are not your sisters young? They are very young. Where is the captain going? He is going into his room. Is not the cook insane? He is insane. Have you the blue paper? I have it on the table in my room. Have you books? I have many on my table. Is not the carpenter's boy bad? He is very bad. Miss B. is amiable; is she not pretty? She is very pretty, and her friend is very ugly.

Does the baker wish for any thing? He wishes for the cook's meat. Does he wish for the roast meat, or the boiled? He wishes for the roast meat and the boiled. What does the butcher wish for? He wishes for nothing. Does the shoemaker wish for any thing? He wishes for the steel knife and the iron hammer. Whose table have you? I have the captain's. Whom do you see? I see the shoemaker whose knives you have. What has the tailor? He has his cloth and his thread. Does the youth wish for any thing? He wishes for nothing. Is not that man crazy? He is crazy. Is not this climate warm? It is not warm; it is cold. Do you wish for the broom which the servant has? No, sir; I wish for that which the boy has.

Mi primo tiene mucho dinero, y yo tengo muchos buenos amigos. Tengo un amigo cuyo padre tiene mucho dinero. Mi amigo es alto y su hermana es muy bonita. La señora C. es muy amable, y su hermana es muy fea. Mi tio va al campo y mi tia va á su casa. Esta señora es mi madre, y esa señorita es mi hermana.

Aquel carpintero es nuestro vecino; tiene dos buenos caballos. ¿Adonde va aquel hombre? Va á su casa. Tiene el sombrero blanco y la casaca azul. ¿Cuantas hermanas tiene esa señorita? Tiene tres hermanas y dos hermanos. ¿Adonde va ese sastre? El sastre va á su casa, y el zapatero va á casa del panadero.

---

23. LECCION VIGÉSIMA TERCERA.

INDICATIVE PRESENT OF ESTAR, TO BE.

Yo estoy,	*tú estás,*	*él está,*	*nosotros estamos,*	*vosotros estais,*	*ellos están.*
I am,	thou art,	he is,	we are,	you are,	they are.

REMARK 1. Attributes and conditions which are *essential and permanent* are expressed by *ser*, as seen in the last lesson; those which are *adventitious and temporary*, by *estar;* as,

Where art thou?	¿Donde *estás* tú?
I am in my house,	*Estoy* en mi casa.
Art thou *there?*	*¿Estás allí?*
He is *here.*	*Está aquí.*
We are at home.	*Estamos* en casa.
They are in that room.	*Están* en aquel cuarto.
You are well.	V. está bueno.
You are ill.	VV. están malos.

In these phrases *estar* is used because *adventitious* qualities and circumstances are expressed. In the following also, it will be seen that *estar* is used with what is *adventitious*, and *ser* with what is *essential.*

I am in thy house.	*Estoy* en tu casa.
I am thy friend.	*Soy* tu amigo.
The captain is ill.	El capitan *está* malo.
The captain is tall.	El capitan *es* alto.
The ladies are here.	Las señoras *están* aquí.
The ladies are pretty.	Las señoras *son* lindas.
We are in the country.	*Estamos* en el campo.
We are young.	*Somos* jóvenes.

REMARK 2. *Ser* and *estar*, thus differing in signification, may form phrases of very different meaning when joined to the same words; as,

That man is good.	Ese hombre es bueno.
That man is well.	Ese hombre está bueno.
He is bad. He is ill.	Es malo. Está malo.
That woman is amiable.	Esa mujer es amable.

That woman is in amiable humor.	Esa mujer está amable.
My neighbor is insane, (crazy.)	Mi vecino es loco.
My neighbor is furious.	Mi vecino está loco.
Here. Hither, or *here.*	*Aquí. Acá.*
There. Thither, or *there.*	*Ahí, allí. Allá.*

REMARK 3. We have seen that *donde* or *en donde*, is used with verbs of rest, and *adonde* with verbs of motion. In like manner *aquí* and *allí* are used to denote rest, and *acá*, *allá*, to denote motion. *Ahí* generally denotes a place near the person spoken to, and *allá* is often used also to denote a remote place or period.

Is your father here?	¿ Está su padre *aquí ?*
No, sir; he is there in the garden.	No, señor; está *allí* en el jardin.
Are you going to the country?	¿ Va V. al campo ?
I am going there.	Voy *allá.*
Have you my book there?	¿ Tiene V. mi libro *ahí ?*
I have it not here; you have it there.	No le tengo *aquí ;* V. le tiene *ahí.*

Do you not wish to be well? I wish to be well, and I wish to be good. Are you not well? No, sir; I am ill. Thou art tall; is not thy sister tall? She is tall. Thou art in thy room; is thy aunt in hers? She is there. Where is the bottle? It is on the table. Are you not well? No, sir; we are ill. Are not those young ladies amiable? They are amiable and very pretty. Are they not at your neighbor's? They are there. Are we not at home? We are at home. Where are the baskets? They are on the table. Are they here? They are there. That lady is mortal; does she wish to be ill? No, sir; she wishes to be well. Does that man wish to be my friend? He wishes to be your friend and your neighbor. Are you going to the country? We are going there.

Where art thou? I am here. Is thy aunt there? She is not here. Are the brooms in that room? Yes, sir; the brooms are there, and the bucket is here on the table. Where are the steel knives and the silver forks? They are there. Who has the silver spoons? The tailor has them. Is the bucket of iron, or of copper? It is neither of iron nor of copper; it is of brass. What is on the table? The tumbler, the milk, and the plates are there. Have you the silver spoon? I have it. Whom do you see? I see the man who is in the garden. Do you see him who is going to your house? I see him. Whom do you wish to see? I wish to see my uncle. Whose

meat does the baker wish for? He wishes for the butcher's. I see the boy whose father is ill.

Este hombre es nuestro sastre y su hermano es nuestro zapatero. ¿Adonde van VV.? Vamos al campo á ver á nuestros amigos. ¿Donde está el padre de V.? Está en su casa. Tengo un tintero de plata, y una pluma de oro; ¿no estan ahí sobre tu mesa? No estan aquí. Aquella señorita es mi hermana; ella va al campo á ver á sus primas, y yo voy á casa. ¿Quien es aquel hombre á quien veo en el cuarto de V.? Es nuestro vecino. ¿Quiere V. el café caliente? No, señora; no quiero ni el café ni el té, quiero el agua fria. ¿Ve V. al muchacho que está en el jardin del mercader? No, señora; veo á aquel cuyo sombrero está sobre la mesa. ¿Está mi libro ahí en el cuarto de V.? Áquí no está.

---

24. LECCION VIGÉSIMA CUARTA.

NEGATIVES, ADVERBS, ETC

Somebody, any body.	*Alguien.*
Some one, any one.	*Alguno, a.*
Nobody, not any body.	*Nadie.*
No one, not any one.	*Ninguno, a.*

REMARK 1. *Nadie* and *ninguno*, like *nada*, when they follow the verb, require *no* before it.

Is any body in your room?	¿Está alguien (or alguno) en el cuarto de V.?
Nobody is there.	Nadie (or ninguno) está allí.
Some one is there.	Alguno está allí.
I see nobody.	No veo á nadie, (or á ninguno.) A nadie (á ninguno) veo.
The *gentleman.*	El *caballero*, el señor.
Has the gentleman a very pretty handkerchief?	¿Tiene el caballero un pañuelo muy lindo?

REMARK 2. *Very*, when the adjective to which it belongs is omitted, is translated into Spanish by *mucho*.

Is that handkerchief pretty?	¿Es ese pañuelo lindo?
Very. Not very.	*Mucho.* No mucho.
The *Frenchman*, the *French language.*	El *Frances*, el *frances.*
Which gentlemen are going to your house?	¿Cuales caballeros van á casa de V.?

Which ones are going there?	¿Cuales van allá?
Rich. *Poor.*	*Rico.* *Pobre.*
Sick. The *sick man.*	*Enfermo.* El *enfermo.*
A *son.* A *daughter.*	Un *hijo.* Una *hija.*
Under. *With.*	*Debajo, bajo (de.)* *Con.*
Under the table.	Debajo de la mesa.
The *yard.* The *street.*	El *patio.* La *calle.*
His son is in the yard with his daughter.	Su hijo está en el patio con su hija.
The poor one, the poor ones.	El pobre, los pobres. La pobre, las pobres.

Who is in the yard? No one is in the yard; somebody is in the street. Who is in the Frenchman's room? No one is in the Frenchman's room; the ugly carpenter is in the captain's. Does the rich man wish for any thing? The rich man wishes for nothing; the poor man wishes for many things, (*cosas.*) What does that gentleman wish for? He wishes for the bottle of old wine which is in his room, on the table, with the tumbler and the silver plate. Is not the captain ugly? He is very ugly and very good. Has any one my son's basket? No one has it. Is not the captain's son sick? He is very sick. Is not that ugly gentleman rich? He is very rich, and this handsome lady is very poor. Has the captain a daughter? He has two sons and three daughters.

Does any one wish for the cook's roast meat? No one wishes for his roast meat; some one wishes for his boiled. Whose meat does the poor man wish for? He wishes for the rich man's. Whom does the sick man wish to see? He wishes to see no one. Does he wish for any thing? He wishes for nothing. Is the gentleman's son in the yard, or in the street? He is in the street with the Frenchman. Are the boy's shoes under the sofa? No, sir; they are under the table with those of his father. Is that coffee hot? Very. Where are the stockings and the shirts? They are on the bed. Who is that young lady? She is the daughter of that gentleman. Is she pretty? Very. Are not these nails of brass? No, sir; they are of iron. Is the Frenchman well? No, sir; he is sick.

Mi padre tiene cinco hijos, y mi tio tiene cinco hijas. Mis hermanos son ricos y mis primas son pobres. ¿Quien es aquel caballero? Es un hermano de nu-

estro vecino. ¿No está enfermo? Si, señor; está enfermo. ¿Donde está el Frances? Está en la calle; va á casa del capitan á ver á su amigo. ¿Quien es aquella señorita? Es la hija de aquel caballero á quien V. ve allí en la calle. Es alta, jóven, y muy bonita. ¿Quiere V. ver á mi amigo? Si, señor; ¿es rico? No; es pobre. ¿Que quiere él? Quiere mucho dinero y muchos amigos. ¿A quien ve V.? Veo al carpintero cuyo hijo es mi criado. ¿Quiere él alguna cosa? No, señor; no quiere nada.

---

25. LECCION VIGÉSIMA QUINTA.

VERBS, ADJECTIVES, ETC.—INFINITIVES.

To have. To wish for, to be willing.	*Tener. Querer.*
To go. To see.	*Ir. Ver.*
To be.	*Ser. Estar.*
The *Spaniard, Spanish language.*	El *español.*
The *Englishman, English language.*	El *ingles.*
The *German, German language.*	El *aleman.*

REMARK 1. National designations, like the above, when used as adjectives, begin with a small letter; when used as nouns, they begin with a capital.

Where does the Frenchman wish to go?	¿Adonde quiere ir el Frances?
He wishes to go to the Spaniard's.	Quiere ir á casa del Español.
Whom are you going to see?	¿A quien van VV. á ver?
We are going to see the Englishman.	Vamos á ver al Ingles.
What does the German wish?	¿Que quiere el Aleman?
He wishes to be a good man.	Quiere ser un buen hombre.
I wish to be in my room.	Quiero estar en mi cuarto.
The *soap.* The *leather.*	El *jabon.* El *cuero.*
The *cap.* The *coal.*	El *gorro.* El *carbon.*
The *sheep, mutton.*	El *carnero, la carne de carnero.*
The *soup.*	La *sopa.*
A *child.*	Un *niño,* (masculine,) una *niña,* (fem.)
A *lad, servant-boy.*	Un *mozo.*
A *lass, servant-girl.*	Una *moza.*
The *same.* The *other.*	El *mismo.* El *otro.*
Also. But.	*Tambien. Pero, sinó.*
The child has his cap.	El niño tiene su gorro.
He has the mutton; has he not the soup also?	El tiene el carnero; ¿no tiene la sopa tambien?

He has not the soup, but the mutton. No tiene la sopa, sinó el carnero.

REMARK 2. When *but* follows a negative, and the verb is not repeated, it is rendered *sinó*; but if no negative precede, or the verb be repeated, *pero* is used.

I wish for this, but not that. Quiero este, *pero* no aquel.
I do not wish for this, but that. No quiero este, *sinó* aquel.
I do not wish for this, but I wish for that. No quiero este, *pero* quiero aquel.

Do you wish for the soap? I do not wish for the soap, but the leather. What does the Spaniard wish for? He wishes for the charcoal. Does he not wish for the leather also? No, sir; he wishes for the charcoal, but not the leather. Are you going to see the Frenchman? I am not going to see the Frenchman, but the Spaniard. Are you going to see the same Spaniard, or the other? I am going to see the same and the other. Are you going to the Englishman's? No, sir; we are going to the German's, but not to the Englishman's. Has the lad your cap? He has my cap, and my stick also. How many children has the German? He has four. What has that child? She has her new stockings and her red shoes. Where is that servant-girl going? She is going to the Englishman's.

What does the German wish for? He wishes for the merchant's soap, and his charcoal. What has that lad? He has the mutton. Has he not the soup also? He has the mutton, but not the soup. Whose child is that? She is the child of the poor man. Whom do you see? I see the lass who is going to the merchant's. What does that child wish for? He wishes for a book. Does he wish for the same book, or for the other? He wishes for the same. Does that lad wish to be a merchant? No, sir; he wishes to be a tailor. Where are that child's shoes? They are under the table with those of his sister. What child do you see? I see the child whose cap is blue. Where does he wish to go? He wishes to go to his father's.

Ese Español es mi vecino, y el Ingles y el Aleman son mis vecinos tambien. El Español no tiene niños, pero el Ingles tiene cuatro hijos y el Aleman tiene cinco hijas. Los hijos del Ingles son buenos, y las hijas del Aleman son amables y muy lindas. El Español y el Ingles son ricos, pero el Aleman es pobre. Aquel Aleman jóven, en la calle, es el mozo de mi padre, y su hermana es la moza de mi madre. Mi padre tiene tres caballos grandes y mi hermana tiene un

perro pequeño muy bonito. Ese comerciante tiene jabon, cuero, azúcar, té, café y muchas otras cosas. Los niños del Aleman son muy buenos y los del Español son muy malos.

---

26. LECCION VIGÉSIMA SEXTA.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

REMARK 1. Spanish verbs are divided into three conjugations, distinguished by the terminations of the infinitive mood. In the FIRST CONJUGATION, it terminates in AR. It forms the persons of the present indicative, by changing *ar* into the following terminations :—

O,	AS,	A,	AMOS,	AIS,	AN.
To take.	*To look for, to seek.*		*Tomar*, (infinitive.)	*Buscar*, (infinitive.)	
Yo tomo, I take,	*tú tomas,* thou takest,	*él toma,* he takes,	*nosotros tomamos,* we take,	*vosotros tomais,* you take,	*ellos toman.* they take.
Yo busco, I seek,	*tú buscas,* thou seekest,	*él busca,* he seeks,	*nosotros buscamos,* we seek,	*vosotros buscais,* you seek,	*ellos buscan.* they seek.

Verbs in *ar* differing from the above models, will be explained as they are introduced in the subsequent lessons.

The *butter.*	La *manteca*, la *mantequilla.**
The *lard.*	La *manteca*, (de puerco.)
Do you take the butter?	¿Toman VV. la mantequilla, (or manteca?)
We wish to take the tea.	Queremos tomar el té.
He wishes to look for his friends.	El quiere buscar á sus amigos.
The *general.* The *physician.*	El *general.* El *médico.*
What does the general take?	¿Que toma el general?
He takes the tea and I take the wine.	El toma el té y yo tomo el vino.
Thou takest the chocolate; who takes the coffee?	Tú tomas el chocolate; ¿quien toma el café?
The physician takes it.	El médico le toma.
What do you take?	¿Que toman VV.?
We take soup, and the children take milk.	Nosotros tomamos sopa y los niños toman leche.

REMARK 2. Nouns used in a partitive sense, as *sopa* and *leche* in this last sentence, omit the article in Spanish as they do in English. Such nouns, however, may be preceded by *some* in English, which is then not to be translated into Spanish.

Do you take (some) soup?	¿Toma V. sopa?

---

* Butter in Spanish America is *mantequilla;* in most parts of Spain it is *manteca.*

No, sir; I take (some) mutton.	No, señor; tomo carnero.
What are you looking for?	¿Que busca V.?
I am looking for coal.	Busco carbon.
That lad is looking for leather.	Aquel mozo busca cuero.
Are you looking for (some) butter?	¿Buscan VV. manteca, (or mantequilla?)
We are looking for butter, and those servant-girls are looking for ribbons.	Buscamos manteca, y aquellas mozas buscan cintas.
Whom art thou looking for?	¿A quien buscas tú?
I am looking for the boy.	Busco al mozo.

Remark 3. Let the learner bear in mind that the English have three different forms of the present tense, which may all be translated by one form in Spanish; as, *I seek, do seek, am seeking, yo busco. He takes, does take, is taking, él toma. They see, do see, are seeing, ellos ven*, etc.

Art thou looking for the same cap?	¿Buscas tú el mismo gorro?
No, sir; I am looking for the other.	No, señor; busco el otro.

Do you wish to take this money? No, sir; I wish to take the other. Are you looking for the soap, or the coal? I am looking for neither the soap nor the coal; I am looking for (some) leather. Are the servant-boys looking for their leather caps? They are looking for them. Do the children take milk? No, sir; they take (some) soup. The general is looking for his white hat; are you looking for the same? I am not looking for the same; I am looking for the other. Dost thou take wine? No, madam; I take coffee. We take soup; what do you take? We take milk and coffee. Do I take the same tea which that child takes? You take the same and we take the other. Dost thou seek for butter? I seek for butter and soap.

Is the physician looking for his inkstand? He is looking for it. What are you looking for? We are looking for butter and sugar. Is the physician at your house? He is there, and the general also. Does the lad take my money? No, sir; he does not take thine; he takes ours and his. Whom are you looking for? We are looking for the general and the physician. I wish to go to the country; where do you wish to go? I wish to go home. Are you going to seek for (some) milk? No, sir; I am going to seek for a pipe and (some) tobacco. Has the servant a bottle in his basket? He has one. What has he with his bucket? He has a long broom and a

short one. How many birds do you see? I see four in the yard, and five in the street. That child is going to look for her shoes which are in her room, under the bed, with those of her brother.

Aquel médico es un amigo de mi padre, y el general es su amigo tambien. El médico tiene tres hijos, pero el general no tiene ninguno. Tiene una hija muy bonita. El Español toma té, el Ingles toma café, y el Aleman toma vino. Nuestro sastre es Frances, y nuestro panadero es Aleman. ¿Quien es aquella señorita? Es una hija de aquel caballero. ¿Tiene él muchas hijas? Tiene dos hijas y un hijo. ¿Es su hijo médico? No, señor; quiere ser comerciante, pero es muy jóven. ¿A quien busca V.? Busco á mi padre y á mi hermano. Nuestro vecino está muy enfermo, y su hija está enferma tambien. Su mujer está buena, pero la mujer del hombre pobre está mala. Ese caballero tiene un ave amarilla muy linda.

---

27. LECCION VIGÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

PRESENT TENSE OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

To touch, to knock at. To call. *Tocar, tocar á. Llamar.*

Let the learner bear in mind that all verbs in *ar*, if regular, have the persons of the present tense, like *buscar* and *tomar*, in the preceding lesson, thus:—

Yo toco,	*tú tocas,*	*él toca,*	*nosotros tocamos,*	*vosotros tocais,*	*ellos tocan.*
I touch,	thou touchest,	he touches,	we touch,	you touch,	they touch.
Yo llamo,	*tú llamas,*	*él llama,*	*nosotros llamamos,*	*vosotros llamais,*	*ellos llaman.*
I call,	thou callest,	he calls,	we call,	you call,	they call.

Me, to me.	*Me,* (before the verb.)
Thee, to thee.	*Te,* (before the verb.)
Us, to us.	*Nos,* (before the verb.)
Do you call me?	¿Me llama V.?
I call you.	Llamo á V.
Dost thou call me?	¿Me llamas tú?
I call thee.	Te llamo.
Do you call us?	¿Nos llaman VV.?
We call you.	Llamos á VV.
They touch us.	Ellos nos tocan.
We touch them.	Nosotros los tocamos.

REMARK 1. A pronoun which is the immediate object of a transitive verb, like the above, is called the *direct object*.

The *first*. The *second*.	El *primero*. El *segundo*.
The *third*. The *door*.	El *tercero*. La *puerta*.
Who touches thee?	¿Quien te toca?
Who knocks at the door?	¿Quien toca á la puerta?
Are you looking for us?	¿Nos buscan VV.?

REMARK 2. If the object of the infinitive mood be a personal pronoun, it follows and is united with, the infinitive as one word.

I am going to see him.	Voy á verle.
He wishes to see me.	El quiere verme.
We are going to call them.	Vamos á llamarlos.
They wish to see us.	Ellos quieren vernos.
They are going to look for thee.	Van á buscarte.
I knock at the door.	Toco á la puerta.
Thou touchest me.	Tú me tocas.
The *old man*.	El *viejo*.
To study.	*Estudiar*.
Dost thou wish to study French?	¿Quieres tú estudiar el frances?
I wish to study it.	Quiero estudiarle.
Do you study Spanish?	¿Estudia V. el español?
I do not study Spanish, but the Frenchman studies it.	No estudio el español, pero el Frances le estudia.
Do you study German?	¿Estudian VV. el aleman?
We do not study German, but Spanish.	No estudiamos el aleman, sinó el español.
Dost thou study English?	¿Estudias tú el ingles?
I do not study English, but German.	No estudio el ingles, sinó el aleman.
Do you study the first book, or the second?	¿Estudia V. el libro primero ó el segundo?
I study neither the first nor the second, but the third.	No estudio ni el primero ni el segundo, sinó el tercero.
That old man is a German.	Aquel viejo es aleman.

Do you not wish for that tobacco? I do not wish to touch it. Dost thou touch me? I do not touch thee. Who touches me? We touch you. Do you not touch us? We do not touch you. Do you not touch the tobacco? I do not touch it, but the Germans and the English touch it. Whom are you going to call? I am going to call the physician and the general's servant. Is that old man going to the general's? No, sir; he is not going to the general's, but to the physician's. Do the children call thee? No, madam; the children do not call me, but the old man calls me. We call thee; dost

thou call us? No, sir; but the old man calls you. Whom is the old man looking for? He is looking for the physician.

Does any one knock at the door? No one knocks at the door. Do the English wish to study German? They wish to study it. Does the general wish to see me? He wishes to see thee. Who wishes to see us? The physician wishes to see you. Does the lad wish for tobacco? No, miss; he is not willing to touch it. Who touches me? We touch thee, and the Frenchmen touch thee also. Do you study French? We do not study French, but German. What dost thou study? I study Spanish, but my brothers study English, and the physician studies German. What do those old men study? They study nothing. Art thou the first son, or the second? I am neither the first nor the second, but the third. Is the physician going to the sick man's? He is going there. What is that child looking for? She is looking for the silk stocking which is under the bed with her shoes.

Mi hermano estudia el frances y el español y mis hermanas estudian el frances y el aleman. ¿A quien llama la moza? Ella llama á los niños que tocan á la puerta del vecino. ¿Donde está el general? Está en el campo. ¿Le buscan VV.? Le buscamos. ¿Quien es aquella señorita? Ella es la hija de aquel caballero que está en la calle. Nuestro vecino está muy enfermo. El médico va á su casa. La madre de mi amigo tiene cinco hermanos y cinco hermanas, pero su padre no tiene ni hermano ni hermana. La hermana de mi amigo es muy linda y muy amable tambien; estudia el frances y el aleman. ¿Que quieren esos caballeros? El primero quiere buen vino y el otro quiere el agua fria que está aquí.

---

28. LECCION VIGÉSIMA OCTAVA.

IRREGULAR VERBS, ADJECTIVES, ETC.

All. *To give.* *Todo.* *Dar*, (irregular.)

Verbs in *ar* not conjugated, like *tomar*, etc., in the preceding lessons, are called *irregular*.

Yo doy,	*tú das,*	*él da,*	*nosotros damos,*	*vosotros dais,*	*ellos dan.*
I give,	thou givest,	he gives,	we give,	you give,	they give.

The *hen.* The *chicken.* La *gallina.* El *pollo.*

The *whip*. The *comb*.	El *látigo*. El *peine*.
That *watch*. A *ring*.	Ese *reloj*. Un *anillo*, una *sortija*.
A *purse*. The *last*.	Una *bolsa*. El *postrero*.

REMARK 1. Adjectives in Spanish, we have seen, are generally placed after their substantives. Their position, however, is influenced by perspicuity, and by strength and harmony of expression. *Bueno*, *malo*, *primero*, *postrero*, *uno*, *alguno*, and *ninguno*, when preceding their nouns, as they generally do, lose the final *o* in the masculine singular. *Tercero* may omit or retain the *o*.

The good friend. The bad neighbor.	El buen amigo. El mal vecino.
Do you give me the first book?	¿Me da V. el primer libro?
I give you the last book.	Doy á V. el postrer libro.
How many books do you give us?	¿Cuantos libros nos dan VV.?
We give you one book.	Damos á VV. un libro.
Dost thou give me no money?	¿No me das ningun dinero?
I give you some money.	Doy á V. algun dinero.

REMARK 2. *Some*, when it is emphatic or used in a definite sense, is translated into Spanish by *alguno*.

We do not give thee all the books, but we give thee some.	No te damos todos los libros, pero te damos algunos.

REMARK 3. A pronoun which is the object of the verb, in the manner of those which precede in the present lesson, that is, with *to* expressed or understood before it in English, is called *the indirect object*. It has been seen that in the first and second persons, the direct and indirect objects are the same word. In the third person however, they differ in the feminine singular, and in the masculine and feminine plural.

To him, *to her*. *To them*.	*Le*. *Les*, (both genders.)
What do you give this young lady?	¿Que da V. á esta señorita?
I give her the fruit.	*Le* doy la fruta.
I give her the books.	*Le* doy los libros.
We give him all his money.	Le damos todo su dinero.
I give them (some) books.	Les doy libros.
Dost thou give those women the chickens?	¿Das tú los pollos á esas mujeres?
No, sir; I give them the hens.	No, señor; les doy las gallinas.

What do you give to the physician? I give him his whip. What does he give to his daughter? He gives her some combs. Does he give his son any thing? He gives him money and a gold watch. Dost thou give me any thing? I do not give thee any thing. What do the Englishmen give us? They give us many things, (*cosas*.) Do they give us money? They do not give us money, but they give you a gold ring, and they give me (*á mí me dan*) a handsome purse. What is the servant-girl looking for? She is looking for the hen

and the chickens. Are you looking for the leather whip? No, sir; I am looking for my watch and my comb. Do you wish to give your cousin that purse? I do not wish to give her this purse, but this ring. What do you give the physician? I give him a gold watch.

What do you give those old men? We give them nothing, but we give the boys (some) books. Do you give them the first book and the last? We give them the last book, but not the first. Has your servant hens? He has not hens, but chickens. Whose comb has the child? He has the old man's. What has the old man in his purse? He has watches and rings. What do you give to that servant-boy? I give him the leather whip. Dost thou give me all thy money? I do not give thee (*te le*) all but I give thee some. Whom do the children call? They call the good physician. Do you give the ring to your sister? No, sir; I give her the watch. Do you give the carpenter much money? I do not give him much, but I give him some. Are the chickens in the yard? They are in the yard with the hen. Where is the gold ring? It is on the table with the watch and the comb. Who knocks at the door? It is our friend the captain.

Mi hermano tiene un reloj de oro, y mi hermana tiene dos anillos lindos. La hija de nuestra vecina es muy buena; y dà mucho dinero á los pobres. Ella estudia mucho tambien. Nuestra moza tiene muchas gallinas y muchos pollos. Mi padre está enfermo y yo voy á llamar al médico. ¿A quien busca V.? Busco á mi hermano y á mi hermana. ¿Que da V. á ese niño? Le doy un látigo de cuero y dos libros bonitos; le doy tambien zapatos amarillos y un gorro pequeño. El médico es rico; tiene una casa grande, y muchos criados. No tiene ningun niño, pero da mucho dinero á los de su hermano. Voy á casa de mi tio á ver á mis primos y á mi tia.

---

29. LECCION VIGÉSIMA NONA.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

Verbs whose infinitive ends ER, are of the SECOND CONJUGATION. All regular verbs of this conjugation, form the persons of the indicative present by changing *er* of the infinitive into the following terminations:—

O,	ES,	E,	EMOS,	EIS,	EN.

A *glove*. *To sell*. Un *guante*. *Vender*, (infinitive.)

Yo vendo,	*tú vendes,*	*él vende,*	*nosotros vendemos,*	*vosotros vendeis,*	*ellos venden.*
I sell,	thou sellest,	he sells,	we sell,	you sell,	they sell.

The *dress*, *clothes*.	El *vestido*, *vestidos*, la *ropa*.
A *candle*.	Una *vela*.

REMARK 1. *Vestido* denotes clothes merely; *ropa* includes not only clothes, but carpets, curtains, and all domestic articles made of cloth.

The *carpet*.	El *tapiz*, la *alfombra*.
The *chair*.	La *silla*.
The *window*.	La *ventana*.
Open.	*Abierto*, *abierta*.
A *foreigner*. *Stranger*.	Un *extranjero*. *Forastero*.

REMARK 2. *Extranjero* is one of another nation; *forastero*, of another town or place of residence.

Little, (in quantity.)	*Poco*.
Few, *a few*.	*Pocos*, *unos pocos*.
A *little*.	Un *poco*, (*de* before a noun.)
A wish, *a mind*, *a fancy*.	*Gana de*, *deseo de*.
The *Scotchman*.	El *Escoces*.
The *American*.	El *Americano*.
The Scotchman has little money.	El Escoces tiene poco dinero.
He has a little wine.	Tiene un poco de vino.
Has the American a mind to sell his clothes?	¿Tiene el Americano gana de vender sus vestidos?
He has a mind to sell them.	Tiene gana de venderlos.
Those foreigners are merchants; they sell us chairs and carpets.	Esos extranjeros son comerciantes; nos venden sillas y tapices.
Does the stranger sell you clothes?	¿Le vende á V. ropa el forastero?
No, sir; he sells me candles.	No, señor; me vende velas.
What dost thou sell to that lady?	¿Que vendes tú á esa señora?
I sell her gloves.	Le vendo guantes.

REMARK 3. Let the learner bear in mind that in such phrases as, *I sell her*, *I give her*, etc., the preposition *to* is understood, *I sell* (*to*) *her*, *I give* (*to*) *her*, etc., such pronouns are, therefore, indirect objects. (*Less.* 28, *Rem.* 3.)

Do they sell that man few gloves?	¿Venden ellos pocos guantes á ese hombre?
They sell him none.	No le venden ningunos.
Do we sell the Scotchmen carpets?	¿Vendemos alfombras á los Escoceses?
We sell them a few.	Les vendemos unas pocas.
Those windows are open.	Aquellas ventanas están abiertas.
This *thing*.	Esta *cosa*.
Many things.	Muchas cosas.

What does the merchant sell? He sells clothes, carpets, chairs, and many other things. Dost thou sell any thing? I sell candles. Do you sell chairs to the Scotchmen? We do not sell them chairs, but candles. Is the window of my room open? It is not open, but the door is open. Has the stranger a desire to sell his clothes? He has not a desire to sell them, but this American has a desire to sell his gloves. Do we not sell carpets to the American? We do not sell him carpets, but chairs. Do I not sell thee many things? Thou dost not sell me many things, but few. Has that stranger a little money? He has a little. Dost thou sell much wine? I sell little wine and little coffee, but I sell many candles. Whose window is open? The Scotchman's is open. Whose door is open? The American's is open.

Do we not sell many candles? We do not sell many, but a few. How many chairs have you in your room? I have five. Are not all men mortal? All are mortal. What are you selling? We are selling many carpets, and a few whips. Whom is the servant-boy calling? He is calling the child whose father is in the yard. Does that foreigner sell clothes? He sells clothes and carpets. What does the Scotchman give us? He gives me his handsome carpet, and he gives you his chairs. Where are my hat and cloak? Your hat is on the sofa, and your cloak is on that chair. What has that foreigner a mind to sell? He has a mind to sell coats, shirts, boots, shoes, and all the clothes in his house. What does that servant-girl sell? She sells hens and chickens.

Aquel extranjero es Escoces. El vende ropa, velas, sillas y sofás. El hijo de mi amigo está enfermo y yo voy á llamar al médico. Mi primo es muy bueno, y da muchas cosas á su hermana. Le da un peine, un anillo, y cuatro buenos libros. ¿Tiene V. el primer libro ó el postrero? Tengo el postrer libro. El Escoces estudia el aleman, y el Aleman estudia el frances y el ingles. Busco al niño cuyo padre V. busca. Aquel Español es muy pobre; le doy dinero, y mi amigo el Frances le da pan y vestidos. ¿Donde está el reloj del extranjero? Está sobre la mesa con su anillo de oro y su bolsa de seda. ¿Vende V. mucho á los extranjeros? Les vendo poco. ¿Les venden VV. gorros y zapatos? No, señor; les vendemos velas y unas pocas sillas.

30. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA.

VERBS, PARTITIVE NOUNS, ETC.

INDICATIVE MOOD, PRESENT TENSE OF BEBER, TO DRINK.

Yo bebo,	*tú bebes,*	*él bebe,*	*nosotros bebemos,*	*vosotros bebeis,*	*ellos beben.*
I drink,	thou drinkest,	he drinks,	we drink,	you drink,	they drink.

Let the learner give, in the same manner, the persons of the following regular verbs of the Second Conjugation.

To learn. To believe.	*Aprender. Creer.*
The *Italian. Italian language.*	El *Italiano. italiano.*
The *Greek. Greek language.*	El *Griego. griego.*
The *Roman.* The *Latin.*	El *Romano.* El *latin.*
The *sailor.*	El *marinero.*
Both.	{ *Ambos, los dos.* / *Él uno y el otro.*
Neither, (adjective.)	*Ni el uno, ni el otro.*
Do you learn Latin or Greek?	¿Aprende V. el latin ó el griego?
I learn both.	Aprendo el uno y el otro.
Does the Greek or the Roman learn Italian?	¿Aprende el Griego ó el Romano el italiano?
Both learn it.	Ambos le aprenden.
Thou learnest French and Spanish; we learn neither.	Tú aprendes el frances y el español; nosotros no aprendemos ni el uno ni el otro.
I believe the Italian; do you believe the sailor?	Creo al Italiano; ¿creen VV. al marinero?
Thou dost not believe the sailor; we believe both.	Tú no crees al marinero; nosotros creemos á los dos.
Do you drink tea or coffee?	¿Bebe V. el té ó el café?
I drink neither.	No bebo ni el uno ni el otro.

REMARK 1. We have seen (*Less*, 26, *Rem.* 2) that nouns used in a partitive sense omit the article in Spanish as they do in English. On the contrary, nouns used in a universal sense take the article in Spanish, though not in English.

Gold is yellow.	El oro es amarillo.
Silver is white.	La plata es blanca.
Man is mortal.	El hombre es mortal.
All men are mortal.	Todos los hombres son mortales.
Sweet. Sour. Vinegar.	*Dulce. Agrio.* El *vinagre.*
Sugar is sweet, but vinegar is sour.	El azúcar es dulce, pero el vinagre es agrio.

In the above phrases we observe that the article is used in Spanish for the same reason that it is omitted in English, because the noun is used in a general sense.

I believe the Romans; do you believe them? We believe them. What do you drink? We drink water; do you drink it? I do not drink water; I drink tea and coffee. Do you look for the Greek, or the Roman? I look for both. Are you looking for the Italian, or the Scotchman? We are looking for both. Is the American or the foreigner sick? Both are sick. Is my door or my window open? Neither is open. Is not gold yellow? Yes, sir; gold is yellow and silver is white. Is not sugar sweet? Yes, sir; sugar is sweet, and vinegar is sour. Is not lead black? No, sir; lead is blue, and charcoal is black. Do you wish for the sweet fruit? Yes, sir; if you please. Do you wish for the sour fruit? No, sir; I thank you. Does the Italian drink water, or wine? He drinks both. Do you drink both? We drink both.

Have you a mind to learn Greek and Latin? I have no mind to learn either, (neither,) but I have a mind to learn Italian. Does that sailor wish for vinegar? He wishes for vinegar and water. Do you wish for both? I wish for neither. Do the Italians drink much wine? No, sir; they drink little. Dost thou drink much? I do not drink much. Do you believe the Greek, or the Roman? I believe both. Does the sailor believe them both? He believes neither. Do you learn the French, or the Spanish? I learn the French and my brother learns the Spanish. We learn the Latin; dost thou learn it also? No, sir; I learn the German. Whom is that stranger looking for? He is looking for the sailor whom you are looking for.

¿Que tiene V. sobre la mesa? Tengo un buen paráguas de seda, un reloj de oro, dos anillos muy bonitos, cinco camisas, cuatro pañuelos de seda, algunos libros y muchas otras cosas. ¿Tiene V. gana de venderlos? No, señor; doy mi paráguas de seda á mi amigo el general, este reloj de oro á mi prima, uno de los anillos á mi hermana, y los libros al Aleman viejo. ¿A quien busca el forastero? Busca al mercader que vende ropa. ¿Quiere él alguna cosa? Quiere muchas cosas. Quiere una capa, un gorro, unas botas, y un látigo de cuero. ¿Tiene él guantes de cuero ó de algodon? No los tiene ni de cuero ni de algodon, los tiene de seda. ¿Tiene él gana de venderlos? No, señor; no quiere venderlos.

31. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA PRIMERA.

NUETER FORMS, ARTICLES, ETC.

A *trunk*. The *key*.	Un *baul*. La *llave*.
That *mattress*. A *brick*.	Ese *colchon*. Un *ladrillo*.

INDICATIVE PRESENT OF SABER, TO KNOW, (IRREGULAR.)

Yo sé,	*tú sabes*,	*él sabe*,	*nosotros sabemos*,	*vosotros sabeis*,	*ellos saben*.
I know,	thou knowest,	he knows,	we know,	you know,	they know.

It.	*Ello*, (subject,) *lo*, (object.)
What, *that which*. *The*.	*Lo que*. *Lo*, (article.)
This. *That*.	*Esto*. *Eso*, *aquello*.

REMARK 1. The above nueter forms are used when the object referred to is either not a noun, or is a noun referred to vaguely, so that its gender can not be designated.

My son studies much, and it pleases me; do you know that?	Mi hijo estudia mucho, y ello me gusta; ¿sabe V. eso?
Yes, sir; I know it.	Si, señor; lo sé.
Do you know what I study?	¿Sabe V. lo que estudio?
I study Latin; does that please you?	Estudio el latin; ¿(le) gusta eso á V.?
It pleases my father.	Ello gusta á mi padre.
What is this?	¿Que es esto?
What is that?	¿Que es aquello?
This is mine, and that is thine.	Esto es lo mio, eso es lo tuyo.

REMARK 2. *Lo* is sometimes used also for *le*; that is, for something to which gender can be applied, for although most grammarians object to this, yet its use is so frequent among good writers and speakers, that it may be regarded as authorized.

I have his book; is he looking for it?	Tengo su libro; ¿le (or lo) busca él?
A *nephew*. A *niece*.	Un *sobrino*. Una *sobrina*.
Brave. *Strong*.	*Valiente*. *Fuerte*.
For.	*Para*.
Frequently, *often*.	*Frecuentemente*.

REMARK 3. Titles and epithets habitually prefixed to proper names, take the article in Spanish.

General T. is brave.	El general T. es valiente.
Mr. Torrey is my nephew.	El señor Torrey es mi sobrino.
Miss Ellis is my niece.	La señorita Ellis es mi sobrina.
I have a book for Mrs. Putnam.	Tengo un libro para la señora Putnam.
Do you often go to captain P's?	¿Va V. frecuentemente á casa del capitan P.?

The key is in the trunk.	La llave está en el baul.
Does he sell mattresses?	¿Vende él colchones?
He sells bricks.	Vende ladrillos.

Where is the key of my trunk? Your key is in your trunk. Do we sell that lady the mattresses? We do not sell her the mattresses, but the carpets. Dost thou sell bricks? I do not sell them. What has the Scotchman? He has many bricks. The Italians know Greek and Latin; do you believe that? I believe it. That servant drinks your wine; do you know it? I know it. What do you learn? We learn Latin, Greek, and Italian; does that please you? It pleases me. I do not drink wine, but water; does that please my father? It pleases your father and your mother. Whose is that? This is mine, and that is yours. Do you know what that sailor wishes? I do not know what he wishes. Do you wish for this, or that? I wish for that. Your friend studies much; do you know it? We know it. Does it please you? It pleases me much.

Who has a desire to go to the country? My nephew and niece have a desire to go there. For whom have you books? I have one for my nephew and another for my niece. Have you any thing for general T.? I have something for general T., and for captain B. also. What has Mr. C. in his yard? He has bricks there. What are you looking for? I am looking for the key of my trunk. Is not the key on the table? No, sir; it is in the trunk. What does Mr. Brown sell? He sells cheese and butter. Do you see general T. often? I see him often; he is very good and very brave. Your nephew has money for you; do you know it? I know it. What has captain Jones in his purse? He has gold rings and much money.

Mi sobrino estudia el latin y el griego y mi sobrina estudia el frances y el aleman. Voy frecuentemente á casa de la señora B. para ver á sus hijas. ¿Son ricas las hijas de la señora B.? No son ricas, pero son muy amables y muy bonitas. ¿El señor D. está enfermo; sabes tú eso? Lo sé; él está enfermo, y su mujer está enferma tambien. Ese forastero es muy pobre; ¿le da V. alguna cosa? Si, señor; le doy vestidos, pan y un poco de dinero. ¿Que vende ese mercader? Vende té, café, mantequilla, queso, azúcar y muchas otras cosas. ¿Que da V. á su madre? Le doy un pañuelo muy lindo. Mi amigo está enfermo y voy á llamar al médico.

32. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA SEGUNDA.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

REMARK 1. Verbs whose infinitive ends in IR, are of the THIRD CONJUGATION. All regular verbs of this conjugation, form the persons of the indicative present by changing *ir* of the infinitive into the following terminations:—

O,	ES,	E,	IMOS,	IS,	EN.
To live.	*To write.*		*Vivir.*	*Escribir.*	
Yo vivo, I live,	*tú vives,* thou livest,	*él vive,* he lives,	*nosotros vivimos,* we live,	*vosotros vivis,* you live,	*ellos viven.* they live.
Yo escribo, I write,	*tú escribes,* thou writest,	*él escribe,* he writes,	*nosotros escribimos,* we write,	*vosotros escribis,* you write,	*ellos escriben.* they write.

Let the learner give in the same manner all the persons of *recibir*, to receive.

The *city.* *France.*	La *ciudad.* La *Francia.*
Spain. *England.*	La *España.* La *Inglaterra.*
America. The *United States.*	La *América.* Los *Estados Unidos.*

REMARK 2. The names of countries receive the article unless preceded by a preposition; other proper names generally omit them.

France is beautiful.	La Francia es hermosa.
Spain is warm.	La España es caliente.
I am going to England.	Voy á Inglaterra.
We live in America.	Vivimos en América.
A *letter.* A *billet, note.*	Una *carta.* Un *billete.*
Dauphin street. *Royal* street.	La calle *Dofen.* La calle *Real.*
He lives in *Government* street.	El vive en la calle del *Gobierno.*
Dost thou live in the city?	¿ Vives tú en la ciudad?
Yes, sir; I live in Royal street.	Si, señor; vivo en la calle Real.
Do you live in France?	¿ Viven VV. en Francia?
No, sir; we live in Spain.	No, señor; vivimos en España.
Do you write many letters?	¿ Escribe V. muchas cartas?
I write a few.	Escribo unas pocas.
Do you receive the letters which we write?	¿ Reciben VV. las cartas que escribimos?
We receive them.	Las recibimos.
Dost thou receive the letters which thy friends write?	¿ Recibes tú las cartas que tus amigos escriben?
I receive them all.	Las recibo todas.
Do you receive the notes which the captain writes you?	¿ Recibe V. los billetes que el capitan le escribe?

I receive them.	Los recibo.

REMARK 3. A noun in the predicate, used like an adjective to express some character of the subject, omits the indefinite article in Spanish.

That man is a physician.	Aquel hombre es médico.
Is he an Englishman?	¿Es ingles?
No, sir; he is a Frenchman.	No, señor; es frances.
Is his brother a merchant?	¿Es su hermano comerciante?
No, sir; he is a sailor.	No, señor; es marinero.
He is an excellent physician.	Es un médico excelente.

REMARK 4. When, as in this last phrase, some limiting expression is added to the noun, it ceases to have the nature of an adjective and takes the article.

He is a *soldier*.	Es *soldado*.
He is a soldier of the *king*.	Es un soldado del *rey*.
The soldier. The king.	El soldado. El rey.

Do your brothers live in the country? No, sir; they live in the city, and my mother lives in the city also. In what street dost thou live? I live in Dauphin street. Do you not live in Royal street? We live in Government street. Have you a desire to live in the country? No, sir; I have a desire to live in the city, but my nephew and my niece have a desire to live in the country. For whom have you a letter? I have one for my uncle. Does your uncle live in France? No, sir; he lives in Spain. Do you wish to write a letter to your friend? I wish to write him one. Do you write many letters? I write many. What art thou writing? I am writing a note to my neighbor. Are you not writing letters? I am not writing letters, but notes. Do you receive notes from (*de*) your friend? Yes, sir; I receive them from my friend, and from my neighbor also. Dost thou receive all that they write? I receive them all.

What is the Italian writing? He is writing a book. Does he write books frequently? He does not write them frequently, but he writes them sometimes, (*algunas veces.*) Does the Frenchman receive many things from England? He receives many from England, and from France and Spain also. Do those Scotchmen receive letters from America frequently? They receive them from America often, and from France also. Do you receive any thing from the United States? Yes, sir; we receive many things from the United States,

and from England also. Where does that foreigner live? He lives in the United States. Is he an Englishman? No, sir; he is an American. Is he a sailor? No, sir; he is a soldier. Is he a soldier of the United States? No, sir; he is a soldier of the king. Is Miss C. going to the city? She is going there.

Mi amigo vive en España. Me escribe muchas cartas que recibo frecuentemente. Tengo un billete para el señor C. que vive en la calle Real. ¿Quiere V. recibir muchas cartas de sus amigos? Si, señor; quiero recibir muchas. Aquel extranjero es frances, y este es español. Los soldados americanos son valientes y los franceses tambien. Recibo muchas cartas de mi hermano que está en Francia y de mi primo que está en Inglaterra. Nuestro médico es aleman, vive en la calle Jackson y sus amigos viven en el campo. ¿Que tiene V. para la hija del médico? Tengo una cinta linda y algunos libros. Los libros están en mi cuarto sobre la mesa. Le doy tambien un lapicero de oro y unos zapatos colorados.

---

33. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA TERCERA.

PRONOUNS DIRECT AND INDIRECT OBJECT.

A *lion*. *How many times, how often.*	Un *leon*. *Cuantas veces.*
Sometimes. *Many times, often.*	*Algunas veces*. *Muchas veces.*
Once. *But, only.*	*Una vez*. *Solo*, (adverb.)
Has the Roman only that cloak?	¿Tiene el Romano solo aquella capa?
The *store*. *Alone, single.*	El *almacen*. *Solo*, (adjective.)
Without. Without friends.	*Sin*. Sin amigos.
I go to the store alone and without money.	Voy al almacen solo y sin dinero.
Lions are strong.	Los leones son fuertes.
We sell the house whose doors are handsome.	Vendemos la casa cuyas puertas son hermosas.
To speak. *To send.*	*Hablar*. *Enviar.*

REMARK 1. The personal pronouns, direct object of the verb, we have seen in *Less.* 27, and the indirect in *Less.* 28, to be these:—

DIRECT OBJECTS.		INDIRECT OBJECTS.	
Me, us.	*Me, nos.*	To me, to us.	*Me, nos.*
Thee, you.	*Te, os.*	To thee, to you.	*Te, os.*
Him, them.	*Le, los.*	To him, to them.	*Le, les.*
Her, them.	*La, las.*	To her, to them.	*Le, les.*

Do you speak to me?	¿ Me habla V.?
I speak to you. I speak to thee.	Hablo á V. Te hablo.
Thou speakest to him.	Tú le hablas.
We speak to them.	Nosotros les hablamos.
They speak to us.	Ellos nos hablan.
Do you speak to the ladies?	¿ Hablan VV. á las señoras?
We speak to them.	Les hablamos.
He speaks to her.	El le-habla.
She speaks to him.	Ella le habla.

REMARK 2. When a direct and indirect object belong to the same verb, the indirect object is placed first; and in the third person it becomes *se*.

It, him, or her to me.	*Me le, me la.*	Them to me.	*Me los, me las.*
It, him, or her to thee.	*Te le, te la.*	Them to thee.	*Te los, te las.*
It, him, or her to us.	*Nos le, nos la.*	Them to us.	*Nos los, nos las.*
It, him, or her to you.	*Os le, os la.*	Them to you.	*Os los, os las,*
It, him, or her to him.	*Se le, se la.*	Them to him.	*Se los, se las.*
It, him, or her to her.	*Se le, se la.*	Them to her.	*Se los, se las.*
It, him, or her to them.	*Se le, se la.*	Them to them.	*Se los, se las.*

Do you give me this *picture?*	¿ Me da V. este *cuadro?*
I do not give it to thee.	No te le doy.
He sends it to me.	El me le envia.
Dost thou send it to us?	¿ Nos le envias tú?
I send it to you.	Le envio á VV.
Do you send me these pictures?	¿ Me envian VV. estos cuadros?
We send them to thee.	Te los enviamos.
Does he write you those letters?	¿ Escribe él á V. esas cartas?
He does not write them to me.	No me las escribe.
Does he write them to us?	¿ Nos las escribe?
Do you write those notes to the neighbor?	¿ Escribe V. esos billetes al vecino?
I do not write them to him.	No se los escribo.
Do you write them to his daughter?	¿ Los escribe V. á su hija?
I do not write them to her.	No se los escribo.
Do you write them to your friends?	¿ Los escribe V. á sus amigos?
I write them to them.	Se los escribo.
Do you send the picture to the captain?	¿ Envian VV. el cuadro al capitan?
We do not send it to him.	No se le enviamos.
Do you send it to his wife?	¿ Le envian VV. á su mujer?
We send it to her.	Se le enviamos.
Do you send this letter to the soldiers?	¿ Envia V. esta carta á los soldados?
I send it to them.	Se la envio.

Do you give the calf to the lion? I give him to him. Are not lions strong? They are very strong. Do you often go to the neigh-

bor's? I go (there) sometimes, and I go to general T.'s frequently. Does your nephew see that picture often? No, sir; but he sees it sometimes. Does he see it four times a day, (*al dia?*) No, sir; he sees it only twice a day. Do you go to the store alone and without money? No, sir; I go with my niece and with money. Does that merchant sell you the fine (*finas*) cravats? He sells them to me. Does he sell the good biscuits to the cook? He sells them to him. Does he wish to sell me the shirts? He wishes to sell them to thee. Does he sell them to thee? He sells them to me. Do you sell them to us? No, sir; we sell them to them, (*á ellos.*) Is he writing that note to me? He is not writing it to thee. Do the Germans give thee the picture? They give it to me. Do you send it to us? I do not send it to you. Do you send the letter to my cousin? I send it to her.

Do you send the books to the sailors? We do not send them to them. Do you send them to the soldiers? We send them to them. Do you give the fruit to Miss C.? I give it to her. Does she give it to her brother? She gives it to him. Do you give me the new poems and the old ones? I give thee only the old. Does the sailor drink coffee and milk? He drinks only coffee. Do you drink it alone without milk? I drink it alone without milk and without sugar. Whose pictures are those? They are mine, (*Less.* 22, *Rem.* 2.) Dost thou give them to me? I give them to thee. Does the neighbor give us his fruit? He gives it to us.

El leon vive en un retiro.[1] Es muy fuerte. Tiene sobre el pescuezo[2] una melena[3] amarilla muy espesa.[4] El leon duerme[5] todo el dia[6] en su retiro. Al anochecer[7] sale[8] á buscar alguna cosa que comer;[9] como[10] vacas, carneros, caballos y hombres tambien. La hembra[11] no tiene melena. Parece[12] un perro grande. Un leon causa[13] temor[14] á todo el mundo;[15] pero nadie tiene temor de los perros porque[16] no son malos.

1, *Retiro*, retired place. 2, *Pescuezo*, neck. 3, *Melena*, mane. 4, *Espeso*, thick. 5, *Duerme*, he sleeps, (from *dormir*, to sleep, irregular, *duermo*, *duermes*, *duerme.*) 6, *Dia*, day. 7, *Al anochecer*, on its becoming night, (*anochecer* means to become night. The infinitive in Spanish, like the present participle in English, is often the object of a preposition.) 8, *Salir*, to go out. 9, *Comer*, to eat. 10, *Como*, as. 11, *Hembra*, female. 12, *Parecer*, to appear like. 13, *Causar*, to cause. 14, *Temor*, fear. 15, *Mundo*, world. 16, *Porque*, because.

34. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA CUARTA.

THREE REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

The terminations of the three conjugations have now been given for the *infinitive*, and for the *indicative present*. We have seen them as follows:—

INFINITIVE	INDICATIVE PRESENT
Lesson 26, 1st Conjugation, AR.	O, AS, A, AMOS, AIS, AN.
Lesson 29, 2d Conjugation, ER.	O, ES, E, EMOS, EIS, EN.
Lesson 32, 3d Conjugation, IR.	O, ES, E, IMOS, IS, EN.

All regular verbs, the learner will bear in mind, follow these models. The persons of irregulur verbs will be given as they are introduced hereafter

The learner will bear in mind also, as seen in the last lesson, that the direct and indirect objective pronouns have the same form, except these:—

Her. To her. Them. To them. *La. Le. Los, las. Les.*

And that all the indirect objective pronouns of the third person, when accompanied by the direct, become *se*.

Does the stranger sell you his horse?	¿ Vende el forastero su caballo á V.?
He sells him to me.	Me le vende.
Dost thou give me this pen?	¿ Me das tú esta pluma?
I give it to thee.	Te la doy.
Does the servant sell his chicken to the neighbor?	¿ Vende el criado su pollo al vecino?
He does not sell it to him.	No se le vende.
Do you sell ribbons to those ladies?	¿Vende V. cintas á aquellas señoras?
I do not sell them to them.	No se las vendo.
Do you give them to your sister?	¿ Las da V. á su hermana?
I give them to her, and I give her the handkerchiefs also.	Se las doy, y le doy los pañuelos tambien.
What do you give to the neighbors?	¿ Que da V. á los vecinos?
I give them many things.	Les doy muchas cosas.

REMARK 1. The objective pronouns are not to be placed between the infinitive and the verb on which it depends, but are either to precede the first verb or follow the last.

I wish to send it to him.	Se le quiero enviar, or quiero enviársele.
He wishes to give them to me.	Me los quiere dar, or quiered ármelos.
I give you your money.	Os doy vuestro dinero.
I send you yours.	Os envio el vuestro.
I give it to you.	Os le doy.

REMARK 2. *Os* is the objective form of *vosotros*, and, as mentioned in *Less.* 13, is only to be used in public addresses, and by superiors to inferiors. Its adjective forms are—

Your.	*Vuestro, vuestra, vuestros, vuestras.*
Yours.	*El vuestro, la vuestra,* etc.

I wish to send you your letters.	Quiero enviaros vuestras cartas.
I wish to send you yours.	Quiero enviaros las vuestras.
I wish to send them to you.	Os las quiero enviar; or, quiero enviároslas.
The *day*.	El *dia*.
Every day.	*Todos los dias*.
Twice a day.	Dos veces al dia.
Three times a day.	Tres veces al dia.
I go to my brother's four times every day.	Voy á casa de mi hermano cuatro veces todos los dias.
To wash. *To make*.	*Lavar*. *Hacer*, (irregular.)

Yo hago,	*tú haces*,	*él hace*,	*nosotros hacemos*,	*vosotros haceis*,	*ellos hacen*.
I make,	thou makest,	he makes,	we make,	you make,	they make.

Himself, themselves.	*Se*.
To wash one's self.	*Lavarse*.
He washes himself.	El se lava.
They wash themselves.	Ellos se lavan.
He washes himself every day.	El se lava todos los dias.
The tailor is making a coat.	El sastre hace una casaca.
What art thou making?	¿Que haces tú?
I am not making any thing.	No hago nada.
We make nothing.	Nosotros no hacemos nada.
The shoemakers make shoes.	Los zapateros hacen zapatos.

How often do you go to the store? I go (there) three times a day. Do you often write notes? No, sir; but I write them sometimes. How many do you write? I write one every day. Do you write it to your sister? I write it to her. Does she send it to your friends? She does not send it to them. Do you wish for the fine cravat and the new umbrella? No, sir; I wish only for the fine cravat. Whose pictures are those? They are thine. Whose whip is that? It is mine. Whose comb is that which is on the table with the gold rings? It is the stranger's. Does the tailor sell thee clothes, gloves, and mattresses? He does not sell them to me; he sells me only clothes. Have those merchants good candles? They have very good ones. Do you wish for bricks? I wish for many for a new house. Is not steel white? No, sir; steel is blue, and lead is blue also. I live in the city in Government street; do you live on Royal street? No, madam; I live in the country.

Do those foreigners live in France, or in England? They live neither in France nor in England; they live in the United States of North (*del Norte*) America. Do you go to the city sometimes? I go there often. How often do you go? I go there twice every day. Whose handkerchiefs are those? They are mine. Are they not small? They are small, but very fine. What does the cook wish to make? He wishes to make chocolate and coffee. Does he wish to make biscuits? He wishes to make biscuits and bread. What are you making? I am making a net. What do the tailors make? They make clothes. What are you making? We are making coffee. What art thou making? I am making chocolate. How many oxen has the butcher? He has two oxen, three cows, and four calves. Does that woman wish to wash these stockings? She wishes to wash them. How often does that child wash himself? He washes himself once every day. Do his brothers wash themselves often? They wash themselves twice a day.

El camello[1] es originario[2] de Arabia pero tambien se encuentra[3] en Africa y Asia. El largo[4] regular[5] es de diez[6] piés[7] y seis[8] de alto.[9] El lleva[10] desde[11] mil[12] hasta[13] mil doscientas[14] libras[15] de peso[16] y hace[17] doce[18] leguas[19] por dia.[20] El leon es el mas[21] fuerte y terrible de los animales[22] que nos vienen[23] de Asia ó de Africa. Es notable[24] por[25] una larga melena que le sombrea[26] la cabeza[27] y el pescuezo. Tiene en cada[28] quijada[29] catorce[30] dientes.[31] Sus garras[32] son semejantes[33] á las del gato,[34] pero mucho mas grandes. Su mas grande talle[35] es como de[36] ocho[37] piés de largo y cuatro de alto. La hembra no tiene melena. Su alimento[38] en los bosques[39] son la gacela[40] y el mono.[41]

1, ***El camello***, the camel. 2, ***Originario***, native. 3, ***Encontrar***, to find, (*yo encuentro*, *tú encuentras*, *él encuentra*, *se encuentra*, is found.) 4, ***Largo***, length. 5, ***Regular***, common. 6, ***Diez***, ten. 7, ***Pié***, foot. 8, ***Seis***, six. 9, ***Alto***, height. 10, ***Llevar***, to carry. 11, ***Desde***, from. 12, ***Mil***, a thousand. 13, ***Hasta***, to. 14, ***Doscientos***, two hundred. 15, ***Libra***, pound. 16, ***Peso***, weight. 17, ***Hace***, (he makes,) goes. 18, ***Doce***, twelve. 19, ***Legua***, league. 20, ***Por dia***, per day. 21, ***El mas***, the most. 22, ***Animales***, animal. 23, ***Nos vienen***, come to us. 24, ***Notable***, remarkable. 25, ***Por***, for. 26, ***Sombrear***, to shade. 27, ***La cabeza***, the head. 28, ***Cada***, each. 29, ***Quijada***, jaw. 30, ***Catorce***, fourteen. 31, ***Diente***, tooth. 32, ***Garra***, claw. 33, ***Semejante***, similar. 34, ***Gato***, the cat. 35, ***Talle***, stature. 36, ***Como de***, about. 37, ***Ocho***, eight. 38, ***Alimento***, food. 39, ***Bosque***, wood. 40, ***Gacela***, gazelle. 41, ***Mono***, monkey.

35. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA QUINTA.

PRONOUNS, NUETER OF ADJECTIVES, ETC.

REMARK 1. The personal pronouns, when governed by prepositions, have their forms as follows:—

Of *me*, of *us*.	De *mí*, de *nosotros*, *as*.
Of *thee*, of *you*.	De *tí*, de *vosotros*, *as*.
Of *him*, of *it*, of *them*.	De *él*, de *ellos*, (masculine.)
Of *her*, of *it*, of *them*.	De *ella*, de *ellas*, (feminine.)
Of *himself*, *herself*, *itself*.	De *sí*.
Of *themselves*. Of *it*.	De *sí*. De *ello*.
For whom does the tailor make a coat?	¿Para quien hace el sastre una casaca?
He makes one for me.	Hace una para mí.
Does he make one for thee?	¿Hace una para tí?
He makes one for himself.	Hace una para sí.
Do they speak of him, or of her?	¿Hablan ellos de él ó de ella?
They speak of us and of you.	Hablan de nosotros y de VV.
Do you receive letters from them?	¿Recibe V. cartas de ellos, (or ellas?)
Do you speak of what you are doing?	¿Habla V. de lo que hace?
I speak of it.	Hablo de ello.
They speak of themselves.	Hablan de sí.
She speaks of herself.	Ella habla de sí.

REMARK 2. The neuter of adjectives is often used to denote abstract qualities.

Good. Evil.	Lo *bueno*. Lo *malo*.
Useful. The *useful*.	*Util*. Lo *útil*.
Agreeable. The *agreeable*.	*Agradable*. Lo *agradable*.
More. Than.	*Mas. Que.*
To love. To prefer.	*Amar. Preferir*, (irregular.)

Prefiero,	*prefieres*,	*prefiere*,	*preferimos*,	*preferís*,	*prefieren*.
I prefer,	thou preferest,	he prefers,	we prefer,	you prefer,	they prefer.

Iron is useful.	El hierro es útil.
Miss S. is agreeable.	La señorita S. es agradable.
Do all men love good?	¿Aman todos los hombres lo bueno?
Do they love good more than evil?	¿Aman lo bueno mas que lo malo?
Do you love this man more than that one?	¿Ama V. á este hombre mas que aquel?
I love that one more than this.	Amo aquel mas que este.
Do you prefer the agreeable to the useful?	¿Prefiere V. lo agradable á lo útil?

I prefer the useful to the agreeable.	Prefiero lo útil á lo agradable
Do you prefer beef to mutton?	¿Prefieren VV. la vaca al carnero?
We prefer mutton to beef.	Preferimos el carnero á la vaca.

Is not this wine old? It is old and excellent. Are you making a net for me? I am not making any for thee; I am making one for my mother. Are you making the coffee for us? I am making it for you. What are those Scotchmen making? They are making guns. Are they making them for us? No, sir; they are making them for themselves. Does the servant-girl wish to wash the handkerchiefs of my aunt? She wishes to wash those of your aunt and of your uncle. How many does she wash for him? She washes two for him and three for her. What are those servants washing for you? They are washing one handkerchief, two gloves, three shirts, four cravats, and some stockings. Do they wash any thing for themselves? Yes, sir; they wash many things for themselves. What art thou washing? I am washing my inkstand. Dost thou wash thy gold pen? I do not wash it; the servant washes it. Are you washing your inkstands? We are not washing them.

Do you prefer boots to shoes? Yes, sir; I prefer them. Do you prefer the red ones to the black ones? No, sir; I prefer the black ones. Do you prefer yours to ours? We prefer yours. Do all men prefer the good to the bad? Yes, sir; all men prefer it. Do all women prefer the useful to the agreeable? No, sir; many prefer the agreeable to the useful. Dost thou prefer the red stick to the black one? I prefer the black. Do you love the judge more than the merchant? Yes, sir; I love the former more than the latter. Whom dost thou love? I love all my friends. Do you love your father more than your mother? No, sir; I love my father much, and my mother also. Do you not love your neighbors more than strangers? We love them more. Do you give me the lights? I give them to thee. Do you give them to the judge? We do not give them to him. Do you give them to the servant-girl? We give them to her. Does the tailor make coats for the neighbors? He makes them for them and for us. Does he make one for your brother? He makes one for him, and for me and for thee also.

La peninsula* que se llama[1] España, solo está contigua[2] al continente[3] de Europa[4] por[5] el lado[6] de Francia, de la que la separan[7] los montes[8] Pirineos.[9] Abunda[10] en oro, plata, azogue,[11] hierro, piedras,[12] aguas minerales, ganados[13] de excelentes calidades,[14] y pescas[15] tan[16] abundantes como[17] deliciosas.[18]

La muerte[19] es siempre[a] buena. Parece mala á veces[20] porque[21] es malo él que muere.[22]

1, *Se llama*, (calls itself,) is called. 2, *Contiguo*, contiguous. 3, *Continente*, continent. 4, *Europa*, Europe. 5, *Por*, by. 6, *El lado*, the side. 7, *Separar*, to separate. 8, *Monte*, mountain. 9, *Pirineos*, Pyrenees. 10, *Abunda*, it abounds, 11, *Azogue*, quicksilver. 12, *Piedra*, stone. 13, *Ganado*, flock, herd. 14, *Calidad*, quality. 15, *Pesca*, fish. 16, *Tan*, as. 17, *Como*, as. 18, *Delicioso*, delicious. 19, *Muerte*, death. 20, *A veces*, at times. 21, *Porque*, because. 22. *Morir*, to die, (irregular,) the indicative present is, *muero*, *mueres*, *muere*, etc. a, Siempre, *always*.

---

36. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA SEXTÀ.

VERBS, IDIOMS, ETC.

Hunger. Thirst.	La *hambre*.† La *sed*.
Cold. Heat.	El *frio*. El *calor*.
Fear. Sleep.	El *miedo*. El *sueño*.
Reason. Shame.	La *razon*. La *vergüenza*.

REMARK 1. The phrases *to be hungry*, *to be thirsty*, *to be warm*, *to be cold*, *to be sleepy*, *to be afraid*, *to be ashamed*, *to be right*, instead of the verb *to be*, and an adjective, as in English, are expressed by the verb *to have* and a noun, meaning literally *to have hunger*, *to have thirst*, *to have heat*, *to have cold*, etc., as follows:—

Are you cold? I am not cold.	¿Tiene V. frio? No tengo frio.
Art thou warm? I am warm.	¿Tienes tú calor? Tengo calor.
Is he hungry?	¿Tiene él hambre?
He is hungry and cold.	Tiene hambre y frio.
Are we not sleepy?	¿No tenemos nosotros sueño?
We are sleepy.	Tenemos sueño.
Are you afraid?	¿Tiene V. miedo?
I am not afraid.	No tengo miedo.
Is he ashamed?	¿Tiene él vergüenza?

---

* Words which are the same in both Spanish and English, it is not thought necessary to translate.

† HAMBRE, like many other feminine nouns commencing in A, takes sometimes the article (singular masculine) EL.

He is not ashamed, but afraid.	El no tiene vergüenza sinó miedo.
I am very thirsty, and he is very cold.	Tengo mucha sed, y él tiene mucho frio.
Am I right?	¿Tengo yo razon?
No, sir; you are wrong.	No, señor; V. no tiene razon.
Are we right or not?	¿Tenemos nosotros razon ó no?
To leave, to let, to fail.	*Dejar.*
To buy.	*Comprar.*
Do you leave your book here?	¿Deja V. aquí su libro?
I do not leave it there.	No le dejo allí.

REMARK 2. It was noted, *Less.* 20, that the verb *ir* takes *á* before a dependent infinitive. *Dejar*, in like manner, takes *de*. Verbs which require *á* or *de* before a dependent infinitive, will be marked with the abbreviation, (*á* or *de* before infinitive.)

Dost thou always fail to be right? Art thou always wrong?	¿Dejas tú siempre de tener razon?
I fail to be so sometimes.	Dejo de tenerla algunas veces.
Always. Because.	*Siempre. Porque.*
Do you buy wine?	¿Compran VV. vino?
We buy much.	Compramos mucho.
Dost thou buy it because thou art thirsty?	¿Le compras tú porque tienes sed?
I buy it for my friends.	Le compro para mis amigos.
The cook buys bread and cheese.	El cocinero compra pan y queso.

Is your brother cold, or warm? He is very warm; he is not cold. Are you not very hungry? I am very hungry and very thirsty. Art thou afraid of that man? I am not afraid of him. Is not your cousin ashamed of his cravat? He is not ashamed of it. Are we not very sleepy? You are very sleepy, and your servants also. Does that man always buy wine because he is thirsty? No, sir; he sometimes buys it because he wishes to sell it. Art thou not very cold and very thirsty? I am thirsty, but not cold. Who is right? Your brother is right. Art thou right or not? I am right, but you are wrong. Art thou ashamed because thou art wrong? I am ashamed because I am wrong. Does your tailor always buy good cloth? He does not always buy good cloth; he sometimes buys bad. Do those men always leave their hats here? They leave them here sometimes, but not always. Where do you leave your books? We often leave them on the table. Do you and your brother leave off learning (*dejan de aprender*) Spanish? We do not leave off learning it. What do you buy? I buy butter and cheese.

Do you buy shoes, or boots? We often buy both. Do you always buy them here? We sometimes buy them here, but not always. Does that man leave his bread? Yes, sir; he leaves it because he is not hungry. Is that boy sleepy? He is very sleepy. Do you see those soldiers? I see them. Do you speak to them? I sometimes speak to them. Do you speak of me, or of my brothers? I speak of them and of thee. Does Miss C. speak of herself, or of her sisters? She speaks of them and of us. Do you buy fruit for those ladies? I buy it for them and for thee. What do you give to that poor man? We give him bread. Do you not give him this money? We do not give it to him. Where do you leave the silk bags? We leave the silk ones on the chair, and the cotton ones under the table.

El perro es un animal muy útil y muy benéfico[1] para el hombre. Es un criado fiel[2] que la naturaleza[3] le da para servirle[4] de compañero,[5] de amigo, de defensor[6] y de ayuda[7] en casi[8] todas sus necesidades.[9] Es el verdadero[10] símbolo[11] de la fidelidad,[12] es la fidelidad misma.[13] Sacrifica[14] su vida[15] por defender[16] no solo á su amo,[17] sino tambien todo lo que este entrega[18] á su guarda.[19] Su industria[20] y maña[21] son superiores y le hacen infinitamente[22] útil.

1, *Bénifico*, beneficent. 2, *Fiel*, faithful. 3, *Naturaleza*, nature. 4, *Servir*, to serve. 5, *Compañero*, companion. 6, *Defensor*, defender. 7, *Ayuda*, help. 8, *Casi*, almost. 9, *Necesidad*, necessity. 10, *Verdadero*, true. 11, *Símbolo*, symbol. 12, *Fidelidad*, fidelity. 13, *Misma*, itself. 14, *Sacrificar*, to sacrifice. 15, *Vida*, life. 16, *Defender*, to defend. 17, *Amo*, master. 18, *Entregar*, to deliver. 19, *Guarda*, custody. 20, *Industria*, diligence. 21, *Maña*, skill. 22, *Infinitamente*, infinitely.

---

37. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, ARTICLES, ETC.

To run. *To move.* *Correr.** *Mover*, (irregular.)

Yo muevo,	*tú mueves,*	*él mueve,*	*nosotros movemos,*	*vosotros moveis,*	*ellos mueven.*
I move,	thou movest,	he moves,	we move,	you move,	they move.

The *hare.* The *rabbit.* La *liebre.* El *conejo.*

* Let the learner give the different persons of each verb as it is introduced, until he is sufficiently familiar with the three regular conjugations.

Swiftly, fast. He runs fast.	*Aprisa, de prisa.* El corre de prisa.
Quick, fast. Cabbage.	*Pronto.* La *col.*
The *lettuce.* The *onion.*	La *lechuga.* La *cebolla.*
Vegetables.	*Vegetables*, las *verduras.*
When.	*Cuando.*
The *lip.* The *head.*	El *labio.* La *cabeza.*
The *arm.* The *leg.*	El *brazo.* La *pierna.*
A *tooth, front tooth.*	Un *diente.*
A *grinder*, (*back tooth.*)	Una *muela.*
A *pain. To pain.*	Un *dolor. Doler*, (irregular like *mover.*)
What is the matter with you?	¿ Que tiene V.?
I am very sleepy.	Tengo mucho sueño.
The *toothache.* The *headache*	*Dolor de muelas. Dolor de cabeza.*

REMARK 1. The definite article in Spanish is commonly preferred to the possessive adjectives, when the possessor is otherwise sufficiently denoted.

My foot is large.	Tengo el pié grande.
Your foot is small.	V. tiene el pié pequeño.
Your lips are red.	V. tiene los labios colorados.
His hand is white.	El tiene la mano blanca.
The *hand.* The *eye.*	La *mano.* El *ojo.*
Does your arm pain you?	¿ Le duele á V. el brazo?
My head pains me.	La cabeza me duele.
I have the headache.	Tengo dolor de cabeza.
That man's teeth pain him.	Duelen las muelas á ese hombre.
He has the toothache.	Tiene dolor de muelas.
How many teeth have you?	¿ Cuantos dientes tiene V.?
I have eight front teeth and twenty-four back teeth.	Tengo ocho dientes y veinte cuatro muelas.
Your eyes are blue.	V. tiene los ojos azules.

REMARK 2. The third person singular and plural of the IMPERATIVE MOOD, is generally formed from the same persons of the indicative present by changing, in the *first conjugation*, *a* of the last syllable into *e*; and in the other conjugations, *e* into *a*,* Thus:—

INDICATIVE, (sing.)	IMPERATIVE, (sing.)	INDICATIVE, (plur.)	IMPERATIVE, (plur.)
You give, *V. da.*	Give, *dé.*	You give, *VV. dan.*	Give, *den.*
You take, *V. toma.*	Take, *tome.*	You take, *VV. toman.*	Take, *tomen.*
You drink, *V. bebe.*	Drink, *beba.*	You drink, *VV. beben.*	Drink, *beban.*
You write, *V. escribe.*	Write, *escriba.*	You write, *VV. escriben.*	Write, *escriban.*

The objective pronouns are annexed to this mood when affirmative, thus:—

Give me the book. Give it to me.	Déme el libro. Démele.
Take your books. Take them.	Tomen sus libros. Tómenlos.

* This rule will suffice until the learner arrives at *Lesson* 89, where the imperative is fully treated of.

Write the letters. Write them to us.	Escriban las cartas. Escríbanoslas.
Do not drink the wine.	No beba el vino.
Do not drink it.	No le beba.
Give us the money; do not give it to him.	Dénos el dinero; no se le dé.

We here see that the objective pronouns come before the imperative when it is negative, after it when affirmative.

Speak to the men. Speak to them.	Hable á los hombres. Hábleles.
Sell the cloth. Sell it to us.	Venda el paño. Véndanosle.

How many rabbits and hares have you? I have four hares and five rabbits. Do rabbits move their lips much? Yes, sir; they move them always. Do you move your arm when you write? I do not move it much, but I move my hand always when I write. Does that boy run fast? No, sir; he does not run fast, but these men run very fast. Do not rabbits run when they see the dogs? They run sometimes, but sometimes they do not move, (*se mueven.*) Are not rabbits afraid of dogs? Yes, sir; rabbits and hares are much afraid of them. Do you give that fruit to your sister? I give it to her. Do you give her only a little? I give her only a little. Will you sell me (*quiere V. venderme*) the cabbage which you buy? I will not sell it to you. What vegetables does your aunt buy? She buys lettuce, cabbages, and onions. Are the legs of rabbits large? No, sir; they are small. Are not my lips red? Yes, sir; they are red. Are not that horse's legs very long? They are not very long. Is not his head beautiful? It is very beautiful. What pains you? My head pains me, and my arm also. Do your arms pain you when you are cold? Yes, sir; they always pain me when I am very cold.

How many teeth has that child? He has only four. Do not your teeth pain you sometimes? Yes, sir; they often pain me. Has your cousin the toothache? She has the toothache. Do her front teeth, or her back teeth, pain her? Her back teeth pain her, and her head pains her also. Does the shoemaker's head pain him? It pains him. Do you move your arms when you run? I move them much when I run. Do you run sometimes? I run sometimes, but not often. Do you run because you are afraid? No, sir; we run, but we are not afraid. What vegetables does the cook buy? He buys cabbage, lettuce, and onions. Do not hares run fast? Yes, sir; hares and

rabbits run fast. Do you wish to buy lettuce? I wish to buy lettuce, onions, cabbage, and other vegetables. Is not Miss C. pretty? Yes, miss; her feet are small, her hands white, and her eyes very beautiful. Take the fruit and give it to us. Give them the book. Do not drink the wine; give it to me.

La liebre es un animal pequeño, ceniciento;[1] pero en los países[2] del norte[3] es blanco en invierno.[4] La liebre es muy mansa[5] y muy inocente,[6] pero tambien muy temerosa.[7] Ella tiene el rabo[8] corto y espeso[9] tiene el labio superior,[10] abierto y guarnecido[11] de pelo.[12] Ella mueve continuamente[13] los labios. Las piernas de atras[14] son muy largas; corren muy pronto. La liebre se mantiene[15] de yerbas,[16] de raices,[17] y de las cáscaras[18] de los árboles tiernos;[19] algunas veces entra[20] en los jardines para comer coles y otros vegetables. Ella reposa[21] en la cueva[22] durante[23] el dia y no sale sinó de noche.[24]

1, *Ceniciento*, ash-colored. 2, *País*, country. 3, *Norte*, north. 4, *Invierno*, winter. 5, *Manso*, gentle. 6, *Inocente*, harmless. 7, *Temeroso*, fearful. 8, *Rabo*, tail. 9, *Espeso*, bushy. 10, *Superior*, upper. 11, *Guarnecido*, furnished. 12, *Pelo*, hair. 13, *Continuamente*, continually. 14, *De atras*, behind. 15, *Mantener*, to support, (varied as *tenir*, *yo mantengo*, *tú mantienes*, *él mantiene*.) 16, *Yerba*, herb. 17, *Raiz*, root. 18, *Cáscara*, bark. 19, *Tierno*, tender. 20, *Entrar*, to enter. 21, *Reposar*, to rest. 22, *Cueva*, (cave,) burrow. 23 *Durante*, during. 24, *Noche*, night.

---

38. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA OCTAVA.

DIMINUTIVES, ETC.

Never.	*Nunca, no jamas.*
To go out.	*Salir*, (irregular, *á* before the infinitive.)

Yo salgo,	*tú sales,*	*él sale,*	*nosotros salimos,*	*vosotros salis,*	*ellos salen.*
I go out,	thou goest out,	he goes out,	we go out,	you go out,	they go out.

The *hour*. *Every hour.*	La *hora*. *Todas las horas.*
The *morning*. The *night*.	La *mañana*. La *noche*.
Every morning and *every night*.	*Todas las mañanas* y *todas las noches.*
Dost thou go out in the morning?	¿Sales tú por la mañana?
I go out every morning.	Salgo todas las mañanas.
Do you go out at night?	¿Salen VV. de noche?

We go out sometimes at night.	Salimos de noche algunas veces.
A *secret*. *To shut*.	Un *secreto*. *Cerrar*, (irregular.)

Yo cierro,	*tú cierras*,	*él cierra*,	*nosotros cerramos*,	*vosotros cerrais*,	*ellos cierran*.
I shut,	thou shutest,	he shuts,	we shut,	you shut,	they shut.

Dost thou shut the door?	¿ Cierras tú la puerta ?
I shut it; the servant never shuts it when he goes out.	La cierro; el criado nunca la cierra cuando sale.

REMARK 1. When *nunca jamas*, and other negative expressions follow the verb, *no* precedes it. The two negatives strengthen the negation.

He never shuts it.	No la cierra nunca.
Do you shut the windows?	¿ Cierran VV. las ventanas ?
We do not shut them; the servant-boys shut them.	Nosotros no las cerramos; los mozos las cierran.
Is there? are there?	*¿ Hay?*
There is, there are.	*Hay*, (impersonal.)
Is there a bull in the yard?	¿ Hay un toro en el patio ?
No, sir; but there are two in the street.	No, señor; pero hay dos en la calle.
Shut the door. Shut the windows.	Cierre la puerta. Cierre las ventanas.

REMARK 2. Verbs ending in *car*, change *c* into *qu* before *e*. So *V. busca*, you look for, makes the imperative *busque*, look for.

Look for the pen. Look for it.	Busque la pluma. Búsquela.
Look for my gloves. Look for them.	Busque mis guantes. Búsquelos.

REMARK 3. The termination ITO, or ICO, for the masculine, added to substantives and adjectives, and ITA, or ICA, for the feminine form DIMINUTIVES, which convey the idea of beauty and affection.

A *little boy*. A *little girl*.	Un *muchachito*. Una *muchachita*.
My *little brother*. My *little sister*.	Mi *hermanito*. Mi *hermanita*.
My *little cousin*. A *pretty little hat*.	Mi *primito*, mi *primita*. Un *sombrerito*.
A *pretty little house*.	Una *casita*.

REMARK 4. In these examples it is seen that nouns ending in *a*, *e*, or *o*, generally drop these vowels before *ito*, or *ita*, of the diminutive. *C*, *ce*, and *u*, also, are sometimes inserted, for better sound, before these terminations.

This *pretty little comb*.	Este *peinecito*.
A *dear little man*.	Un *hombrecito*.
My *dear little friend*.	Mi *amiguito*, mi *amiguita*.
A *pretty little lion*.	Un *leoncito*.
Is there not a little boy in your room?	¿ No hay un muchachito en su cuarto ?
There are little boys and little girls there.	Hay muchachitos y muchachitas.
There are little calves in that field.	Hay terneritos en aquel campo.
Does your little friend speak to you?	¿ Habla á V. su amiguito ?
He speaks to his little brothers.	Habla á sus hermanitos.

REMARK 5. The same pronoun, and in the same construction, is often the indirect object of the verb when unemphatic, and preceded by a preposition when emphatic.

I write one to him. Le escribo un [illegible]
I write one to him. [illegible]

Do you write your little friend a letter?	¿Escribe V. una carta á su amiguita?
I write one to her.	Le escribo una.
Do you write one to her, or to me?	¿Escribe V. una á ella ó á mí?
I write one to her.	Escribo una á ella.

Has the shoemaker the copper hammer, or the brass one? He has neither the copper one nor the brass one; he has the iron one. Dost thou frequently go out at night? I do not often go out at night. Does your little brother often go out at night? He never goes out at night, but he often goes out in the morning. Do not those little boys go out often? They go out every hour. When do you go out? We go out in the morning, and at (*por la*) night. Do you not go out every hour? We do not go out every hour; but, we go out every morning and every night. Dost thou always shut the door when thou goest out? I always shut it when I go out. Does your little cousin shut the doors and windows when he goes out? He never shuts them. When do you shut the doors and windows? We shut them every night. Who are those little girls? They are my little sisters. Do your little sisters sometimes go out alone? They never go out alone. Are there not some little children (*niñitos*) in that little room? There is only one. There are two little children in the street; are they not your little cousins? No, madam; they are my little brother and my little sister. Does that little man wish to go out? He does not wish to go out. Has he a mind to shut the door? He has a mind to shut it.

Whose candlestick is this? It is my aunt's. Has your little cousin the iron candlestick, or the silver one? He has the silver one. What has your little friend? He has his little hammer. Do you wish for the black ink, or the red? I wish for the black. Does your little cousin wish for the paper? She wishes for it. Do you wish for my ink, inkstand, paper, and pencil? Yes, sir; if you please. Is that American going to Spain? No, sir; he is going to England. Are there many brave men in France? Yes, sir; and there are many in the United States also. Has that little man a store on (*en*) Royal street? No, sir; he has one on Dauphin street. What is the carpenter making? He is making a little house for me. Are you buying something for your little friend? I am buying him

a little hat. Do you give it to him, (*á él*,) or to me? I give it to him. Shut the door. Shut it.

Hay en Africa, á la orilla[1] del mar[2] un lugar[3] que un gran rio[4] atraviesa[5] y baña[6] con sus aguas. Cada[7] año[8] al principio[9] del estio[10] este rio sale de sus márgenes[11] y se esparce[12] por los campos que sus aguas cubren[13] enteramente. Despues[14] de algunos dias de esta vasta[15] inundacion[16] se le ve retirar[17] poco á poco[18] y deja la tierra[19] cubierta[20] de un cieno[21] benéfico que la fertiliza[22] y hace producir[23] abundantes cosechas.[24]

Este notable rio se llama el Nilo,[25] y el país que riega[26] es Egipto,[27] del que se hace referencia[28] en la historia[29] sagrada.[30]

1, *Orilla*, border. 2, *Mar*, sea. 3, *Lugar*, place. 4, *Rio*, river. 5, *Atravesar*, to pass through, (varied like *cerrar*, above, *atravieso*, *atraviesas*, *atraviesa*.) 6, *Bañar*, to bathe. 7, *Cada*, every. 8, *Año*, year. 9, *Principio*, the beginning. 10, *Estio*, summer. 11, *Márgen*, (side,) bank. 12, *Esparcir*, to spread. 13, *Cubrir*, to cover. 14, *Despues*, after. 15, *Vasto*, vast. 16, *Inundacion*, inundation. 17, *Retirar*, to retire. 18, *Poco á poco*, (little by little,) slowly. 19, *Tierra*, earth. 20, *Cubierto*, covered. 21, *Cieno*, mud. 22, *Fertilizar*, to fertilize. 23, *Producir*, to produce. 24, *Cosecha*, crop. 25, *Nilo*, Nile. 26, *Regar*, to water, (varied like *cerrar*.) 27, *Egipto*, Egypt. 28, *Referencia*, reference. 29, *Historia*, history. 30, *Sagrado*, sacred.

---

39. LECCION TRIGÉSIMA NONA.

DIMINUTIVES, IRREGULAR VERBS, ETC.

To say, to tell. — *Decir*, (with *que* before the verb.)

Yo digo,	*tú dices,*	*él dice,*	*nosotros decimos,*	*vosotros decis,*	*ellos dicen.*
I say,	thou sayest,	he says,	we say,	you say,	they say.

Changeable. *To fly, run away.* — *Mudable.* *Huir.*

REMARK 1. Verbs ending in *uir*, change *i* to *y* when not in the syllable with *u*.

Huyo,	*huyes,*	*huye,*	*huimos,*	*huis,*	*huyen.*
I fly,	thou flyest,	he flies,	we fly,	you fly,	they fly

Full. *Empty.* *To come.* — *Lleno.* *Vacío.* Venir (*de* b. inf.)

Our *life.* A *change.* — Nuestra *vida.* Una *mudanza.*

A *pin.* A *fan.* The *evening.* — Un *alfiler.* Un *abanico.* La *tarde.*

Some *wheat.* A *melon.* — Algun *trigo.* Un *melon.*

A *peach.* *Ripe.* — Un *melocoton.* *Maduro.*

To be acquainted with, to know. — *Conocer.*

Conozco,	*conoces,*	*conoce,*	*conocemos,*	*conoceis,*	*conocen.*
I know,	thou knowest,	he knows,	we know,	you know,	they know.

The *fish.* The *fishes.*	El *pez.* Los *peces.* (*See Less.* 10,) p. 24.
The *fisherman.* That *little fish.*	El *pescador.* Ese *pececillo.*
The fisherman has a little fish.	El pescador tiene un pececillo.

RULE. The termination *illo,* added to substantives and adjectives for the masculine, and *illa,* for the feminine, form diminutives which denote pity or contempt. *Uelo,* masculine, and *uela,* feminine, also form diminutives which express contempt.

A *contemptible man.*	Un *hombrezuelo.*
A *contemptible woman.*	Una *mujerzuela.*
A *contemptible king.* A *despicable girl.*	Un *reyezuelo.* Una *niñuela.*
What do you say?	¿Que dice V.?
I say that our life is full of changes.	Digo que nuestra vida está llena de mudanzas.
Thou sayest that this melon is green, and they say that those peaches are ripe.	Tú dices que este melon está verde y ellos dicen que esos melocotones están maduros.
Art thou acquainted with that young lady?	¿Conoces tú á esa señorita?
I am acquainted with her.	Yo la conozco.
Is the cook acquainted with that fisherman?	¿Conoce el cocinero á ese pescador?
Are you acquainted with my little friends?	¿Conocen VV. á mis amiguitos?
What do you mean? or, what do you wish to say?	¿Que quiere V. decir?
I do not wish to say any thing.	No quiero decir nada.
Whom have you a desire to be acquainted with?	¿A quien tiene V. gana de conocer?
I have a desire to be acquainted with your little brother.	Tengo gana de conocer á su hermanito de V.

REMARK 2. *Sinó,* with *no* before the verb, means *but* or *only.*

Have you only one brother?	¿No tiene V. sinó un hermano?
I have only one brother, and my friend has only one sister.	No tengo sinó un hermano, y mi amigo no tiene sinó una hermana.
The *tree.* The *river.* The *fish.*	El *árbol.* El *rio.* El *pescado.*

REMARK 3. *Pez* is applied to the living fish in the water; *pescado* to the fish when caught and regarded as an article of food.

Has that fisherman many fish?	¿Tiene ese pescador muchos pescados?
No, sir; he has only one.	No, señor; no tiene sinó uno.
Are there many fish in that river?	¿Hay muchos peces en aquel rio?
No, sir; there are only a few miserable fish in it.	No, señor; no hay sinó pocos pececillos en él.
Knock at the door.	Toque á la puerta. (*See Les.* 38, *Re.* 2.)
Are you willing *to come* to my house?	¿Quiere V. *venir* á mi casa?

Yo vengo,	*tú vienes,*	*él viene,*	*nosotros venimos,*	*vosotros venís,*	*ellos vienen.*
I come,	thou comest,	he comes,	we come,	you come,	they come.

Dost thou come here often?	¿Vienes tú aquí frecuentemente?
I come here sometimes, and my brothers come very often.	Vengo aquí algunas veces, y mis hermanos vienen muy frecuentemente.
We come here every day; my cousin never comes.	Nosotros venimos aquí todos los dias; mi primo no viene nunca.

Do you say that those fish are good? We say that they are large and good. What do you say? We say that our life is very changeable. Do they say that the sack is full, or empty? They say that it is full of wheat. Do you say that your inkstand is full, or empty? I say that it is empty. Does not Job say that our life has many changes? He says that it is full of changes. Are there many trees in your garden? My garden is full of trees. Do you wish for peaches? No, sir; I thank you. Do you wish for this melon? Yes, sir; if you please. This melon is green, and these peaches are ripe; does your little friend wish for them? She does not wish for them. What does she buy? She buys some pins and a fan. Do those merchants buy much wheat? They buy a store full of it. Have you some large pins? Yes, sir; we have large pins and small ones. Have you two fans? No, sir; I have only one. Is that melon ripe? No, sir; that melon is green, but these peaches are ripe. What does that man buy? He buys some wheat, and his little daughter buys a fan. Will you have some fish? Yes, sir; if you please. How many fish has that fisherman? He has only two. Are there handsome trees in your garden? There are handsome trees in my garden and in my yard. Are you acquainted with that amiable lady? I am acquainted with her. Are you acquainted with general T.? We are acquainted with him. Are you acquainted with many men in the city? I am not acquainted with many. Are

those gentlemen acquainted with your niece? They are acquainted with my niece and my nephew.

Are there many good fish in that river? No, sir; there are only a few (miserable) little fish. Where are those fishermen going? They are going to the river. What do you wish for? I wish for a plate, a knife and a fork, and I wish also a spoon, a tumbler, and some milk. Will you have this plate and this tumbler? Yes, madam; if you please. Dost thou come here in the morning? I come here every morning and every evening. Do you come here often? We come here every day. Do the fishermen come to your house in the morning? No, sir; the baker comes every morning, but the fishermen never come.

Nuestra vida tiene un gran defecto[1] que es el ser mudable y nunca permanecer[2] en un mismo estado.[3] El hombre, dice Job, que nace[4] de la mujer vive pocos dias, está lleno de miserias;[5] sale como una flor,[6] y luego[7] se marchita;[8] huyen sus dias como[9] una sombra,[10] y nunca permanece en un mismo estado. ¿Que cosa pues[11] hay mas mudable? Dicen que el camaleon[12] muda[13] en una hora muchos colores;[14] el mar Euripo[15] tiene[16] muchas mudanzas, y la luna tiene su figura[17] para cada dia. Mas,[18] ¿que es todo esto para[19] las mudanzas del hombre?

1, *Defecto*, defect. 2, *Permanecer*, to remain. 3, *Estado*, state. 4, *Nacer*, to be born. 5, *Miseria*, misery. 6, *Flor*, flower. 7, *Luego*, immediately. 8, *Marchitar*, to wither. 9, *Como*, as. 10, *Sombra*, a shadow. 11, *Pues*, then. 12, *Camaleon*, chameleon. 13. *Mudar*, to change. 14, *Color*, color. 15, *Euripo*, Euripus. 16, *Tiene*, has. 17, *Figura*, figure. 18, *Mas*, but. 19, *Para*, to, in comparison with.

---

40. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA.

AUGMENTATIVES, ETC.

RULE. The terminations, *on, azo, ote,* or *onazo,* for the masculine, and *ona, aza, ota,* or *onaza,* for the feminine, added to substantives or adjectives, form AUGMENTATIVES which add to the primative word the idea of *great, large,* or *stout.*

A *very large melon.*	Un *melonote*, or *melonazo.*
A *big boy.* A *big girl.*	Un *muchachon.* Una *muchachona.*

What a *large woman!*	¡Que *mujerona!*
What a *big man!*	¡Que *hombron*, or *hombronazo!*

REMARK 1. When the primitive word ends with a vowel, that vowel is generally dropped before the termination of augmentative, as well as of the diminutive. Other slight changes are also made when the sound requires it. These will be learnt by practice.

The *painter*. *Beautiful.*	El *pintor*. *Bonito.*
Very much, very many.	*Muchísimo, muchísimos.*
Six. Seven.	*Seis. Siete*
Eight. Nine. Ten.	*Ocho. Nueve. Diez.*
Not more than, only.	*No mas que.*
He has not more than I.	No tiene mas que yo.
To need. A *little knife*	*Necesitar.* Un *cuchillito*
What do you need?	¿Que necesita V.?
I need my money.	Necesito mi dinero.
Do you need much money?	¿Necesitan VV. mucho dinero?
We need very much.	Necesitamos muchísimo.
Is that little boy afraid of you?	¿Tiene ese muchachito miedo de V.?
He is not afraid of me.	No tiene miedo de mí.
Salted. Salt fish.	*Salado.* Pescado salado.
Fresh, cool. Fresh fish.	*Fresco.* Pescado fresco.
Cool breeze. A *copybook.*	*Brisa fresca.* Un *cuaderno.*
A *penknife.* *Old.*	Un *cortaplumas.* *Añejo.*

Añejo is applied only to what changes its quality by age.

The old wine.	El vino *añejo.*
Care. To take care.	*Cuidado. Tener cuidado.*
Does the boy take care of your horse?	¿Tiene el mozo cuidado del caballo de V.?
That man's arm is very long.	Ese hombre tiene el brazo muy largo.

What have you a fancy to buy? I have a fancy to buy a beautiful ribbon and a pipe. Do you need a pipe? No, sir; I need neither a ribbon nor a pipe. What a large melon! do you see it? I see it. What a large man! are you acquainted with him? I am not acquainted with him. What a big boy! is he the brother of that big girl? Yes, sir; and he is the son of that large woman. Has that painter many pictures? No, sir; he has only six. Does the painter sell his pictures? He sells a few sometimes. Do you buy many? I buy only one little picture. What do you need? I need some bottles. Do you need nine bottles or ten? I need neither nine nor ten. Do we need seven or eight? You need only five or six. What do those bakers need? They need some baskets and

some brooms. What do you need? We need a basket full of ripe peaches, and those Frenchmen need some bottles full of old wine. Is the bucket empty? It is not empty; it is full of fresh water. Is not that baker's arm long? (*Less.* 37, *Rem.* 1.) His arm is long and his head is large. Are there many penknives in that store? There are many in it. Are there many knives on that table? There is only one little knife. Dost thou need many copybooks? I need seven copybooks and a penknife. Do you wish for the fresh fish, or the salted? I wish for the fresh fish and the old cheese. Does the painter take care of his pictures? He takes care of them.

What does that shoemaker need? He needs a broom and a bucket. How many copybooks dost thou need? I need eight copybooks and a penknife. Have you not a penknife? Yes, sir; I have a beautiful one. Is there not a beautiful bird on that tree? There are very many. Have you much old wine? I have very much. Has the butcher much salt beef? He has very much. Are not the lion's legs long? No, sir; they are short. Are not his feet large? They are large. Are not that little boy's arms short? They are short. Are not that bird's legs small? Do you need the boiled meat, or the roasted? Dost thou need the boiled and the roasted? Does the carpenter need the boiled? Buy the fruit. Buy it. Do not buy the wine. Do not buy it.

¿Que Proteo[1] muda tantas[2] figuras como[3] el hombre á cada hora? Ya[4] enfermo, ya sano;[5] ya contento[6] ya descontento;[7] ya triste,[8] ya alegre;[9] ya temoroso[10] ya confiado;[11] ya sospechoso,[12] ya seguro;[13] ya pacífico,[14] ya airado;[15] ya quiere, ya no quiere; y muchas veces á si mismo no se entiende.[16] Finalmente[17] tantas son sus mudanzas, cuantos[18] accidentes se levantan[19] á cada hora. Lo pasado[20] le da pena;[21] lo presente[22] le turba,[23] y lo venidero[24] le acongoja.[25] Si no tiene hacienda,[26] vive con trabajo;[27] si la tiene con soberbia,[28] si la pierde[29] con dolor. Pues, ¿que lunas y que mares están sujetos á tantas alteraciones[30] y mudanzas?

1, *Proteo*, Proteus. 2, *Tantas*, so many. 3, *Como*, as. 4, *Ya*, now. 5, *Sano*, well. 6, *Contento*, contented. 7, *Descontento*, discontented. 8, *Triste*, sad. 9, *Alegre*, joyful. 10, *Temeroso*, timid. 11, *Confiado*, confident. 12, *Sospechoso*, suspicious. 13, *Seguro*, secure. 14, *Pacífico*, pacific. 15, *Airado*, angry. 16, *Entender*, to understand, (varied like *cerrar*, *Less.* 33, *yo entiendo*, *tú entiendes*, *él entiende*.) 17, *Finalmente*, finally. 18, *Cuantos*, (as many,) as. 19, *Levantarse*, to arise. 20, *Pasado*, past. 21, *Pena*, pain. 22, *Pre-*

sente, present. 23, *Turbar*, to trouble. 24, *Venidero*, future. 25, *Acongojar*, to afflict. 26, *Hacienda*, property. 27, *Trabajo*, toil. 28, *Soberbia*, pride. 29, *Perder*, to lose, (varied like *cerrar*, *Less.* 33.) 30, *Alteracion*, alteration.

---

41. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA PRIMA.

NUMERALS.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.		ADJETIVOS NUMERALES.	
Cardinal.	Ordinal.	Cardinales.	Ordinales.
One.	*First.*	*Uno, una.*	*Primero, a.*
Two.	*Second.*	*Dos.*	*Segundo, a.*
Three.	*Third.*	*Tres.*	*Tercero, a.*
Four.	*Fourth.*	*Cuatro.*	*Cuarto, a.*
Five.	*Fifth.*	*Cinco.*	*Quinto, a.*
Six.	*Sixth.*	*Seis.*	*Sexto, a.*
Seven.	*Seventh.*	*Siete.*	*Séptimo, a.*
Eight.	*Eighth.*	*Ocho.*	*Octavo, a.*
Nine.	*Ninth.*	*Nueve.*	*Nono, a.*
Ten.	*Tenth.*	*Diez.*	*Décimo, a.*
Eleven.	*Eleventh.*	*Once.*	*Undécimo, a.*
Twelve.	*Twelfth.*	*Doce.*	*Duodécimo, a.*
Thirteen.	*Thirteenth.*	*Trece.*	*Décimo, a, tercio, a.*
Fourteen.	*Fourteenth.*	*Catorce.*	*Décimo, a, cuarto, a.*
Fifteen.	*Fifteenth.*	*Quince.*	*Décimo, a, quinto, a.*
Sixteen.	*Sixteenth.*	*Diez y seis.*	*Décimo sexto.**
Seventeen.	*Seventeenth.*	*Diez y siete.*	*Décimo séptimo.*
Eighteen.	*Eighteenth.*	*Diez y ocho.*	*Décimo octavo.*
Nineteen.	*Nineteenth.*	*Diez y nueve.*	*Décimo nono.*
Twenty.	*Twentieth.*	*Veinte.*	*Vigésimo.*
Twenty-one.	*Twenty-first.*	*Veinte y uno.*†	*Vigésimo primo.*
Twenty-two.	*Twenty-second.*	*Veinte y dos.*	*Vigésimo segundo.*
Thirty.	*Thirtieth.*	*Treinta.*	*Trigésimo.*
Forty.	*Fortieth.*	*Cuarenta.*	*Cuadragésimo.*
Fifty.	*Fiftieth.*	*Cincuenta.*	*Quincuagésimo.*
Sixty.	*Sixtieth.*	*Sesenta.*	*Sexagésimo.*
Seventy.	*Seventieth.*	*Setenta.*	*Septuagésimo.*
Eighty.	*Eightieth.*	*Ochenta.*	*Octagésimo.*
Ninety.	*Ninetieth.*	*Noventa.*	*Nonagésimo.*
A hundred.	*Hundredth.*	*Ciento,*‡	*Centésimo.*
Two hundred.	*Two hundredth.*	*Doscientos, as.*	*Ducentésimo, a.*
Three hundred.	*Three hundredth.*	*Trescientos, as.*	*Trecentésimo, a.*
Four hundred.	*Four hundredth.*	*Cuatrocientos.*	*Cuadragentésimo.*
Five hundred.	*Five hundredth.*	*Quinientos.*	*Quingentésimo.*
Six hundred.	*Six hundredth.*	*Seiscientos.*	*Sexcentésimo.*
Seven hundred.	*Seven hundredth.*	*Setecientos.*	*Septengentésimo.*
Eight hundred.	*Eight hundredth.*	*Ochocientos.*	*Octogentésimo.*
Nine hundred.	*Nine hundredth.*	*Novecientos.*	*Nonagentésimo.*
A thousand.	*Thousandth.*	*Mil.*	*Milésimo.*
Eleven hundred.	*Eleven hundredth.*	*Mil y ciento.*	*Milésimo centésimo.*
Twelve hundred.		*Mil y doscientos.*	
Two thousand.		*Dos mil.*	
A hundred thousand.		*Cien mil.*	
Two hundred thousand.		*Doscientos mil.*	
A million.	*Millionth.*	*Millon.*	*Milionésimo.*

* The ordinal numbers are varied to agree in gender with their nouns.

† *Veinte y uno*, &c., is written also thus: veintiuno, veintidos, &c.

‡ This word when singular loses its final syllable before a substantive, as *cien hombres*, a hundred men, *cien mujeres*, a hundred women.

Twice two are four.	Dos veces dos son cuatro.
Twice two make four.	Dos veces dos hacen cuatro.
How many are three times four?	¿Cuanto son tres veces cuatro?
How many do three times four make?	¿Cuanto hacen tres veces cuatro?
Three times four are (make) twelve.	Tres veces cuatro son (hacen) doce.
How many are five times six?	¿Cuanto son (hacen) cinco veces seis?
Five times six are thirty.	Cinco veces seis (hacen) son treinta.
How many are seven and eight?	¿Cuanto son siete y ocho?
Seven and eight are (make) fifteen.	Siete y ocho son (hacen) quince.
Nine and eleven are twenty.	Nueve y once son veinte.

How many are four times five? Four times five are twenty. How many are five times six? Five times six are thirty. How many are six times seven? Six times seven are forty-two. How many are seven times eight? Seven times eight are fifty-six. How many are seven times nine? Seven times nine are sixty-three. How many are eight times eleven? Eight times eleven are eighty-eight. How many are eight times twelve? Eight times twelve are ninety-six. How many are nine times twelve? Nine times twelve are a hundred and eight. How many are twelve times twelve? Twelve times twelve are a hundred and forty-four. How many are two and two? Two and two are four. How many are three and four? Three and four are seven. How many are four and five? Four and five are nine. How many are five and six? Five and six are eleven. How many are six and seven? Six and seven are thirteen. How many are seven and seven? Seven and seven are fourteen. How many are seven and eight? Seven and eight are fifteen. How many are eight and eight? Eight and eight are sixteen. How many are eight and nine? Eight and nine are seventeen. How many are nine and nine? Nine and nine are eighteen.

Are we not mortal? We are mortal, for all men are so, (*lo son.*) Are you acquainted with that tall man? I am acquainted with him. Is he not very amiable? He is very amiable, and very ugly. Have you a desire to be tall? I do not wish to be tall; I wish to be amiable. Do you wish for warm bread? I wish for warm bread and warm coffee. Is not that sick man insane? He is insane. Are there not many insane persons in the United States? There are very many in the United States. Is not that ugly lady rich? She is rich

and amiable. Are the servant-boys here? The one is here, and the other is coming hither. Is the poor man here? He is not here, but he is coming hither. Is that poor man often sick? He is often sick, and his son and his daughter are often sick also. Is your dog there under the tree? No, sir; he is not there under the tree; he is there (yonder) with my nephew in the yard. Where are my cap and cane? Your cap is there on the chair, and your cane is there (yonder) under the table.

Todas las demas[1] criaturas[2] componen[3] al hombre tributándole[4] perfecciones.[5] El cielo[6] le da el alma,[7] la tierra el cuerpo,[8] el fuego[9] el calor, el agua los humores,[10] el aire[11] la respiracion,[12] las estrellas[13] los ojos, el sol[14] la cara,[15] la fortuna[16] haberes,[17] la fama[18] honores,[19] el tiempo[20] edades,[21] el mundo casa, los amigos compañia,[22] los padres la naturaleza, y los maestros[23] la sabiduría.[24].

Hay cuatro cosas muy difíciles,[25] la primera es conocerse á sí mismo; la segunda callar[26] un secreto; la tercera perdonar[27] las injurias,[28] y la cuarta, emplear[29] bien el tiempo.

1, *Demas*, other. 2, *Criatura*, creature. 3, *Componer*, to compose. 4, *Tributando*, contributing. 5, *Perfeccion*, perfection. 6, *Cielo*, heaven. 7, *Alma*, soul. 8, *Cuerpo*, body. 9, *Fuego*, fire. 10, *Humor*, humor. 11, *Aire*, air. 12, *Respiracion*, breath. 13, *Estrella*, star. 14, *Sol*, sun. 15, *Cara*, face. 16, *Fortuna*, fortune. 17, *Haber*, possessions. 18, *Fama*, fame. 19, *Honor*, honor. 20, *Tiempo*, time. 21, *Edad*, age. 22, *Compañia*, society. 23, *Maestro*, master. 24, *Sabiduría*, wisdom. 25, *Dificil*, difficult. 26, *Callar*, to conceal. 27, *Perdonar*, to pardon. 28, *Injuria*, injury. 29, *Emplear*, to employ.

---

42. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA SEGUNDA.

FUTURE OF IR AND TENER.

Monday. Tuesday.
Wednesday. Thursday.
Friday. Saturday.
Sunday. To-day.
To-morrow. The *morning.*
To-morrow morning.

The *evening*, *afternoon.*

Lúnes. Mártes.
Miércoles. Juéves.
Viérnes. Sábado.
Domingo. Hoy.
Mañana. La *mañana.*
Mañana por la mañana.
La *tarde*, (before dark,) la *noche*, (after dark.)

What day is it to-day?	¿ Que dia es hoy ?
It is Monday.	Es lúnes.

FUTURE TENSE OF IR, TO GO.

Yo iré,	*tú irás,*	*él irá,*	*nosotros iremos,*	*vosotros ireis,*	*ellos irán.*
I shall go,	thou wilt go,	he will go,	we shall go,	you will go,	they will go.

When will you go home?	¿ Cuando irá V. á casa ?
I will go home on Sunday.	Iré á casa el domingo.

REMARK 1. In designating time, the days of the week take the article.

He will go to the country on Monday.	Irá al campo el lúnes.
We will go to our neighbor's on Tuesday.	Iremos á casa de nuestro vecino el mártes.
The *school.* *To school.*	La *escuela.* *A la escuela.*
The children will go to school on Wednesday.	Los niños irán á la escuela el miércoles.

FUTURE TENSE OF TENER, TO HAVE.

Yo tendré,	*tú tendrás,*	*él tendrá,*	*nosotros tendremos,*
I shall have,	thou wilt have,	he will have,	we shall have,
	vosotros tendreis,	*ellos tendrán.*	
	you will have,	they will have.	

When wilt thou have thy money?	¿ Cuando tendrás tu dinero ?
I shall have it on Friday.	Le tendré el viérnes.
Will the Spaniard have his on Thursday?	¿ Tendrá el Español el suyo el juéves ?
When will the boys have their caps?	¿ Cuando tendrán los muchachos sus gorros ?
They will have them to-morrow.	Los tendrán mañana.
When will you have your books?	¿ Cuando tendrán VV. sus libros ?
We shall have the one this evening, and the other to-morrow morning.	Tendremos el uno esta tarde y el otro mañana por la mañana.

REMARK 2. When pronouns of different persons are the subject of the verb, it is of the first person rather than the second, and of the second rather than the third. ¶ 3.10.

You and I are friends.	V. y yo somos amigos.

REMARK 3. Adjectives and pronouns referring to nouns of different genders, must be plural and masculine.

Thou and thy sister are rich.	Tú y tu hermana sois ricos.
My mother and I are not rich.	Mi madre y yo no somos ricos.
A *shilling.* A *dollar.*	Un *real.* Un *peso.*
A *volume.*	Un *tomo.*
The *last* volume.	El *último* tomo.
Eight shillings make a dollar.	Ocho reales hacen un peso.
As much, as many.	*Tanto, tantos.*
As much as, as many as.	*Tanto como, tantos como.*
Have you as much butter as cheese?	¿ Tiene V. tanta manteca como queso ?

I have not as much butter as cheese.	No tengo tanta manteca como queso.
Has that old man as many sons as daughters?	¿Tiene ese viejo tantos hijos como hijas?
He has as many sons as daughters.	Tiene tantos hijos como hijas.
Less, fewer.	*Ménos.*
Less than.	*Ménos que.*
More than.	*Mas que.*
He eats more soup than bread.	Come mas sopa que pan.
They drink more wine than water.	Beben mas vino que agua.
Do they drink less than we?	¿Beben ellos ménos que nosotros?
They drink more than we, but they eat less.	Beben mas que nosotros, pero comen ménos.
The Englishman eats less soup than the Frenchman.	El Inglés come ménos sopa que el Frances.

What day is it? It is Saturday. When will you go to the store? I will go there this evening. Will you and the boy go to the same store? Yes, madam; we shall go to the same. Do you buy some caps for the boys? Yes, sir; I buy some caps and some leather shoes for them. Do you wish to buy some soap? I wish to buy some soap and some charcoal. Do you wish for the mutton? Yes, sir; if you please. Are you acquainted with that old man? Yes, sir; I am acquainted with him. Where will you go to-morrow? I shall go to the store to-morrow morning. Where will you go on Tuesday? I shall go to the American's on Tuesday, and to the Italian's on Wednesday. Will you go to the Scotchman's on Thursday? No, sir; we shall go there on Friday. Will the children go to school on Saturday? No, sir; but they will go on Sunday. How many shillings make a dollar? Eight shillings make a dollar. When will you have your money? I shall have it this afternoon or to-morrow morning. When wilt thou have thy new book? I shall have it Monday or Tuesday. Will the cook have as many hens as chickens? No, sir; he will have more chickens than hens. How many combs shall we have? We shall have three combs and two whips. What do the Americans buy? They buy watches and rings. Do they buy more watches than rings? No, madam; they buy more rings than watches.

Will they have fewer whips than we? They will have fewer whips

and fewer combs than we. When will the cook have her hens and chickens? She will have them on Wednesday or Thursday. Wilt thou go to school on Saturday? No, sir; I shall not go there on Saturday, but on Friday. Where will you go to-day? We will go to the German's this morning, and we will go to the Scotchman's in the afternoon. Has the German much money in his purse? No, sir; he has only one dollar and three shillings in it. Has the Scotchman more dollars than the American? Yes, sir; he has more dollars and more shillings than the American. Have you a pretty purse? I have a pretty purse full of gold rings. Have you a volume of my books? I have the last. Have you not the first volume and the last? No, sir; I have only the last. What volumes do you wish for? I wish for the first, the second, the third, and the last. Give me the bread. Give it to the boy. Give him the butter and the cheese. Give them to us.

El crocodilo[1] es un grande animal que vive unas veces[2] en el Nilo, y otras veces en tierra. Tiene la forma[3] del lagarto[4] de nuestros jardines, pero es bien diferente[5] de este animalito[6] que es sencillo[7] y sin malicia.[8] El crocodilo al contrario[9] es tan astuto[10] como feroz.[11] Dicen que cuando quiere atraer[12] cerca de sí algun viajero[13] para devorarle,[14] se oculta[15] en los juncos[16] del rio é imita[17] los gritos[18] de un niño que llora.[19] Si un hombre es tan imprudente[20] que se acerque,[21] el monstruo[22] se arroja[23] sobre él repentinamente[24] con violencia[25] y devora su presa[26] en un instante.[27] Por fortuna[28] este animal, tan malo como es, no puede defenderse contra[29] el icneumon[30] especie[31] de rata[32] de Egipto que es su mas mortal enemigo,[33] y que se come los huevos del crocodilo ó sus hijos tan pronto como salen de los huevos.

1, *Crocodilo*, crocodile. 2, *Unas veces*, sometimes. 3, *Forma*, form. 4, *Lagarto*, lizard. 5, *Diferente*, different. 6, *Animalito*, little animal. 7, *Sencillo*, simple. 8, *Malicia*, malice. 9, *Al contrario*, on the contrary. 10, *Astuto*, cunning. 11, *Feroz*, fierce. 12, *Atraer*, to attract. 13, *Viajero*, traveler. 14, *Devorar*, to devour. 15, *Ocultar*, to hide. 16, *Junco*, rush. 17, *Imitar*, to imitate. 18, *Grito*, cry. 10, *Llorar*, to weep. 20, *Imprudente*, imprudent. 21, *Acercarse*, to approach. 22, *Monstruo*, monster. 23, *Arrojarse*, to dart. 24, *Repentinamente*, suddenly. 25, *Violencia*, violence. 26, *Presa*, prey. 27, *Instante*, instant. 28, *Por fortuna*, fortunately. 29, *Contra*, against. 30, *Icneumon*, ichneumon. 31, *Especie*, species. 32, *Rata*, rat. 33, *Enemigo*, enemy.

43. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA TERCERA.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

RULE. The comparative degree, in Spanish adjectives, is formed by putting *mas*, or *ménos*, before the positive, and the superlative by putting the definite article before the comparative.

Hard, harder, hardest.	*Duro, mas duro, el mas duro.*
Rich, less rich, least rich.	*Rico, ménos rico, el ménos rico.*
Bright, brighter, brightest.	*Brilliante, mas brilliante, el mas bri-* [*llianto.*
Learned, less learned, least learned.	*Docto, ménos docto, el ménos docto.*
Prudent. A *stone.*	*Prudente.* Una *piedra.*
Is the peach sweeter than the melon?	¿ Es el melocoton mas dulce que el melon?
The melon is sweeter than the peach.	El melon es mas dulce que el melocoton.
Is not my cousin less prudent than I?	¿ No es mi primo ménos prudente que yo?
He is less prudent than you.	Es ménos prudente que V.
Bricks are hard, stones are harder, and iron is the hardest.	Los ladrillos son duros, las piedras son mas duras, y el hierro es el mas duro.
Is this vinegar sourer than that?	¿ Es este vinagre mas agrio que ese?
It is less sour than this.	Es ménos agrio que este.
The *cake.* An *enemy.*	El *bollo.* Un *enemigo.*
To labor, to work. A *barrel.*	*Trabajar.* Un *barril.*
Of cork. Of wood.	*De corcho. De palo, de madera.*
A *laborer.* A *husbandman.*	Un *obrero.* Un *labrador.*
To read. Tired, weary.	*Leer. Cansado.*
Time, weather.	*Tiempo,* (*de* before an infinitive.)
Have you time to read?	¿ Tiene V. tiempo de leer?
I have not much time to read.	No tengo mucho tiempo de leer.
What books do you read?	¿ Que libros leen VV.?
We read Spanish books.	Leemos libros españoles.
The workman has a mind to labor.	El obrero tiene gana de trabajar.
Your trunk is of wood.	El baul de V. es de palo.
My inkstand is of cork.	Mi tintero es de corcho.
That husbandman labors much.	Ese labrador trabaja mucho.
Do those workmen labor much?	¿ Trabajan esos obreros mucho?
They labor very much.	Trabajan muchísimo.
Is not that sailor tired?	¿ No está aquel marinero cansado?
He is very tired.	Está muy cansado.
Flour. So, as.	*Harina. Tan,* (before adjec. and adv.)

The *cat*. An *apple*.	El *gato*. Una *manzana*.
This flour is as good as that.	Esta harina es tan buena como esa.
This cat is as large as that.	Este gato es tan grande como ese.
This apple is sweeter than that.	Esta manzana es mas dulce que esa.
Is the stone as hard as the brick?	¿Es la piedra tan dura como el ladrillo?
It is harder than the brick.	Es mas dura que el ladrillo.

REMARK. *Than* before a numeral is translated into Spanish by *de*.

Does the merchant sell more than six carpets?	¿Vende el comerciante mas de seis tapices?
He sells more than ten.	Vende mas de diez.
Do you buy more than twelve chairs?	¿Compran VV. mas de doce sillas?
We buy more than twenty.	Compramos mas de veinte.
Does the baker make less than twenty cakes?	¿Hace el panadero ménos de veinte bollos?
He does not make less than thirty.	No hace ménos de treinta.
Come. Come here.	*Venga*, (imper. of *venir*.) Venga aquí.

Is the husbandman as prudent as the painter? The husbandman is more prudent than the painter. Does that laborer work much? He works sometimes, but he works less than the husbandman. Has the prudent man many enemies? No, sir; he has no enemies. Where is the key of that door? It is on the chair. What do you wish to buy? I wish to buy a dress, a watch key, and some gloves. Is not your carpet prettier than mine? My carpet is prettier than yours, but your chairs are handsomer than mine. Has the painter fewer enemies than you? He has fewer enemies than I, but I have more friends than he. What do they sell in that store? They sell clothes, carpets, gloves, and candles. Do they sell many candles? They sell very many. Where is the key of your trunk? I have it here. Does the sailor drink much water? He drinks more wine than water. Is there vinegar in that barrel? Yes, sir; this barrel is full of vinegar. Is this apple sourer than that? No, sir; it is not so sour as this.

Iron is harder than gold, do you know that? I know it. Do not all great men labor much? They labor much. Do we labor less than you? You labor more than we. How many cakes does the baker give to your little friends? He does not give them more than six. Is that inkstand of wood, or of stone? It is neither of wood

nor of stone, it is of cork. Is not that table low? The table is low, but the chair is more so, (*lo es mas.*) Is not that apple sweet? Yes, miss; this apple is sweet, but that one is sweeter, and this melon is the sweetest of all. Dost thou often read? I read sometimes. Does the American read French books? The American reads French books, and the Frenchman reads English books.

Is not that chair low? Is not this one lower? Is not that one which is in your room the lowest? Is not the cake which the cook makes sweeter than that which the baker makes? Does the laborer wish to work? Does he work much? Does he wish to read? Has he time to read? Does he read more than you? Do you not read more than he? Do we read more than you? Art thou reading the last volume? Come here, my little friend. Read the lesson. Read it. Read it to us.

¿Que dia es hóy Carlos?[1] Hoy es domingo. ¿Y mañana? Mañana será[2] lúnes. Pasado mañana[3] será mártes. ¿Y despues del mártes? Miércoles. ¿Y despues del miércoles? Juéves. ¿Y despues del juéves? Viérnes. ¿Y despues del viérnes? Sábado. ¿Y despues del sábado? Vuelve[4] el dómingo. ¿Cuantos dias son estos? No tenemos mas que contarlos.[5] Domingo uno. Lúnes dos. Mártes, tres. Miércoles, cuatro. Juéves, cinco. Viérnes, seis. Sábado siete. Esto hace siete dias. Siete dias hacen una semana.[6] Cuatro semanas enteras[7] y dos ó tres dias de otra semana hacen un mes.[8] Doce meses hacen un año.[9]

El gato salvaje[10] es mas fuerte, y mas grande que el gato doméstico,[11] tiene los labios negros, la cola[12] mas grande y los colores permanentes.[13] En este clima[14] no se conoce sino una especie de gato salvaje ó gato montes.[15]

1, *Carlos*, Charles. 2, *Será*, will be. 3, *Pasado mañana*, the day after tomorrow. 4, *Volver*, to return, (varied as *mover*, *Less.* 37.) 5, *Contar*, to count. 6, *Semana*, week. 7, *Entero*, entire. 8, *Mes*, month. 9, *Año*, year. 10, *Salvaje*, wild. 11, *Doméstico*, domestic. 12, *Cola*, tail. 13, *Permanente*, permanent. 14, *Clima*, climate. 15, *Gato montes*, catamount.

---

44. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA CUARTA.

IRREGULAR COMPARATIVES.

REMARK 1. Besides prefixing *mas* and *ménos* for comparatives, as seen in the last lesson, a few adjectives in Spanish admit of a different form. Thus:—

Alto, high,	*superior*, or mas alto,	higher,	*supremo*, or el mas alto,	highest.

Bajo, low,	*inferior*, or mas bajo,	lower,	*ínfimo*, or el mas bajo,	lowest.
Bueno, good,	*mejor*, or mas bueno,	better,	*óptimo*, or el mas bueno,	best.
Grande, great,	*mayor*, or mas grande,	greater,	*máximo*, or el mas grande,	greatest.
Malo, bad,	*peor*, or mas malo,	worse,	*pésimo*, or el mas malo,	worst.
Pequeño, little,	*menor*, or mas pequeño,	less,	*mínimo*, or el mas pequeño,	least.

REMARK 2. These adjectives have superlatives, also, formed by prefixing the definite article to the irregular comparative; as, *el superior*, the highest; *el inferior*, the lowest; *el mejor*, the best; *el mayor*, the greatest; *el peor*, the worst, etc.

This wine is superior to that.	Este vino es superior á ese.
Mine is the best.	El mio es óptimo.
My flour is inferior to yours.	Mi harina es inferior á la de V.
Mine is the worst.	La mia es ínfima.
This book is better than that, but yours is the best.	Este libro es mejor que aquel pero el de V. es óptimo.
The lion is larger than the tiger.	El leon es mayor que el tigre.
The elephant is the largest.	El elefante es máximo.
This butter is worse than that.	Esta manteca es peor que esa.
The cook's is the worst.	La del cocinero es pésima.
This table is smaller than that.	Esta mesa es menor que esa.
That is the smallest.	Aquella es mínima.
Read them the lesson.	Léales la leccion.
Read it to them.	Léasela.

REMARK 3. A very high degree of a quality, also, is expressed in Spanish, by making the adjective end in *ísimo*. The superlative thus ending, is stronger than that with *muy*.

Easy. Difficult.	*Fácil. Difícil.*
Most easy, very easy.	*Facilísimo, muy fácil.*
Most difficult, very difficult.	*Dificilísimo, muy difícil.*

REMARK 4. If the adjective end in a vowel, it is dropped in adding the termination; and if the final vowel be preceded by *c*, *g*, *gu*, or *bl*, these are changed as follows: *Co* becomes *qu*; *go*, *gu*: *guo*, *gü*, and *ble*, *bil*, as,

High, *most high, very high.*	Alto, *altísimo.*
Rich, *most rich, very rich.*	Rico, *riquísimo.*
Ancient, most ancient.	*Antiguo, antigüísimo.*
Amiable, *most amiable.*	Amable, *amabilísimo.*

Z final also is changed to *c*.

Happy, most happy.	*Feliz, felicísimo.*
Your lesson is very easy, but mine is very difficult.	La leccion de V. es facilísima, pero la mia es dificilísima.

That lady is very amiable.	Aquella señora es amabilísima.
The *ear*.	La *oreja*.
Your ears are very small.	V. tiene las orejas muy pequeñas.

Is not this wine superior to your cousin's? It is superior to his, but that of my nephew is the best. Is your flour inferior to mine? Mine is inferior to yours, but that of the merchant is the worst. Is the sugar of Havana better than that of Mexico? Yes, sir; the sugar of Havana is better than that of Mexico, but that of New Orleans is the best. Is not the dog larger than the cat? The dog is larger than the cat, but the lion is the largest. This bread is worse than the baker's, but the cook's is the worst. Is your apple less than that which is on the table? Yes, sir; this apple is less than that; but that which the little boy has is the smallest. Are these candles better than those? They are not so good as these. Is this flour good? This flour is good, but that which is in that barrel is better. Is your lesson more difficult than mine? Yes; your lesson is very easy, but mine is very difficult.

Is not that lady rich? She is not rich, but she is very amiable. Is not that man's hand large? It is very large. Is not my foot smaller than your brother's? It is smaller than his. Are not the shoemaker's arms long? They are very long. Is the lesson for (*de*) to-day difficult? It is very difficult. Does your little friend read much? He reads very much. Does he read many French books? He reads very many. I receive more letters than I write; do those strangers receive more than they write? They receive more. Are there many valiant men in your country? There are many. Are there many valiant men and many beautiful women in the United States? There are very many. Your friend is good; is he not happy? He is very happy. Has he many enemies? No, sir; he has very many friends, but he has no enemy. That man's ears are small, and his eyes blue; are you acquainted with him? I am acquainted with him.

La gacela es un bonito cuadrúpedo[1] de piés hendidos[2] y de un talle[3] fino,[4] que se encuentra[5] comunmente[6] en Africa, Asia y en las Indias orientales. La gacela de Indias es del tamaño[7] de la cabra[8] doméstica. Este animal es precioso[9] por el musco[10] del que se hace[11] gran venta[12] en comercio.[13]

En los campos mas calientes de Asia es donde se encuentra el rinoceronte.[14] Este animal tiene al ménos[15] doce piés de largo y seis ó siete de alto. Tiene sobre la nariz[16] un cuerno[17] muy duro de dos á tres piés, que le sirve de defensa.[18] La piel[19] es como una cota[20] impenetrable á las garras[21] de los animales y al hierro del cazador.[22] Su color es negruzco.[23] Sin ser feroz[24] ni carnívoro[25] es intratable,[26] rudo,[27] sin inteligencia,[28] y sin docilidad.[29] Se alimenta[30] con yerba.

1, *Cuadrúpedo*, quadruped. 2, *Hendido*, cloven. 3, *Talle*, form. 4, *Fino*, fine. 5, *Se encuentra*, is found. 6, *Comunmente*, commonly. 7, *Tamaño*, size. 8, *Cabra*, goat. 9, *Precioso*, valuable. 10, *Musco*, musk. 11, *Se hace*, is made. 12, *Venta*, sale. 13, *Comercio*, commerce. 14, *Rinoceronte*, rhinoceros. 15, *Al ménos*, at least. 16, *Nariz*, nose. 17, *Cuerno*, horn. 18, *Defensa*, defense. 19, *Piel*, skin. 20, *Cota*, coat of mail. 21, *Garra*, claw. 22, *Cazador*, hunter. 23, *Negruzco*, blackish. 24, *Feroz*, ferocious. 25, *Carnívoro*, carnivorous. 26, *Intratable*, intractable. 27, *Rudo*, rough. 28, *Inteligencia*, intelligence. 29, *Docilidad*, docility. 30, *Alimentar*, to nourish.

---

45. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA QUINTA.

FUTURE TERMINATIONS.

FUTURE TENSE OF SER.

Yo seré,	*tú serás,*	*él será,*	*nosotros seremos,*	*vosotros sereis,*	*ellos serán.*
I shall be,	thou wilt be,	he will be,	we shall be,	you will be,	they will be.

FUTURE TENSE OF ESTAR.

Yo estaré,	*tú estarás,*	*él estará,*	*nosotros estaremos,*	*vosotros estareis,*	*ellos estarán.*
I shall be,	thou wilt be,	he will be,	we shall be,	you will be,	they will be.

REMARK 1. The persons of these two futures, as also those of *ir* and *tener*, *Less.* 42, we observe, all terminate in the following letters:

E, AS, A, EMOS, EIS, AN,

So terminate all futures without exception. So *comprar*, to buy.

Yo compraré,	*tú comprarás,*	*él comprará,*	*nosotros compraremos,*
I shall buy,	thou wilt buy,	he will buy,	we shall buy,
	vosotros compareis,		*ellos comprarán.*
	you will buy,		they will buy.

A *stock*, (for the neck.) *Glass.*	Un *corbatin*. *Vidrio.*
My glass candlestick. The *finger.*	Mi candelero de vidrio. El *dedo.*
An *island*. The *capital.*	Una *isla*. La *capital.*
London. Dublin.	*Londres. Dublin.*
Edinburgh. Copenhagen.	*Edimburgo. Copenhague.*
Ireland. Scotland.	*Irlanda. Escocia.*

Denmark. Sweden.	*Dinamarca. Suecia.*
A *week.*	Una *semana.*
London is the capital of England.	Londres es la capital de Inglaterra.
Dublin is the capital of Ireland.	Dublin es la capital de Irlanda.
Ireland is an island. England and Scotland form an island also.	La Irlanda es una isla. La Inglaterra y la Escocia hacen una isla tambien.

Remark 2. In the above examples it is seen, according to *Rem.* 2, *Less.* 32, that the names of countries not preceded by a preposition take the article, but when preceded by a preposition omit it.

When wilt thou be at my house?	¿Cuando estarás en mi casa?
I shall be there on Sunday.	Estaré allí el domingo.
My brother will be at the captain's.	Mi hermano estará en casa del capitan.
Where will you be?	¿Donde estarán VV.?
We shall be at the general's.	Estaremos en casa del general.
Wilt thou not be rich?	¿No serás rico?
I shall not be rich.	No seré rico.
That lesson will be most easy.	Esa leccion será facilísima.
Will you not be friends?	¿No serán VV. amigos?
We shall be friends.	Seremos amigos.
Will you buy me that stock?	¿Me comprarás ese corbatin?
I will buy it for thee.	Te le compraré.
You will buy it for me.	V. me le comprará.
Will you buy it for us?	¿Nos le comprarán VV.?
We will buy it for you.	Se le compraremos á VV.
I will buy it for him.	Se le compraré.
Will you buy them the glasses?	¿Les comprarán VV. los vidrios?
We will buy them for them.	Se los compraremos.

Remark 3. Besides the regular objective pronouns given, *Less.* 33, the Spanish allow, also, particularly where emphasis or especial distinctness is required, another pronoun referring to the same antecedent, which may be called the *double objective pronoun*, thus:

I do not seek my brother, he seeks me.	No busco á mi hermano, él me busca á mí.
I am not calling him, I am calling thee.	No le llamo á él, té llamo á tí.
I do not give the book to thee, I give it to him.	No te doy el libro á tí, se le doy á él.
He does not call you, but he calls us.	El no le llama á V., pero nos llama á nosotros.
He does not see me, but he sees you.	El no me ve á mí, pero os ve á vosotros.
They do not touch us, but we touch them.	Ellos no nos tocan á nosotros, pero nosotros les tocamos á ellos.
You do not seek us, but we seek you.	VV. no nos buscan á nosotros, pero nosotros les buscamos á VV.

Will the lesson for to-morrow be easy? The lesson for to-morrow will be very easy, but the lesson for to-day will be very difficult. Wilt thou not be rich if thou hast thy money? I shall be rich. Will you not be rich? We shall not be rich. Will not those merchants be happy? They will be happy. Will our lesson on Monday be very difficult? It will be difficult, but not very. Is not London an ancient city? It is a very ancient city. Are not England and Scotland an island? They are an island, and Ireland is one (*lo es*) also. How many days make a week? Seven days make a week. What are the days of the week? Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, and Saturday. Where will you be on Sunday? I shall be at home on Sunday and on Monday, and on Tuesday also. Will you be at general T's on Wednesday? We shall be at general T's on Wednesday, and at Mrs. B's on Thursday. Will your nephews be at school on Friday? They will be at school on Friday, and on Saturday also. Wilt thou often be in the city? I shall be there often. Wilt thou buy me that pretty little book? I will buy it for thee. Will you buy your little friend that stock? I will buy it for him. Will you not buy it for me? We shall not buy it for you.

Will you buy your little friend the glasses? We shall not buy them for him. Will you not buy them for the carpenters? We shall not buy them for them; we shall buy them for thee. Do you not give me a book? I do not give thee any, but my uncle gives me many. Are not that man's fingers long? Yes, sir; his fingers are very long, and his ears are very small. Are his ears smaller than mine? They are smaller than yours; and your fingers are longer than his. Is not Copenhagen the capital of Denmark? Yes, madam. Is not Edinburgh the capital of Scotland? Edinburgh is the capital of Scotland; it is a large city, but not so large as London. Does your friend live in France, or in Spain? He lives neither in France nor in Spain; he lives in America. I live in America; do you live there also? Yes, sir; I live in the United States. Do you write letters frequently? I write them very frequently. Will you go to Sweden alone? Are not lions strong? Are they not very strong? Will you go to the store without money? Will those boys go without hats? Do you go there every day?

Londres es la ciudad principal[1] ó la capital de Inglaterra. Edimburgo es la capital de Escocia, y Dublin es la capital de Irlanda. Estos tres reinos[2] pertenecen[3] á un mismo príncipe[4] que se llama rey de Inglaterra. Al este[5] de Inglaterra está Dinamarca, cuya capital es Copenhague en la isla de Zelanda.[6] La Noruega[7] que está al norte[8] de Dinamarca, pertenece tambien al rey de Dinamarca. Su ciudad capital, es Cristiana.[9] Al este de Noruega está la Suecia, al rededor[10] del golfo[11] de Bothnia en el mar Báltico.[12] La capital de Suecia es Estocolmo.[13] En fin,[14] al este de Suecia está la Rusia ó Moscovia que es un pais muy grande. Su capital es Moscow. Pero hoy Petersburgo[15] es la ciudad mas bella y la residencia[16] del emperador[17] y de la corte[18] de Rusia.

1, *Principal*, principal. 2, *Reino*, kingdom. 3, *Pertenecer*, to belong to. 4, *Príncipe*, prince. 5, *Este*, east. 6, *Zelanda*, Zealand. 7, *Noruega*, Norway. 8, *Norte*, north. 9, *Cristiana*, Christiana. 10, *Al rededor*, around. 11, *Golfo*, gulf. 12, *Báltico*, Baltic. 13, *Estocolmo*, Stockholm. 14, *En fin*, finally. 15, *Petersburgo*, Petersburg. 16, *Residencia*, residence. 17, *Emperador*, emperor. 18, *Corte*, court.

---

46. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA SEXTA.

VERBS, NOUNS, ETC.

To put, to place. I put.	***Poner. Pongo.***

The present tense of *poner* is regular, except the first person *pongo*.

A ***master***. The ***bench***.	Un ***amo***. El ***banco***.
Where do you put your fan?	¿ Donde pone V. su abanico ?
I put it on the bench.	Le pongo sobre el banco.
Do you put your hats on the table?	¿ Ponen VV. sus sombreros sobre la mesa ?
We put them there.	Les ponemos allí.

REMARK 1. The following superlatives are also irregular.

Good, very good.	Bueno, ***bonísimo***.
Celebrated, very celebrated.	***Célebre, celebérrimo***.
Certain, very certain.	***Cierto, certísimo***.
Faithful, very faithful.	***Fiel, fidelísimo***.
Strong, very strong.	Fuerte, ***fortísimo***.
Sound, ***honest***, very sound, very honest.	***Integro, integérrimo***.
New, very new.	Nuevo, ***novísimo***.
Wise, very wise.	***Sabio, sapientísimo***.
Sacred, very sacred.	***Sagrado, sacratísimo***.
Healthy, very healthy.	***Salubre, salubérrimo***.
My servant is very faithful.	Mi criado es fidelísimo.

The lion is very strong.	El leon es fortísimo.
This city is very healthy.	Esta ciudad es salubérrima.
A *master*, *teacher*. A *wise man*.	Un *maestro*. Un *sabio*.
The *floor*, *ground*. *Sufficient*.	El *suelo*. *Bastante*.
Too much. *Too much wine*.	*Demasiado*. Demasiado vino.
He has sufficient wine, but not too much.	Tiene bastante vino, pero no demasiado.
Sufficiently cold. *Too* warm.	Bastante frio. demasiado caliente.
To promise. The *cup*. The *wine-glass*.	*Prometer*. La *taza*. La *copa*.
The silver cup. A *sword*.	La taza de plata. Una *espada*.
A *chain*. A *box*.	Una *cadena*. Una *caja*.
The *hearth*. The *wood*.	El *hogar*. La *leña*.
Do you promise me your horse?	¿Me promete V. su caballo?
I promise him to you.	Se le prometo á V.
That man loves you; do you love him?	Ese hombre ama á V.; ¿le ama V. á él?

FUTURE TENSE OF PONER, TO PUT.

Yo pondré, tú pondrás, él pondrá, nosotros pondremos, vosotros pondreis, ellos pondrán.
I shall put, thou wilt put, he will put, we shall put, you will put, they will put.

Wilt thou put the cup on the table?	¿Pondrás tú la taza sobre la mesa?
I will put it there.	La pondré allí.
Where will you put those gold chains?	¿Donde pondrán VV. esas cadenas de oro?
We shall put them in this box.	Las pondremos en esta caja.
He will put his sword on the bench.	El pondrá su espada sobre el banco.
Will you not be cold?	¿No tendrá V. frio?
I shall be very cold.	Tendré mucho frio.
Thou wilt be very warm here.	Tendrás mucho calor aquí.
We shall be hungry and sleepy.	Tendremos hambre y sueño.
Will those little girls be afraid?	¿Tendrán miedo esas muchachitas?
They will not be afraid, but ashamed.	No tendrán miedo sinó vergüenza.
Will he not be thirsty who eats salt fish?	¿No tendrá sed el que come pescado salado?
The *fire*. He makes some fire.	El *fuego*. Hace fuego.
He will put the wood on the hearth.	Pondrá la leña en el hogar.

Where does the servant put his master's hat and cloak? He puts them on the bench. Is he faithful to his master? He is very faithful to him. Is not our master wise? He is very wise, and Mr. B. is very wise also. Where dost thou put thy books? I put my books on the table, and my papers in this box. Do you always put your books on the table? I always put them there. Where does the servant wish to put the wood? He wishes to put it in this room. Will he put it on the floor? He will not put it on the floor, but on

(*en*) the hearth. What do you promise me? I promise you a handsome sword and a silver chain. What do the masters promise the boys? They promise them some new books. Do they promise some to you? They promise some to us, and we promise them some money. Do you not put too much wood on (*en*) the fire? I do not put (on) too much, but enough. Are you not too warm? I am not too warm; but, I am warm enough. Do I not make sufficient fire? You make sufficient. What are those carpenters making? They are making a little house. Are they making it for the painter, or for me? They are making it neither for him nor for thee; they are making it for us. Does the servant wash the cup for his master? He washes it for him. Does he wash any thing for himself? He washes some stockings for himself. What is the cook making for us? He is making coffee for thee, and tea for me. Whom do you love? I love all my friends.

Does the servant love his master? Do all men love good? Do all men love it? Do they prefer the good to the beautiful? I prefer the useful to the agreeable; do you prefer this to that? Does any one love evil more than good? Do all men love the latter (*esto*) more than the former, (*aquello?*) Do many prefer tea to coffee? Is that man who eats so much very hungry? Are you thirsty and sleepy? I am thirsty, but not sleepy; are you thirsty? Are you ashamed to read your letter? We are wrong; is not the master right? The master is wise; is he not always right? Is not this city in which we live healthy? Is it not very healthy? Is not that water too cold? Is it not sufficiently warm? Is it not too warm? Promise me your horse? Promise him to me? Do not promise him to them.

Los elefantes[1] mas grandes de las Indias y de las costas[2] orientales del Africa, tienen catorce piés de alto. Los mas pequeños que se encuentran en el Senegal, y en otras partes[3] del Africa occidental[4] no tienen sinó diez ú once piés. El tamaño ordinario[5] de los elefantes es de diez á once piés; los de trece y catorce piés de alto son muy raros;[6] la fuerza[7] de estos animales es proporcionada[8] á su tamaño. Los elefantes de las Indias llevan[9] facilmente tres ó cuatro mil libras.[10] Sus alimentos[11] ordinarios son raíces, yerbas,[12] y hojas[13] de árbbles tiernos; comen tambien frutas y granos.[14]

La virtud[15] no consiste[16] en hacer grandes elogios[17] de ella sino en multiplicar[18] las buenas acciones,[19] en ser útil al prójimo,[20] en una palabra[21] en merecer[22] el nombre[23] de bienhechor,[24] que es el mas ilustre[25] de todos los títulos.[26]

1, *Elefante*, elephant. 2, *Costa*, coast. 3, *Parte*, part. 4, *Occidental*, western. 5, *Ordinario*, ordinary. 6, *Raro*, rare. 7, *Fuerza*, force. 8, *Proporcionado*, proportioned. 9, *Llevar*, to carry. 10, *Libra*, pound. 11, *Alimento*, food. 12, *Yerba*, herb. 13, *Hoja*, leaf. 14, *Grano*, grain. 15, *Virtud*, virtue. 16, *Consistir*, to consist. 17, *Elogio*, eulogy. 18, *En multiplicar*, in multiplying. 19, *Accion*, action. 20, *Prójimo*, fellow-creature. 21, *Palabra*, word. 22, *En merecer*, in meriting. 23, *Nombre*, name. 24, *Bienhechor*, benefactor. 25, *Ilustre*, illustrious. 26, *Título*, title.

---

47. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

MONTHS, DATES, ETC.

January. February.	*Enero. Febrero.*
March. April.	*Marzo. Abril.*
May. June.	*Mayo. Junio.*
July. August.	*Julio. Agosto.*
September. October.	*Setiembre. Octubre.*
November. December.	*Noviembre. Diciembre.*
I shall be in Boston the first of January.	Estaré en Boston el primero de Enero.
He will be in New York the second of February.	Estará en New York el dos de Febrero.
Will you be in New Orleans the fourth of July?	¿Estarán VV. en Nueva Orleans el cuatro de Julio?
We shall be in Philadelphia the tenth of September.	Estaremos en Filadelfia el diez de Setiembre.

REMARK 1. The *cardinal numbers* are used with all the days of the month, except the first, as seen above; in numbering monarchs, the first nine are ordinal, and those above nine cardinal.

James the first.	*Jacobo* primero.
George the fourth.	*Jorge* cuarto.
Henry the eighth.	*Enrique* octavo.
Charles the ninth.	*Carlos* nono.
Charles the tenth.	Carlos diez.
Charles the twelfth.	Carlos doce.
The *prince*. A *month*.	El *príncipe*. Un *mes*.

Edward the third is a brave prince.	Eduardo tercero es un príncipe valiente.
Lewis the sixteenth is an amiable king.	Luis diez y seis es un rey amable.
Are you acquainted with Henry the sixth?	¿ Conoce V. á Enrique sexto ?
Four weeks and two or three days make a month.	Cuatro semanas y dos ó tres dias hacen un mes.
What day of the month is it to-day?	¿ A como estamos hoy ? ¿ A cuantos estamos ? ¿ Que dia del mes tenemos ?
It is the sixteenth.	Estamos á diez y seis. Tenemos el diez y seis.
What day of the month will it be to-morrow?	¿ A como estaremos mañana ?
It will be the seventeenth.	Estaremos á diez y siete.
A *year*. Twelve months make a year.	Un *año*. Doce meses hacen un año.
How many years old are you?	¿ Cuantos años tiene V. ?
I am *almost* twenty years old.	Tengo *casi* veinte años.
In the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty-three.	En el año mil ochocientos cincuenta y tres.
What is the weather?	*¿ Que tiempo hace ?*
It is beautiful weather.	Hace bello tiempo.
It is good weather. It is bad weather.	Hace buen tiempo. Hace mal tiempo.
It is cold. It is very cold.	Hace frio. Hace mucho frio.
Is it not hot?	¿ No hace calor ?
Is it not very hot?	¿ No hace mucho calor ?

FUTURE TENSE OF HACER, TO MAKE.

Yo haré, tú harás, él hará, nosotros haremos, vosotros hareis, ellos harán.
I shall make, thou wilt make, he will make, we shall make, you will make, they will make.

Work, labor. Much work.	*Trabajo*. Mucho trabajo.
What wilt thou do to-morrow?	¿ Que harás tú mañana ?
I shall do many things to-morrow.	Haré muchas cosas mañana.
The cook will make us some soup.	El cocinero nos hará sopa.
Will you do your work soon?	¿ Harán VV. su trabajo pronto ?
We shall do it soon.	Le haremos pronto.
What will the weather be to-morrow?	¿ Que tiempo hará mañana ?
It will be fine weather.	Hará bello tiempo.
Will it be cold?	¿ Hará frio ?
It will not be cold; it will be too warm.	No hará frio; hará demasiado calor.

Where will you be the first of January? The first of January I shall be here. Where will you be the third of March? I shall be

in New Orleans the third of March. When will your nephews go to Boston? They will go there the fifth of April. Where will your nieces be the sixth of May? They will be in Philadelphia, the sixth, the seventh, and the eighth. Will Miss H. be in Washington on the ninth of June? She will be there on the ninth, the tenth, the eleventh, and the twelfth of June, and she will be here all the month of July. How many days are there in the month of August? August has thirty-one days, and September thirty. Is it not cold in October? It is cold in October; but it is colder in November, and much colder in December. What day of the month is it to-day? It is the thirteenth, and to-morrow will be the fourteenth. What day of the month will it be on Sunday? It will be the eighteenth. How many weeks make a month? Four weeks and two or three days make a month. How many weeks are there in October? There are four weeks and three days in October, and in December also; but in November there are only four weeks and two days. What will you do to-morrow? To-morrow will be Sunday, and I shall do nothing. What will the children do on Monday? They will go to school.

What is the weather? It is fine weather. Is it not too cold? It is cold enough, but not too cold. What will the weather be to-morrow? It will be bad weather. Will it not be warm enough? No, sir; it will be too cold. Will you not make some fire? I shall make much fire. Is it not bad weather? It is bad weather to-day, but it will be good weather to-morrow. When will those laborers do their work? They will do it on Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday. What will you do on Thursday, Friday, and Saturday? I shall do many things. Do you come here often? We come here very often; I come every morning, and my brother comes every evening. Do hares and rabbits run fast? They run fast, but not faster than dogs. Are there not many vegetables in that garden? There are cabbages, lettuce, and onions there. Do your teeth pain you? No, sir; my teeth do not pain me; but I have the headache. Has that man the headache or the teethache? He has the teethache. What does the cook buy? He buys onions, cabbage, and lettuce. Come here. Give me your book. Give it to me. Give it to him.

Francia es un pais muy grande, muy rico, y muy fértil.[1] El clima es admirable,[2] allí nunca hace demasiado calor, como en Italia[3] y España, ni demasiado frio como en Suecia y en Dinamarca. Este reino[4] está limitado[5] al norte por el mar que se llama la Mancha;[6] al sud por el mar mediterráneo.[7] Francia no está separada[8] de Italia sinó por los Alpes,[9] que son unas grandes montañas[10] cubiertas de nieve[11] la mayor parte del año.

Yo voy á decir á V. los nombres de los doce meses del año, y contarlos al mismo tiempo. Enero, uno; Febrero, dos; Marzo, tres; Abril, cuatro; Mayo, cinco; Junio, seis; Julio, siete; Agosto, ocho; Setiembre, nueve; Octubre, diez; Noviembre, onze; Diciembre, doce.

La benevolencia[12] produce en nosotros una sensacion[13] apacible,[14] y en los demas aprecio,[15] pues[16] todos aman al[17] que desea[18] los bienes[19] para sus semejantes.[20]

1, *Fértil*, fertile. 2, *Admirable*, admirable. 3, *Italia*, Italy. 4, *Reino*, kingdom. 5, *Limitado*, bounded. 6, *Mancha*, mancha. (The French call the English channel *Manche*, sleeve.) 7, *Mediterráneo*, mediterranean. 8, *Separado*, separated. 9, *Alpes*, Alps. 10, *Montaña*, mountain. 11, *Nieve*, snow. 12, *Benevolencia*, benevolence. 13, *Sensacion*, feeling. 14, *Apacible*, placid. 15, *Aprecio*, esteem. 16, *Pues*, since. 17, *Al*, him. 18, *Desear*, to desire. 19, *Bien*, good. 20, *Semejantes*, fellow-creatures.

---

48. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA OCTAVA.

NOUNS, GENDER, ETC.

The *north*. The *south*.	El *norte*, *septentrion*. El *sud*, *mediodia*.
The *east*. The *west*.	El *este*, *oriente*. El *oeste*, *occidente*.
Now. The *wind*.	*Ahora*. El *viento*.
Which way is the wind now?	¿De donde viene el viento ahora?
It is in the north.	Viene del norte.
Is it in the east, or in the west?	¿Viene del este ó del oeste?
It is in the south.	Viene del sud.
Why? Because.	*¿Porqué? Porque.*
Why do you study so much?	¿Porqué estudia V. tanto?
Because I wish to learn.	Porque quiero aprender.
The *tongs*. The *fire-shovel*.	Las *tenazas*. La *pala*.
What is the matter with you?	*¿Que tiene V.?*
Nothing is the matter with me.	No tengo nada.
What is the matter with your cousin?	¿Que tiene su primo de V.?
His eyes pain him.	Los ojos le duelen.

Still more. Yet more.	*Todavja mas.*
A *relation.*	Un *pariente.* Una *parienta.*
He has much money; but he wishes for still more.	Tiene mucho dinero; pero quiere todavia mas.
To like, have a taste for.	*Gustar,* (á bef. inf) *ser amigo de.*

REMARK 1. With the verb *gustar*, the subject in English becomes the object in Spanish, and the object in English the subject in Spanish.

I like fruit.	Me gustan las frutas, (soy amigo de frutas.)
He likes oranges.	Le gustan las naranjas.
A *turnip.* An *orange.*	Un *nabo.* Una *naranja.*
A *grandfather.* A *grandmother.*	Un *abuelo.* Una *abuela.*
An *old man.* An *old woman.*	Un *viejo,* (*anciano.*) Una *vieja.*
Pork. A *lamb.*	*Puerco.* Un *cordero.*
A *potato.* A *pie.*	Una *patata.* Un *pastel.*
An *animal.* A *sheep,* (female.)	Un *animal.* Una *oveja.*

REMARK 2. When the word is intended to include both the masculine and feminine gender, the masculine must be used in Spanish.

My *parents.* His children.	Mis *padres.* Sus hijos.
My uncles and aunts.	Mis tios.
His brothers and sisters.	Sus hermanos.
My grand parents.	Mis abuelos.
My brothers and sisters are sick.	Mis hermanos están enfermos.
Does your relation like beef better than mutton?	¿ Le gusta mas á su pariente la vaca que el carnero?
That old man likes to talk better than to read.	Le gusta mas á ese viejo hablar que leer.
I like pies.	Me gustan los pasteles.
How do you like my room?	¿ Como le gusta á V. mi cuarto?
He goes out into the street every hour.	Sale á la calle todas las horas.
Why does the little girl run?	¿ Porqué corre la muchachita?
She runs because she is afraid.	Corre porque tiene miedo.
What is the matter with that old woman?	¿ Que tiene esa vieja?
She has the teethache.	Tiene dolor de dientes.
I wish for the shovel and tongs to make some fire.	Quiero la pala y las tenazas para hacer fuego.
He needs money to buy some wood.	Necesita dinero para comprar leña.

Which way is the wind? It is in the north. Is it not in the east? It is neither in the east nor in the west. Is it in the south? It is

not in the south. Why does the servant make a fire? He makes a fire because it is cold. What do you need? I need wood to make some fire. Do you need the shovel and the tongs? We need them. What is the matter with that old man? He is cold. Has he not money to buy wood? He has some, but he needs still more.- Is that old man your relation? Yes, madam; he is my grandfather. Who is that woman? She is my grandmother. Do you like fresh pork? No, sir; I do not like either the fresh or the salted. Do you like potatoes and turnips? Yes, sir; I like both. Do you like potatoes better than turnips? No, sir; I like turnips as (much) well as potatoes. What does prince Henry like? He likes to eat pies and to drink good wine. Does he like lamb better than beef? No, sir; but he likes lamb as well as beef. When do you need your money? I need it now. Why do you need it? I need it to buy vegetables. What vegetables do you wish to buy? I wish to buy potatoes, turnips, cabbages, lettuce, and onions. Are not hares and rabbits small animals? They are small.

Is not the horse a handsomer animal than the cow and the sheep? He is handsomer, because the cow and the sheep have the legs too small. Why are the shoemaker's arms large? They are large because he labors much. Is he doing his work now? He is not doing it now, but he will do it to-morrow. What is the matter with you? My eyes pain me, and I have the teethache. Does your friend come often to your house? He comes here every week. What is the matter with your cousin? Nothing is the matter with him; he is very well. When will you be at my house? I will be there to-morrow morning. Why do the children run? They run because they are afraid. Do your brothers and sisters like to run better than to study? They almost always like to run better than to study. Do you always shut your windows at night? We shut them sometimes; but not always.

La oveja es para el hombre el animal mas precioso[1] cuya utilidad[2] es la mas inmediata[3] y la mas extensa.[4] Estos animales cuyo natural[5] es tan sencillo son tambien de un temperamento[6] muy débil.[7] No pueden caminar[8] mucho tiempo; los viajes[9] las debilitan[10] y las extenuan.[11] Cuando corren palpitan[12] y están inmediatemente sofocadas.[13] El mucho calor, el ardor[14] del sol, las incomoda[15]

tanto como la humedad,[16] el frio y la nieve. Ellas están sujetas[17] á un gran número de enfermedades,[18] de las cuales la mayor parte son contajiosas;[19] la abundancia[20] de la grosura[21] las mata. En una palabra, ellas requieren[22] mas cuidado que ninguno de los otros animales domésticos. Los corderos[23] blancos y sin manchas[24] son preferidos siempre á los corderos negros ó manchados,[25] y la lana[26] blanca es mejor que la negra.

1, ***Precioso***, valuable. 2, ***Utilidad***, utility. 3, ***Inmediato***, immediate. 4, ***Extenso***, extensive. 5, ***Natural***, natural disposition. 6, ***Temperamento***, temperament. 7, ***Débil***, feeble. 8, ***Caminar***, to travel. 9, ***Viaje***, journey. 10, ***Debilitar***, to weaken. 11, ***Extenuar***, to extenuate. 12, ***Palpitar***, to palpitate. 13, ***Sofocado***, out of breath. 14, ***Ardor***, ardor. 15, ***Incomodar***, to incommode. 16, ***Humedad***, humidity. 17, ***Sujeto***, subject. 18, ***Enfermedad***, infirmity. 19, ***Contajioso***, contagious. 20, ***Abundancia***, abundance. 21, ***Grosura***, fat. 22, ***Requerir***, to require. 23, ***Cordero***, lamb. 24, ***Mancha***, spot. 25, ***Manchado***, spotted. 26, ***Lana***, wool.

---

49. LECCION CUADRAGÉSIMA NONA.

IRREGULAR VERBS, ETC.

FUTURE TENSE OF VENIR, TO COME.

Yo vendré, I shall come,	*tú vendrás*, thou wilt come,	*él vendrá*, he will come,	*nosotros vendremos*, we shall come,
	vosotros vendreis, you will come,		*ellos vendrán*. they will come.

When wilt thou come here?	¿Cuando vendrás tú aquí?
I will come here on Monday.	Vendré aquí el lúnes.
He will come here on Tuesday.	Vendrá aquí el mártes.
Will you come here on Wednesday?	¿Vendrán VV. aquí el miércoles?
We will come on Thursday or Friday.	Vendremos el juéves ó el viérnes.
The *salt*. *Cloudy*.	La *sal*. *Nublado*.
It is cloudy. It is windy.	Hace (or está) nublado. Hace viento.
It is very windy.	Hace mucho viento.
My *brother-in-law*. My *sister-in-law*.	Mi *cuñado*. Mi *cuñada*.
My *father-in-law*. My *mother-in-law*.	Mi *suegro*. Mi *suegra*.
My *step-father*. My *step-mother*.	Mi *padrastro*. Mi *madrastra*.
His *son-in-law*. His *daughter-in-law*.	Su *yerno*. Su *nuera*.
The *washerwoman*. *To lend*.	La *lavandera*. *Prestar*.
A *bachelor*. A *husband*.	Un *soltero*. Un *marido*.

His *spouse*, her *spouse*. *To sweep*. *To burn*. *To salt*.	Su *esposa*, su *esposo*. *Barrer*. *Quemar*. *Salar*.
It will be cold and very windy.	Hará frio y mucho viento.

FUTURE TENSE OF DECIR, TO SAY.

Yo diré,	*tú dirás*,	*él dirá*,	*nosotros diremos*,	*vosotros direis*,	*ellos dirán*.
I shall say,	thou wilt say,	he will say.	we shall say,	you will say,	they will say.

Wilt thou tell thy secrets to thy brother-in-law?	¿Dirás tú tus secretos á tu cuñado?
I will tell them to my sister-in-law.	Les diré á mi cuñada.
I will tell them to her.	Se los diré.
The master will say that we know our lessons.	El maestro dirá que sabemos nuestras lecciones.
What will you say to his father-in-law?	¿Qué dirán VV. á su suegro?
We shall say nothing to him.	No le diremos nada.
His mother-in-law will come here to-morrow.	Su suegra vendrá aquí mañana.
His step-father will come also.	Su padrastro vendrá tambien.
The washerwoman washes handkerchiefs for my step-mother.	La lavandera lava pañuelos para mi madrastra.
Is that man the son-in-law of your uncle?	¿Es aquel hombre el yerno de su tio?
Yes; and that lady is his daughter-in-law.	Si, y aquella señora es su nuera.
Is that man a bachelor?	¿Es aquel hombre soltero?
No, sir; he is the husband of my cousin.	No, señor; es el marido de mi prima.
His spouse will come on Saturday.	Su esposa vendrá el sábado.
Her spouse will come on Sunday.	Su esposo vendrá el domingo.
I wish for salt to salt this fish.	Quiero sal para salar este pescado.
Does not the fisherman salt it?	¿No le sala el pescador?
No, sir; I salt it.	No, señor; yo le salo.
Why do you lend the servant money?	¿Porqué presta V. dinero al criado?
I lend it to him to buy a broom.	Se le presto para comprar una escoba.
Does he sweep your room?	¿Barre el su cuarto?
He sweeps it.	Le (lo) barre.
The servants sweep it often.	Los criados le barren frecuentemente.
What do you burn?	¿Que quema V.?
I burn these old papers.	Quemo estos papeles viejos.
They lend us the books, and we lend them to you; do you not lend them to him?	Nos prestan los libros, y nosotros se les prestamos á VV.; ¿no se los prestan VV. á él?

Will your brother-in-law come to my house in the afternoon? He will come in the afternoon, or to-morrow morning, and I will come there also. Will not your relations come here soon? They will come here in three or four days. When will you come to the city again? We will come again in a few months. Will it not be cloudy to-morrow? It will be cloudy, and there will be much wind. Will the wind be in the north or in the south this afternoon? It will be neither in the north nor in the south. Will it be in the east or in the west? It will be in the west. Will your step-father lend me his shovel and tongs? He will lend them to you. For what do you need them? I need them to make some fire. Has not your daughter-in-law money? She has much, but she wishes for still more. What is the washerwoman doing? She is washing handkerchiefs for my mother-in-law and my sister-in-law. Is your relation a bachelor? No, sir; he is the husband of that pretty lady. Are you not burning your shoes? No, sir; we are not burning them. What does the spouse of your friend wish to burn? He wishes to burn his books. Dost thou burn any thing? I burn nothing but wood.

Does the servant wish to sweep the room? He wishes to sweep it. Does he sweep it every day? Yes, sir; he sweeps it twice a day. Why do you buy salt? I buy salt to salt this fresh pork and these fish. What do you salt? We salt the potatoes. Do you salt the fresh lamb? We salt it. Will you tell your secret to your father-in-law and to your brother-in-law? We will tell it to them. Will you tell your secrets to your step-mother? We will tell them to her. Does that man's daughter-in-law lend him her money? She lends it to him. Does he lend it to you? He does not lend it to me. Do you lend the washerwoman your books? We lend them to her. Do not the merchants lend us their money? They do not lend it to you; they lend it to us.

What does that merchant buy? He buys wheat. Do you wish to buy pins? I wish to buy pins and a fan. Is that sack empty? No, sir; it is full of wheat. Is not ripe fruit healthy? It is very healthy. Do you like pies? Yes, sir; I like good pies. Is your friend a bachelor? No, sir; he is the husband of my sister.

Where is that man going? He is going to the river, and I am going there also.

La virtud, amigos mios, es sincera[1] y veraz[2] en su trato;[3] fiel ó inmutable[4] en sus promesas;[5] lisa[6] y sin rebozo[7] en la amistad;[8] es magnánima[9] en los proyectos,[10] constante[11] en las empresas,[12] y suave[13] en la ejecucion[14] de ellas, da sabiduría en los consejos,[15] prudencia[16] en las resoluciones[17] y os hace firmes,[18] como una roca[19] en los contratiempos.[20] La virtud ni teme,[21] ni huye, ni finge;[22] es al mismo tiempo elevada[23] y modesta,[24] ni se esconde[25] avergonzada,[26] ni hace vana[27] ostentacion de su belleza.[28] Es lo que realmente es; no depende[29] de nadie, ni hace caso[30] de cuanto los hombres pueden decir de ella; todo es lo mismo para ella. Es rica pero sin lujo;[31] independiente[32] pero sin soberbia; afable[33] pero sin lisonja.[34]

1, *Sincero*, sincere. 2, *Veraz*, truthful. 3, *Trato*, conduct. 4, *Inmutable*, unchangeable. 5, *Promesa*, promise. 6, *Liso*, plain. 7, *Rebozo*, disguise. 8, *Amistad*, friendship. 9, *Magnánimo*, magnanimous. 10, *Proyecto*, project. 11, *Constante*, constant. 12, *Empresa*, enterprise. 13, *Suave*. gentle. 14, *Ejecucion*, execution. 15, *Consejo*, counsel. 16, *Prudencia*, prudence. 17, *Resolucion*, resolution. 18, *Firme*, firm. 19, *Roca*, rock. 20, *Contratiempo*, adversity. 21, *Temer*, to fear. 22, *Fingir*, to feign. 23, *Elevado*, elevated. 24, *Modesta*, modest. 25, *Esconder*, to hide. 26, *Avergonzado*, ashamed. 27, *Vana*, vain. 28, *Belleza*, beauty. 29, *Depender*, to depend. 30, *Hacer caso de*, to regard. 31, *Lujo*, luxury. 32, *Independiente*, independent. 33. *Afable*, affable. 34, *Lisonja*, flattery.

---

50. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA.

IRREGULAR VERBS, ETC.

The *lake*.	*To be worth*.	El *lágo*.	*Valer*.

Yo valgo,	*tú vales*,	*él vale*,	*nosotros valemos*,	*vosotros valeis*,	*ellos valen*.
I am worth,	thou art worth,	he is worth,	we are worth,	you are worth,	they are worth.

A *cent*. A *hundred weight*.	Un *centavo*. Un *quintal*.
A *quarter*, *twenty-five pounds*.	Una *arroba*.
A *pound*. An *ounce*.	Una *libra*, Una *onza*.
Am I not worth more than my brother?	¿No valgo yo mas que mi hermano?
Thou art worth more than he.	Vales mas que él.
We are worth much; you are worth more.	Nosotros valemos mucho; VV. valen mas.

This watch is worth a hundred dollars.	Este reloj vale cien pesos.
How much is butter worth a pound?	¿ Cuanto vale la libra de manteca?
It is worth two shillings a pound.	Vale dos reales la libra.
Cotton is worth ten cents a pound.	El algodon vale diez centavos la libra.
Flour is worth a dollar a quarter.	La harina vale un peso la arroba.
The *spring*. The *summer*.	La *primavera*. El *verano*.
The *autumn*. The *winter*.	El *otoño*. El *invierno*.
The *next*.	El *próximo*.
The next winter.	El invierno próximo, el invierno que viene.

FUTURE TENSE OF VALER.

Yo valdré,	*tú valdrás*,	*él valdrá*,
I shall be worth,	thou shalt be worth,	he shall be worth,
Nosotros valdremos,	*vosotros valdreis*,	*ellos valdrán*,
We shall be worth,	you shall be worth,	they shall be worth.

How much will apples be worth next spring?	¿ Cuanto valdrán las manzanas la primavera que viene?
They will be worth two dollars a barrel.	Valdrán dos pesos el barril.
Oranges will be worth more than two dollars a hundred next summer.	Las naranjas valdrán mas de dos pesos el ciento el verano próximo.
Cotton will be worth ten cents a pound.	El algodon valdrá diez centavos la libra.
Thou wilt be worth much.	Tú valdrás mucho.
I shall be worth more than he.	Yo valdré mas que él.
We shall be worth much.	Valdremos mucho.
To be able to be contained.	*Caber.*

Yo quepo,	*tú cabes*,	*él cabe*,
I am contained,	thou art contained,	he is contained,
Nosotros cabemos,	*vosotros cabeis*,	*ellos caben*,
We are contained,	you are contained,	they are contained.

Are your books contained in that drawer?	¿ Caben sus libros en ese cajon?
The *drawer*. A *desk*.	El *cajon*. Un *bufete*.
A *bureau*. These *clothes*.	Una *cómoda*. Esta *ropa*.
The drawer of this desk.	El cajon de este bufete.
Are your garments contained in this bureau?	¿ Caben sus vestidos en esta cómoda?
My clothing is contained in this trunk.	Mi ropa cabe en este baul.

FUTURE TENSE OF CABER.

Yo cabré,	*tú cabrás*,	*él cabrá*,
I shall be contained,	thou wilt be contained,	he will be contained,
Nosotros cabremos,	*vosotros cabreis*,	*ellos cabrán*,
We shall be contained,	you will be contained,	they will be contained.

Will you all be contained in this room?	¿Cabrán VV. todos en este cuarto?
We shall all be contained in it.	Cabremos todos en él.
All my money will be contained in that wooden box.	Todo mi dinero cabrá en aquella caja de palo.
The river Niagara goes out from lake Erie.	El rio Niagara sale del lago Erie.
I will take care of my copy-books.	Tendré cuidado de mis cuadernos.
This inkstand is of cork.	Este tintero es de corcho.
How many ounces are contained in a pound?	¿Cuantas onzas caben en una libra?
Sixteen ounces are contained in a pound.	Diez y seis onzas caben en una libra.

Is this cake worth as much as that? Yes, sir; that cake is worth more than this. Is a hundred weight of flour worth as much as twenty-five pounds of butter? No, sir; twenty-five pounds of butter are worth more than a hundred weight of flour. Am I not worth as much as my brother-in-law? Yes, sir; thou art worth more than he. Are oranges worth as much as apples? Yes, sir; oranges are worth more than apples. Am I not worth more than my step-father? Thou art worth more than thy step-father, and we are worth more than our cousins. How much is gold worth an ounce? It is worth some dollars. How much will beef be worth a pound next spring? It will be worth ten cents a pound. Will it be worth as much in the spring as in the summer and autumn? It will be worth less in the summer and in the autumn than in the spring. Is the wind always in the north in winter? It is often in the north in winter; but not always.

Can all your oranges be contained in the drawer of this table? They can not be contained in that drawer; but they can be contained in my wooden trunk. Are all your books contained in the drawers of that bureau? They are all contained in them. Are all your papers contained in the drawer of your desk? No, sir; they are contained in this box. Where are your copy-books? They are on my desk. Do you say that all this wine will be contained in that bottle? I say that it will not be contained in it. Will that ink be contained in this inkstand? It will be contained in it. From what lake does the river Niagara go out? It goes out of lake Erie. Are

there many lakes in the United States? There are very many. Will you take care of the papers which are on my desk? I will take care of the papers and the books also. Do children always like cakes? They almost always like them. How many bottles of wine are contained in that barrel? More than a hundred are contained in it. Why is that workman weary? He is weary because he labors too much. Is that inkstand of cork or of wood? It is neither of cork nor of wood, it is of glass. What will the weather be to-morrow? It will be fine weather. Where are the shovel and the tongs? They are on the hearth.

La catarata[1] del Niagara está formada[2] del lago Erie. Su altura[3] perpendicular es de ciento cuarenta y cuatro piés. La cascada[4] se divide[5] en dos partes. Entre las dos caidas[6] se avanza[7] una isla que se inclina[8] con todos sus árboles á la confusion[9] de las olas.[10] Mil arco iris[11] se cruzan[12] sobre el abismo.[13] Algunos pinos,[14] nogales[15] silvestres[16] y rocas cortadas[17] en forma de fantasmas[18] decoran[19] la escena.[20] Las águilas[21] arrojadas[22] por la corriente[23] del viento bajan[24] al fondo[25] de la gruta.[26] Los carcajous[27] se sostienen[28] con sus largos rabos al extremo[29] de una rama[30] abatida[31] para coger[32] en el abismo los cadáveres[33] mutilados[34] de ciervos[35] y osos.[36]

1, *Catarata*, cataract. 2, *Formado*, formed. 3, *Altura*, height. 4, *Cascada*, waterfall. 5, *Dividir*, to divide. 6, *Caida*, fall. 7, *Avanzar*, to advance. 8, *Inclinar*, to incline. 9, *Confusion*, commotion. 10, *Ola*, wave. 11, *Arco iris*, rainbow. 12, *Cruzar*, to cross. 13, *Abismo*, abyss. 14, *Pino*, pine. 15, *Nogal*, walnut. 16, *Silvestre*, wild. 17, *Cortado* (cut), worn. 18, *Fantasma*, phantom. 19, *Decorar*, to decorate. 20, *Escena*, scene. 21, *Aguila*, eagle. 22, *Arrojado*, flung. 23, *Corriente*, current. 24, *Bajar*, to descend. 25, *Fondo*, bottom. 26, *Gruta*, cavern. 27, *Carcajou*, carcajou. 28, *Sostener*, to support. 29, *Extremo*, extremity. 30, *Rama*, branch. 31, *Abatido*, low. 32, *Coger*, to catch. 34, *Cadáver*, dead body. 34, *Mutilado*, mutilated. 35, *Ciervo*, deer. 36, *Oso*, bear.

---

51. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA PRIMERA.

IRREGULAR VERBS, ETC.

To sing. *To be able, can.*	*Cantar.* *Poder,* { Varied in the present, as *Mover.* Les. 37.
A *scholar.* A *song.*	Un *discípulo.* Una *cancion.*

Yo puedo,	*tú puedes,*	*él puede,*
I am able or can,	thou art able or canst,	he is able or can,
Nosotros podemos,	*vosotros podeis,*	*ellos pueden,*
We are able or can.	you are able or can,	they are able or can.

A French song. An English song.	Una cancion francesa. Una cancion inglesa. See Les. 5, Rule.
The *beer*. *To send.*	La *cerveza*. *Enviar*, (*á* bef. inf.)
To send for.	*Enviar por*, or *Enviar á buscar.*
I send for beer.	Envio por cerveza, *or* envio á buscar cerveza.
Strong beer. The *brandy*.	Cerveza fuerte. El *aguardiente*.
The *cider*. The *lemonade*.	La *sidra*. La *limonada*.
The *red* wine. The white wine.	El vino *tinto*. El vino blanco.
The *oil*. *Maderia* wine.	El *aceite*. El vino de *Madera*.
Champagne wine. *Better* (adv.)	El vino de *Champaña*. *Mejor*.
Canst thou send this letter to my relation?	¿ Puedes enviar esta carta á mi pariente?
I can send it to him.	Puedo enviársela.
The scholar can not learn his lesson.	El discípulo no puede aprender su leccion.
Can you sing Spanish songs?	¿ Pueden VV. cantar canciones españolas?
We can sing them.	Podemos cantarlas.

Tener razon takes *de* before the following infinitive:

Am I right to buy this beer?	¿ Tengo yo razon de comprar esta cerveza?
You are wrong to buy it.	V. no tiene razon de comprar la.
Do you send for brandy?	¿ Envian VV. por (á buscar) aguardiente?
We send for strong beer.	Enviamos por (á buscar) cerveza fuerte.
I know Spanish; you know French.	Yo sé el español; V. sabe el frances.
Do you know what I send for?	¿ Saben VV. lo que envio á buscar?
We do not know what you send for.	No sabemos lo que V. envia á buscar.

Saber and *Poder*, like *Caber*, change *er* final into *re* for the future; as—

Yo sabré,	*tú sabrás,*	*él sabrá,*
I shall know,	thou wilt know,	he will know.
Nosotros sabremos,	*vosotros sabreis,*	*ellos sabrán,*
We shall know,	you will know,	they will know.
Yo podré.	*tú podrás,*	*él podrá,*
I shall be able,	thou wilt be able,	he will be able,
Nosotros podremos,	*vosotros podreis,*	*ellos podrán,*
We shall be able,	you will be able,	they will be able.

When wilt thou know thy lesson?	¿ Cuando sabrás tu leccion?
I shall know it soon.	La sabré pronto.

Miss B. will know hers also.	La Señorita B. sabrá la suya tambien.
Will you know yours?	¿Sabrán VV. la suya?
We shall know it.	La sabremos.
When wilt thou be able to give me the money?	¿Cuando podrás darme el dinero?
I shall be able to give it to you this evening.	Podré dársele á V. esta tarde.
You will be able to do this.	V. podrá hacer esto.
Will you be able to buy my house?	¿Podrán VV. comprar mi casa?
We shall be able to buy it next autumn.	Podremos comprarla el otoño próximo.
A *needle*. A *seamstress*.	Una *aguja*. Una *costurera*.
The *serpent*. A *wing*, *fin* (of a fish.)	La *serpiente*. Una *ala*.
To travel, *move along*. *Easily*.	*Caminar*. *Facilmente*.
You sing better than I.	V. canta mejor que yo.
The serpent moves along easily without wings or feet.	La serpiente camina facilmente sin alas ni piés.
I travel much; do you travel much?	Camino mucho; ¿caminan VV. mucho?
We travel much.	Caminamos mucho.
This lesson is easy; that is difficult.	Esta leccion es fácil, aquella es difícil.

Canst thou sing? I can sing. What canst thou sing? I can sing many songs. Can you send for some cider? No, sir; but I can send for some red wine, and for some lemonade. Can you and your brother-in-law lend me a thousand dollars? We can lend them to you. Dost thou sing English songs? No, sir; I do not sing English songs, but Spanish. What songs does the Scotchman sing? He sings Scotch (*escocesas*) songs. Do you sing many songs? We do not sing many. Do you sing German or English songs? We sing both. Does the Italian sing better than you? No, madam; I sing better than he. Does the Frenchman send for Madeira wine? He sends for Madeira and for Champagne wine. Do you send for oil? We send for it. How much is a bottle of oil worth? It is worth six shillings. How much is a barrel of cider worth? It is worth three dollars. Does that man drink brandy often? No, sir; he never drinks brandy; but he sometimes drinks a glass of lemonade or of red wine. Will you know your lesson soon? I shall know it soon, for it is very easy. When will you know Spanish? We shall know it next winter. Will you know it sooner than we? We shall know it sooner than you.

Will you know your French lesson well to-morrow? I shall know it well. Will you be able to buy many books in the city? I shall not be able to buy many, for I shall not have much money. Will you be able to send these letters to my grandfather? We shall be able to send them to him. When will you be able to go to England? I shall never be able to go, for I shall never have sufficient time. What will the seamstress be able to buy? She will be able to buy needles. Do serpents pass along easily without feet? They pass along easily without feet and without wings. Do you travel much? I do not travel much. Do you speak Spanish better than the Frenchman? I speak it better than he. Are there not many ancient cities in Europe? There are very many. Is not that old man happy? He is very happy and very good. That lesson is not difficult, will you not be able to learn it? I shall be able to learn it in an hour. Does the master like his servant? He likes him because he is faithful. Which way is the wind? It is in the north to-day, but it will be in the south to-morrow. Do you like pies? I like pies and cakes. Are there many sheep in Spain? There are many in Spain and in England.

Los movimientos[1] de la serpiente son diferentes de los de los otros animales. No tiene ni piés ni alas, y sin embargo[2] huye como una sombra, y se desvanece[3] como por mágica;[4] parece y desaparece[5] otra vez, semejante[6] á una nube[7] pequeña azul, ó al brillo[8] de un diamante[9] en las tinieblas.[10] A veces[11] se forma[12] en círculo,[13] arroja su lengua[14] de fuego, y otras parada[15] sobre la extremidad[16] de su cola,[17] camina en una aptitud[18] perpendicular, como por encantamento.[19] Se arroja en orbita,[20] sube[21] y baja[22] caracoleando,[23] rueda[24] sus anillos como una onda,[25] circula[26] sobre las ramas de los árboles, resbala[27] bajo las yerbas de los prados[28] ó sobre la superficie[29] del agua.

La ardilla[30] es un animal bonito y pequeño. Come ordinariamente[31] frutas; está casi siempre en el aire como las aves.[32]

1, *Movimiento*, movement. 2, *Sin embargo*, nevertheless. 3, *Desvanecer*, to vanish. 4, *Mágica*, magic. 5, *Desaparecer*, to disappear. 6, *Semejante*, like. 7, *Nube*, cloud. 8, *Brillo*, lustre. 9, *Diamante*, diamond. 10, *Tinieblas*, darkness. 11, *A veces*, at times. 12, *Formar*, to form. 13, *Círculo*, circle. 14, *Lengua*, tongue. 15, *Parado*, erect. 16, *Extremidad*, extremity. 17, *Cola*, tail. 18, *Aptitud*, attitude. 19, *Encantamento*, enchantment. 20, *Orbita*, orbit. 21, *Subir*, to mount. 22, *Bajar*, to descend. 23, *Caracoleando*,

moving in circles. 24, *Rodar*, to roll. 25, *Onda*, wave. 26, *Circular*, to go round. 27, *Resbalar*, to glide. 28, *Prado*, meadow. 29, *Superficie*, surface. 30, *Ardilla*, squirrel. 31, *Ordinariamente*, commonly. 32, *Ave*, bird.

---

52. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA SEGUNDA.

IRREGULAR VERBS, ETC.

Late. To rain.	*Tarde. Llover.*
Does it rain? It rains.	*¿ Llueve? Llueve.*
Early. To begin.	*Temprano. Empezar*, (*á* bef. inf.)

Empiezo, I begin,	*empiezas*, thou beginest,	*empieza*, he begins,
Empezamos, We begin,	*empezais*, you begin,	*empiezan*, they begin.

It begins to rain.	Empieza á llover.
They begin their work now.	Empiezan su trabajo ahora.
What o'clock is it?	*¿ Que hora es?*
It is not late. It is early.	No es tarde. Es temprano.
Is it one o'clock? It is one.	¿ Es la una? Es la una.
Is it two o'clock? It is three.	¿ Son las dos? Son las tres.
It is six o'clock.	Son las seis.
Half an hour.	*Una media hora.*
A quarter. A minute.	Un *cuarto*. Un *minuto*.
Near. Near one.	*Cerca de. Cerca de la una.*
Noon, midday. Midnight.	El *medio dia*. La *media noche*.
It is half past four.	Son las cuatro y media.
It is a quarter past five.	Son las cinco y cuarto.
It is ten minutes after eight.	Son las ocho y diez minutos.
It is a quarter before seven.	Son las siete ménos (un) cuarto.
It is ten minutes before nine.	Son las nueve ménos diez minutos.
It is five minutes after ten.	Son las diez y cinco minutos.
It is near eleven.	Son cerca de las once.
It is only twelve at noon.	Solo son las doce del dia.
It is near twelve at night.	Son cerca de las doce de la noche.

The Future of *Salir* is formed like that of *Venir*.

Saldré, I shall go out,	*saldrás*, thou wilt go out,	*saldrá*, he will go out,
Saldremos, We shall go out,	*saldreis*, you will go out,	*saldrán*, they will go out.

When wilt thou go out?	¿ Cuando saldrás?
I shall go out at one.	Saldré á la una.
When will you go out?	¿ Cuando saldrán VV.?
We shall go out twenty minutes before five.	Saldrémos á las cinco ménos veinte minutos.
The general's son-in-law will go out.	El yerno del general saldrá.
His daughter-in-law will not go out.	Su nuera no saldrá.
A *flower*. A *basket*.	Una *flor*. Una *canasta*.
A *pocket-book*. An *axe*, the *axe*.	Una *cartera*. Un *hacha*, el *hacha*.
To break, *to tear*. *To warm*.	*Rasgar*. *Calentar*, (varied as *cerrar*.)
What dost thou warm?	¿ Que calientas?
I warm my boots.	Caliento mis botas.
The cook warms the water.	El cocinero calienta el agua.
What do you warm?	¿ Que calientan VV.?
We warm our gloves.	Calentamos nuestros guantes.
A basket of flowers.	Una canasta de flores.
Your pocket-book is on the floor.	Su cartera de V. está en el suelo.

REMARK 1. A noun in apposition with another noun, omits the article in Spanish.

Charles, the brother of John.	Carlos, hermano de Juan.
London, the capital of England.	Londres, capital de Inglaterra.
Charles the Fifth, the Emperor of Germany.	Carlos quinto, emperador de Alemania.
Where is the servant's axe?	¿ Donde está el hacha del criado?

REMARK 2. The article is also omitted in Spanish before the title of books, the heading of chapters, and the like.

The life of Fernando Cortes.	Vida de Hernan Cortes.
The second chapter. The third lesson.	Capitulo segundo. Leccion tercera.

What is the weather? It is bad weather. Does it rain? It begins to rain a little and it is very windy. Does it rain much in this country? It rains much, and it is very warm in summer. Dost thou begin to speak Spanish? I begin to speak it a little. When do the workmen begin their work? They begin it at six o'clock. We begin to study at half past five in the morning; when do you begin? We begin near eight. When dost thou begin to write? I begin to write a quarter before seven. What o'clock is it? It is five minutes after nine. Is it not early? No, sir; it is late. If the servant comes soon, will the master go out? He will go out five minutes before ten. Wilt thou go out at midnight? No, sir;

I shall go out at noon. What o'clock is it now? It is twenty minutes after eleven. Has the boy a mind to tear his paper? He has a mind to tear it. Does he tear it? He does not tear it. Do you tear yours? I do not tear it. Why do you tear your stockings? We do not tear them; the washerwoman tears them. What are you warming? I am warming my shoes and my gloves.

What are the servants warming? They are warming the soup and the coffee. Dost thou warm thy bread? I warm it. Has the boy a mind to warm his tea? He has a mind to warm it. What does that stranger put on the bench? He puts his sword on it. What has he? He has a silver cup and a gold chain. Where does he put them? He puts his sword on the bench, his silver cup on the table, and his gold chain in this box. Is there much wood on the hearth? There is not much. Give me the shovel and tongs. Give them to me. Where does your cousin live? He lives with his uncle; and he never goes out into (*à*) the street but (*sino*) when he goes to school. To what school does he go? He goes to the school of Mr. C.; but his brothers go to the school of Mr. D. Does he learn many things in the school of Mr. C.? He learns much, because he studies much. Does he speak French and Spanish? He speaks French well, and he begins to speak Spanish a little. Adieu, (*à dios,*) my friend; I am going away (*me voy,*) for it is already (*ya*) late.

Los colores de la serpiente son tan poco determinados[1] como su marcha.[2] Ellos cambian[3] segun[4] los aspectos[5] de la luz. Este réptil[6] duerme meses enteros, frecuenta[7] los sepulcros,[8] habita[9] los lugares incógnitos,[10] compone venenos[11] que hielan,[12] queman y manchan[13] el cuerpo de su víctima[14] de los colores que ella está marcada.[15] En una parte levanta[16] dos cabezas traidoras,[17] en otra hace oir[18] un cascabel,[19] silba[20] como el águila en el monte, ruge[21] como un toro. Objeto[22] de horror ó de adoracion,[23] los hombres le tienen un odio[24] implacable ó se arrodillan[25] delante de[26] ella. En los infiernos[27] arma[28] el fuete[29] de las furias,[30] en el cielo la eternidad[31] la hace su emblema.[32]

Los Franceses tienen mucho talento,[33] tambien son muy valientes. Paris es la capital. Ella está á la orilla del rio Sena.[34] Este río no es tan ancho[35] como el Mississippi.

1, *Determinado*, determined. 2, *Marcha*, gait. 3, *Cambiar*, to change. 4, *Segun*, according to. 5, *Aspecto*, aspect. 6, *Réptil*, reptile. 7, *Frecuentar*, to frequent. 8, *Sepulcro*, sepulcher. 9, *Habitar*, to inhabit. 10, *Incógnito*, unknown. 11, *Veneno*, poison. 12, *Helar*, to freeze, (varied like cerrar, Les.

38.) 13, *Manchar*, to spot. 14, *Víctima*, victim. 15, *Marcada*, marked. 16, *Lavantar*, to raise. 17, *Traidor*, treacherous. 18, *Oir*, to hear. 19, *Cascabel*, rattle. 20, *Silbar*, to hiss. 21, *Rugir*. to roar. 22, *Objeto*, object. 23, *Adoracion*, adoration. 24, *Odio*, hatred. 25, *Arrodillar*, to kneel. 26, *Delante de*, before. 27, *Infierno*, hell. 28, *Armar*, to arm. 29, *Fuete*. whip. 30, *Furia*, fury. 31, *Eternidad*, eternity. 32, *Emblema*, emblem. 33, *Talento*, talent. 34, *Sena*, Seine. 35, *Ancho*, broad.

---

53. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA TERCERA.

IRREGULAR VERBS, ETC.

Remark 1. The future tense of *Querer*, and of the auxiliary *Haber*, to have, are formed like that of *Caber*, Les. 50, and *Poder*, Les. 51.

Querré,	*querrás*,	*querrá*,
I shall wish for,	thou wilt wish for,	he will wish for,
Querremos,	*querreis*,	*querrán*,
We shall wish for,	you will wish for,	they will wish for.

If you see a basket of flowers, will you wish for them?	¿ Si V. ve una canasta de flores las querrá V.?
I shall wish for them.	Las querré.
What will you wish for?	¿ Que querrán VV.?
We shall wish for a gold chain.	Querremos una cadena de oro.
Thou wilt wish for money.	Tú querrás dinero.
That child tears his book.	Ese niño rasga su libro.
To pick up, to raise up, (from the floor.)	*Levantar*, or *alzar*. (del suelo.) [*cerrar*.)
To eat, dine. To tear, break.	*Comer. Romper, quebrar*, (varied as

Remark 2. *Rasgar* is to break or tear something light as paper, skins, etc.; *romper* and *quebrar* is to break with violence. *Romper* may, however, be applied in a moral sense; as, *Romper el contrato*, to break the contract.

He breaks the tumbler.	Quiebra el vaso.
What do you pick up?	¿ Que levanta V.?
I pick up your handkerchief.	Levanto su pañuelo de V.
Do you break my pencil-case?	¿ Rompe V. mi lapicero?
I do not break it.	No le rompo.
Pick up those apples. Pick them up.	Levante esas manzanas. Levántelas.
I shall go out to-morrow night.	Saldré mañana en la noche.
Will you go out near midnight?	¿ Saldrán VV. cerca de la media noche?
We shall go out to-morrow evening.	Saldremos mañana en la tarde.

How far? *As far as, until.*	*¿Hasta dónde?* *Hasta.*
A *church.* A *book-store.*	Una *iglesia.* Una *libreria.*
A *library.* As far as the church.	Una *biblioteca.* Hasta la iglesia.
How far do you go?	¿Hasta donde va V.?
I go as far as the book-store.	Voy hasta la libreria.
The workman eats much because he is very hungry.	El obrero come mucho porque tiene mucha hambre.
To cut. *To make a pen.*	*Cortar.* *Cortar una pluma.*
The *earth, land.* *Ever.*	La *tierra.* *Jamas.*
The *swan.* The *duck.*	El *cisne.* El ánade, la ánade.
To reign. The *tiger*, the *tigress.*	*Reinar.* El *tigre*, la *tigre.*
What are you cutting?	¿Que corta V.?
I am cutting the bread.	Corto el pan.
The lion and the tiger reign on the land; the swan reigns in the waters.	El leon y el tigre reinan en la tierra; el cisne reina en las aguas.
There are a thousand volumes in that library.	Hay mil tomos en esa biblioteca.
Does the duck ever live on land?	¿Vive jamas el ánade en la tierra?
The *elephant.* *Known.*	El *elefante.* *Conocido.*
Southern. The *nose*, snout.	*Meridional.* La nariz.
The *proboscis, trunk.* *To carry.*	La *trompa.* *Llevar.*
To employ. *Ivory.*	*Emplear.* *Marfil.*
A *work.* Works of ivory.	Una *obra.* Obras de marfil.
The *food.* The *mouth.*	El *alimento.* La *boca.*
He can not carry his food to his mouth.	No puede llevar el alimento á la loca.
The elephant lives in the southern plains of Africa.	El elefante vive en los campos meridionales de Africa.
To pull up. To pull up trees.	*Arrancar.* Arrancar árboles.

What is the weather? It is cloudy. What do you eat? I frequently eat eggs; but to-day I wish to eat fish. Why do you not make a fire, is it not cold? It is cold, and I wish to make a fire to warm me, but I have no axe to cut the wood. Does the duck live in the water or on the land? He lives sometimes in the water and sometimes on the land. Do the children cut their desks? Yes, sir; they cut their desks and their chairs. Do you ever eat lamb? We sometimes eat it. Does not the king of England reign in Scotland? He reigns in Scotland and in Ireland. Does not the lion reign over other animals? The lion and the tiger reign over the other animals on the land, and the swan reigns in the waters. Do you ever drink

coffee? I drink coffee sometimes, but I prefer tea. Where are the shovel and tongs? They are on the hearth near the fire. Has not that bachelor much money? He has much, but he wishes for still more. What is the matter with that scholar? He is tired. What o'clock is it? It is very early; it wants ten minutes of five. What does the seamstress break? She breaks many needles.

Does the captain prefer brandy to lemonade? He prefers it. Does he prefer Madeira wine to Champagne? No, sir; he prefers Champagne. Is that man the husband of your cousin? No, sir; he is a bachelor. Is not the elephant larger than the tiger? Yes, sir, the elephant is the largest of all quadrupeds (*cuadrupedos*) known. He is found (*se encuentra*) in the southern plains of Africa. His nose, which they call *trunk*, is long enough to reach the ground, (*para llegar al suelo*,) and it serves him (*le sirve*) to do what we do with the hand, and to carry his food to his mouth. Artisans (*los artesanos*) employ the teeth of the elephant to make works of ivory. He is very strong. With his trunk he pulls up trees. What will the carpenter wish for? He will wish for an axe and some wood. If thou seest some beautiful flowers, wilt thou wish for them? I shall wish for them. What will the scholars wish for? They will wish for easy lessons. What will you and your friend wish for? We shall wish for a basket full of beautiful flowers. You have a penknife; make me a pen.

Los caballos árabes[1] son hermosos y mas grandes que los bárbaros,[2] y mucho mas bien hechos.[3] Los mas hermosos caballos ingleses son semejantes á los árabes y á los bárbaros. Los caballos de Hollanda[4] son muy buenos para los carruajes.[5] El asno[6] no tiene las calidades del caballo, pero es de gran utilidad[7] en los campos. Compañero constante del aldeano[8] pobre, divide sus trabajos con él. Poco delicado[9] en el alimento come con indiferencia[10] de todo. Es lento,[11] indócil,[12] testarudo[13] pero paciente[14] y laborioso.[15] El caballo es mas hermoso que el asno y que el elefante. Es el mas hermoso de todos los cuadrúpedos conocidos. Los elefantes de las Indias y costas orientales de Africa son los mas grandes. El alimento ordinario del caballo son yerbas, ramas tiernas,[16] maiz,[17] y otros granos. El talle del caballo es mas grande que el del asno y su fuerza proporcionada[18] á su tamaño.

1, *Arabe*, Arabian. 2, *Bárbaro*, of Barbary. 3, *Mas bein hecho*, better formed. 4, *Holanda*, Holland. 5, *Carruaje*, carriage. 6, *Asno*, ass. 7, *Utili-*

dad, utility. 8, *Aldeano*, villager. 9, *Delicado*, delicate. 10, *Con indiferencia*, indifferently. 11, *Lento*, slow. 12, *Indócil*, indocile. 13, *Testarudo*, obstinate. 14, *Paciente*, patient. 15, *Laborioso*, laborious. 16, *Tierno*, tender. 17, *Maiz*, Indian corn. 18, *Proporcionado*, proportioned.

---

54. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA CUARTA.

IRREGULAR FUTURES.

THE FUTURE of all Spanish verbs, except those previously given, are formed by adding to the infinitive the terminations given in Les. 45, E, AS, A, EMOS, EIS, AN. Thus:—

INFINITIVE.		FUTURE TENSE.	
Buscar,	*Buscaré*,	*buscarás*,	*buscará*,
To seek.	I shall seek,	thou wilt seek.	he will seek,
	Buscaremos,	*buscareis*,	*buscarán*,
	We shall seek,	you will seek,	they will seek.
Vender,	*Venderé*,	*venderás*,	*venderá*,
To sell.	I shall sell,	thou wilt sell,	he will sell,
	Venderemos,	*vendereis*,	*venderán*,
	We shall sell.	you will sell,	they will sell.
Vivir,	*Viviré*,	*vivirás*,	*vivirá*,
To live.	I shall live,	thou wilt live,	he will live.
	Viviremos,	*vivireis*,	*vivirán*,
	We shall live,	you will live,	they will live.

The IRREGULAR FUTURES, all of which have been given in the preceding lessons, are the following:—

Caber,	future,	*Cabré*.	Les. 50.	*Querer*,	future,	*Querré*.	Les. 53.
Decir,	"	*Diré*.	" 49.	*Saber*,	"	*Sabré*.	" 51.
Haber,	"	*Habré*	" 53.	*Salir*,	"	*Saldré*.	" 52.
Hacer,	"	*Haré*.	" 47.	*Tener*,	"	*Tendré*,	" 42.
Poder,	"	*Podré*.	" 51.	*Valer*,	"	*Valdré*.	" 50.
Poner,	"	*Pondré*.	" 46.	*Venir*,	"	*Vendré*.	" 49.

Compound verbs follow the models of their primitives.*

---

* The following are compounds of the above irregular futures:—

Anteponer, to prefer.
Avenir, to happen.
Componer, to compose.
Contener, to contain.
* *Contrahacer*, to counterfeit.
Contravenir, to oppose.
Convenir, to agree.
Deponer, to put away.
Descomponer, to discompose.
Desconvenir, to disagree.
Deshacer, to undo.
Disponer, to dispose.
Entretener, to entertain.
Equivaler, to equal in value.
Exponer, to expose.
Imponer, to impose.
Indisponer, to indispose.
Intervenir, to intervene.
Oponer, to oppose.
Predecir, to predict.
Preponer, to prefer.
Presuponer, to presuppose.
Prevenir, to anticipate.
Proponer, to propose.
Rehacer, to do again.
Reponer, to put again.
Retener, to retain.
Revenirse, to become contracted.
Satisfacer, to satisfy.
Sobresalir, to excel.
Sobrevenir, to come upon.
Sostener, to support.

Shall you look for your knife?	¿Buscará V. su cuchillo?
I shall look for it.	Le buscaré.
Will the gentleman sell his horse?	¿Venderá el caballero su caballo?
Will you live in Spain?	¿Vivirán VV. en España?
We shall live in the United States.	Viviremos en los Estados Unidos.
How far wilt thou go?	¿Hasta donde irás?
I shall go as far as the church.	Iré hasta la iglésia.
When will you be at home?	¿Cuando estarán VV. en casa?
We shall be there the first of January.	Estaremos allá el primero de Enero.
That gentleman will be here the second of February.	Aquel caballero estará aquí el dos de febrero.
Will it rain? It will rain.	*¿Lloverá? Lloverá.*
A *fence*, *inclosure*. A *wall*.	Una *cerca*. Una *pared*.
The *mason*. *Around*.	El *albañil*. *Al rededor de*.
The mason will come soon.	El albañil vendrá pronto.
I shall see him to-day.	Le veré hoy.
Stupid. A *person*.	*Estúpido*. Una *persona*.
To belong to. A *verb*.	*Pertenecer á*. Un *verbo*.
The *present* of the *indicative*.	El *presente* de *indicativo*.
What will the boy do with his knife?	¿Que hará el muchacho con su cuchillo?
He will cut the fence with it.	Cortará la cerca con él.
Will the mason buy the bricks?	¿Comprará el albañil los ladrillos?
He will buy them, to make a wall around my garden.	Los comprará para hacer una pared al rededor de mi jardin.
What will you eat?	¿Que comerá V.?
I shall eat bread with butter, and I shall drink tea with milk.	Comeré pan con manteca (mantequilla,) y beberé té con leche.
The *turkey*. The *goose*.	El *pavo*, la *pava*. El *ganso*, lá *gansa*.
The swan is more beautiful than the turkey.	El cisne es mas hermoso que el pavo.
The goose is larger than the duck.	El ganso es mayor que el ánade.
Will kings ever reign here?	¿Reinarán jamas aquí los reyes?
They will never reign here.	No reinarán nunca aquí.
Wilt thou ever be rich?	¿Serás tú jamas rico?
I shall be rich in a few years.	Seré rico en pocos años.
A *waistcoat*. A *cup*.	Un *chaleco*. Una *taza*.
The *ball*. The *theater*.	El *baile*. El *teatro*.
Will you go to the ball?	¿Irá V. al baile?
No, sir; I shall go to the theater.	No, señor; iré al teatro.
The tailor is making a waistcoat.	El sastre hace un chaleco.
Will you take a cup of tea?	¿Tomará V. una taza de té?
No, madame; I will take coffee.	No, señora; tomaré café.

How far will those gentlemen go? They will go as far as the church. How far will you go? I shall go as far as the book-store. If you go to the neighbor's, will you see his library? I shall see it. When will you see Prince Albert? We shall see him next month. What will the weather be to-morrow? It will rain. Will it be cold next month? It will be very cold. What will the mason do? He will make a wall around the yard of my house, and the carpenter will make a fence around my garden. Will you eat potatoes and turnips with your fish? No, sir, I thank you; but I will eat some bread, and drink a glass of red wine. Where will the carpenter put his axe? He will put it on the floor. Will you write a letter? Yes, sir; if you will lend me your penknife to make a pen, I will write a letter to your father-in-law. Does the goose eat (*se come*) more than the turkey? The goose eats much; but I do not know whether (*si*) he eats more than the turkey.

What will the children eat? They will eat bread with butter. Will you eat chicken or fish? We will eat neither chicken nor fish, we will eat beef. Will you give the children knives? I will not give them knives, for they cut too much. What will you eat with the salt which is on your plate? I shall eat some fresh pork, potatoes, and turnips. Do you wish for a cup of coffee? No, madam; I will take a cup of tea. When will you go to school? I shall go very late. Will you go at half-past nine? No, sir; I shall go at noon. Will you make a fence of wood around your garden? Yes, sir; I shall make a fence of wood around my garden, and a brick wall around my yard. What is the weather? It is cloudy. Will it rain soon? Yes, sir; it begins to rain a little now. Is that man a bachelor? No, sir; he is the husband of my cousin.

Charles, are you acquainted with the son of our neighbor? I am acquainted with him, and I know that he is very stupid. How do you know that he is stupid? Because he does not know to what person a verb in the present of the indicative belongs. Is it possible, Charles? So (*tan*) possible is it that always when (*que*) I see him, I ask him what person is *amo*, and he does not know whether it is first, second, or third. I am not so stupid as he, for I know that *amo* is first person.

En toda sociedad[1] sea[2] de animales ó de hombres, la violencia hace los tiranos,[3] la dulce autoridad[4] hace los reyes. El leon y el tigre en la tierra, el águila y el buitre[5] en el aire, no reinan sinó para la guerra,[6] el cisne reina en las aguas con todos los títulos que establecen[7] un imperio[8] de paz.[9] Rey apacible de las aves acuáticas;[10] no teme los tiranos del aire, él espera[11] el águila sin provocar-[12] la y frecuentemente la victoria[13] corona[14] sus esfuerzos.[15] Todas las aves de rapiña[16] le respetan[17] y él conserva[18] la paz con toda naturaleza. El vive amigablemente,[19] mas que como rey en el medio[20] de la numerosa[21] multitud[22] de aves acuáticas que todas parecen sujetarse[23] á su ley; él no es sinó jefe,[24] el primer habitante[25] de una república[26] tranquila,[27] donde los ciudadanos[28] no tienen nada que temer de un amo que no pide[29] sinó lo que quieren concederle,[30] y no quiere sinó tranquilidad[31] y libertad.[32]

1, *Sociedad*, socjety. 2, *Sea*, (be it) whether. 3, *Tirano*, tyrant. 4, *Autoridad*, authority. 5, *Buitre*, vulture. 6, *Guerra*, war. 7, *Establecer*, to establish. 8, *Imperio*, empire. 9, *Paz*, peace. 10, *Acuático*, aquatic. 11, *Esperar*, to await. 12, *Provocar*, to provoke. 13, *Victoria*, victory. 14, *Coronar*, to crown. 15, *Esfuerzo*, effort. 16, *Rapiña*, rapine. 17, *Respetar*, to respect. 18, *Conservar*, to preserve. 19, *Amigablemente*, amicably. 20, *Medio*, midst. 21, *Numeroso*, numerous. 22, *Multitud*, multitude. 23, *Sujetar*, to subject. 24, *Jefe*, chief. 25, *Habitante*, inhabitant. 26, *República*, republic. 27, *Tranquilo*, tranquil. 28, *Ciudadano*, citizen. 29, *Pedir*, to ask, *pido*, *pides*, *pide*. 30, *Conceder*, to grant. 31, *Tranquilidad*, tranquility. 32, *Libertad*, liberty.

---

55. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA QUINTA.

PAST INDEFINITE.

Made, *done*.	*Hecho* (past participle of *Hacer*.)

Tener, to have, is a transitive verb, *haber*, to have is an auxiliary.

Said, *told*.	*Dicho*, (past part. of *Decir*.)
Seen.	*Visto*, (past part. of *Ver*.)
Been.	*Sido*, (past part. of *Ser*.)
Been.	*Estado*, (past part, of *Estar*.)
Had.	*Tenido*, (past part. of *Tener*.)

RULE. The PAST INDEFINITE is formed in Spanish as in English by joining the *past participle* to the *present tense* of the auxiliary *Haber*. The participle with *haber* is not varied to agree with its noun; in all other cases it agrees.

Yo he tenido,	*tú has tenido,*	*él ha tenido,*
I have had,	thou hast had,	he has had,
nosotros hemos tenido,	*vosotros habeis tenido,*	*ellos han tenido.*
we have had,	you have had,	they have had.
Yo he sido,	*tú has sido,*	*él ha sido,*
I have been,	thou hast been,	he has been,
nosotros hemos sido,	*vosotros habeis sido,*	*ellos han sido.*
we have been,	you have been,	they have been.
Yo he estado,	*tú has estado,*	*él ha estado,*
I have been,	thou hast been,	he has been,
nosotros hemos estado,	*vosotros habeis estado,*	*ellos han estado.*
we have been,	you have been,	they have been.
Yo he visto,	*tú has visto,*	*él ha visto,*
I have seen,	thou hast seen,	he has seen,
nosotros hemos visto,	*vosotros habéis visto,*	*ellos han visto.*
we have seen,	you have seen,	they have seen.

A *grandson.* A *granddaughter.*	Un *nieto.* Una *nieta.*
Yesterday. The *table-cloth.*	*Ayer.* El *mantel.*
Blind. *Deaf.*	*Ciego.* *Sordo.*
The *market.* The *soldier.*	La *plaza.* El *soldado.*
Hast thou had my pen?	¿ Has tenido tú mi pluma ?
I have not had it, but that little child has had it.	No la he tenido, pero ese niñito la ha tenido.

REMARK 1. The subject in Spanish is not to be placed between the auxiliary and the verb.

Have you had my books?	¿ Han tenido VV. mis libros ?
We have had them.	Los hemos tenido.

REMARK 2. *Grande* meaning great in merit loses its final syllable before a substantive beginning with a consonant, meaning great in size it is unchanged and generally placed after the noun. *Pobre, pequeño, alguno* vary their meaning before and after the noun. 313

A great woman. *Una grande mujer.*	A large woman. *Una mujer grande.*
A pitiful man. *Un pobre hombre.*	An indigent man. *Un hombre pobre.*
An insignificant man. *Un pequeño hombre.*	A small man. *Un hombre pequeño.*
Some man. *Algun hombre.*	Any man. *Hombre alguno.*
Where hast thou been?	¿ Donde has estado ?
I have been at the ball.	He estado en el baile.
Have you been at the theatre?	¿ Han estado VV. en el teatro ?
We have been.	Hemos estado.
Hast thou been blind?	¿ Has sido tú ciego ?
I have been blind, but now I see.	He sido ciego, pero ahora veo.
The grandson of the general has been deaf.	El nieto del general ha sido sordo.
Have you seen the granddaughter of Mrs. B.?	¿ Han visto VV. á la nieta de la señora B ?
We have see her.	La hemos visto.
What has that man said to thee?	¿ Que le ha dicho á V. aquel hombre ?

He has said nothing to me.	Nada me ha dicho. No me ha dicho nada.
What hast thou done?	¿Que has hecho?
I have made some fire.	He hecho fuego.

REMARK 3. This tense is often used for past time, although *have* or *has* is not employed in English.

Did the tailor make you a vest?	¿Ha hecho el sastre un chaleco para V.?
He made me one.	Me ha hecho uno.
I saw the captain's grandson this morning.	He visto al nieto del capitan esta mañana.
The carpenters made the fence.	Los carpinteros han hecho la cerca.

Have the scholars done what the master told them? They have done it. What has the mason done? He has made a brick (*de ladrillos*) wall around my garden. Who made the stone wall around that house? The masons of my grandfather made it. What did you say to your relation? I said many things to him. Did you tell him that I shall be at home to-morrow? I did not tell it to him because to-morrow will be Sunday, and you always go to church on Sunday. What has the tailor made for you? He has made me a coat and two vests. Have the grandsons of our neighbor told him what they are studying? They have told it to him. What did you tell the tailors? We told them that we have our clothes. Whom hast thou seen to-day? I have seen my grandfather and all my cousins. Have you seen the great serpent which the soldier has in the street? We have not seen it. Where have you been this morning? I have been to the market and have seen a fish very large; I have a desire (*gana*) to buy it for my friends. Have you been to the theatre? No sir; we have been to the ball.

Hast thou been always rich? No sir; I have sometimes been poor. Have those soldiers always been brave? They have always been brave. Has the granddaughter of your uncle been always pretty? She has always been pretty and amiable. Are you hungry? I am not hungry; but I have been very thirsty. Who has had my gold watch? The spouse of the Frenchman has had it. Have you had books from this library? We have had some from it. Is the wind in the east? No sir; it is in the west. What is the matter with you? I am

very hungry. Do you like pies? I like them much. Do you like fresh pork? No sir; I prefer lamb. How is the weather now? It is very cloudy. Will it be windy to-morrow? I do not know whether it will be windy to-morrow; but it is not windy now. Has your father-in-law been to the market? No sir; he has been at the house of your step-father. Where will the captain's son-in-law be at midnight? He will be at the theatre, and his sister will be at the ball. What does that washerwoman wish? She wishes to wash some handkerchiefs for that gentleman and for his daughter-in-law. What does that gentleman wish to buy? He wishes to buy some salt and some oil.

Las gracias[1] de la figura, la belleza de la forma corresponden[2] á la dulzura natural del cisne; agrada[3] á todos los ojos que le ven; adorna,[4] embellece[5] todos los lugares que frecuenta,[6] es amado,[7] aplaudido,[8] admirado;[9] ninguna otra especie de animal lo merece mejor. La naturaleza, en efecto,[10] no ha distribuido[11] sobre otro animal tantas gracias nobles y dulces que nos recuerdan[12] la idea de sus mas elegantes[13] obras.[14] La figura de su cuerpo, formas redondas,[15] graciosos[16] contornos,[17] blancura[18] resplandeciente[19] y pura,[20] movimientos flexibles y marcados, actitudes[21] unas veces animadas,[22] otras negligentes[23] en un suave abandono,[24] todo en el cisne manifiesta[25] el placer,[26] el encanto[27] que nos hacen apercibir[28] las gracias y la belleza, todo nos le anuncia,[29] todo nos le pinta[30] como el ave del amor.

1, *Gracia*, grace. 2, *Corresponder*, to correspond. 3, *Agradar*, to please. 4, *Adornar*, to adorn. 5, *Embellecer*, to embellish. 6, *Frecuentar*, to frequent. 7, *Amado*, loved. 8, *Aplaudido*, applauded. 9, *Admirado*, admired. 10, *Efecto*, effect. 11, *Distribuido*, bestowed. 12, *Recordar*, to remind, *recuerdo*, *recuerdas*, etc. 13, *Elegante*, elegant. 14, *Obra*, work. 15, *Redondo*, round. 16, *Gracioso*, graceful. 17, *Contorno*, contour. 18, *Blancura*, whiteness. 19, *Resplandeciente*, brilliant. 20, *Puro*, pure. 21, *Actitud*, attitude. 22, *Animado*, animated. 23, *Negligente*, negligent. 24, *Abandono*, abandonment. 25, *Manifestar*, to manifest (varied like *cerrar*, Les. 33,) *manifiesto*, *manifiestas*, *manifiesta*, etc. 26, *Placer*, pleasure. 27, *Encanto*, enchantment. 28, *Percibir*, to perceive. 29, *Anunciar*, to announce. 30, *Pintar*, to paint.

---

56. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA SEXTA.

VERBS, PARTICIPLES, ETC.

To cover. To open.	*Cubrir. Abrir.*
Why do you open the door?	¿Porqué abre V. la puerta?

I open it because I am too warm.	La abro porque tengo demasiado calor.
We open our windows and you open yours when it is warm.	Abrimos nuestras ventanas y VV. abren las suyas cuando hace calor.
To shine. The *sun.*	*Lucir.* El *sol.*
Before. Before six o'clock.	*Antes.* Antes de las seis.
A *part.* The *cloud.*	Una *parte.* La *nube.*
The sun shines.	El sol luce, luce el sol, or hace sol.
To carry. *To bring.*	*Llevar.* *Traer.*

Traer has the first person singular, *traigo*, the others regular.

I bring you a letter.	Traigo á V. una carta.
Why do you cover that child's head?	¿ Porqué cubre V. la cabeza á ese niño?
I cover it because it is cold.	Se la cubro porque hace frio.
Does the sun shine?	¿ Luce el sol? or ¿ hace sol?
No sir; the clouds cover it.	No señor; las nubes le cubren.
Opened, open.	*Abierto*, (past part. of *Abrir.*)
Covered.	*Cubierto*, (past part. of *Cubrir.*)
Placed, put.	*Puesto*, (past part. of *Poner.*)
Written.	*Escrito*, (past part. of *Escribir.*)
The *broth*, chicken broth.	El *caldo*, caldo de gallina.
A *piece.* *To divide.*	Un *pedazo.* *Dividir.*
A *reply, answer.* Until to-morrow.	Una *respuesta.* Hasta mañana.
Why have you opened the windows?	¿ Porqué ha abierto V. las ventanas?
I have opened them because it is warm.	Las he abierto porque hace calor.
The *table-cloth.* With the table-cloth.	El *mantel.* Con el mantel.
The servant has covered the table.	El criado ha cubierto la mesa.
What do you bring?	¿ Que traen VV.?
We bring all the letters which your friends have written.	Traemos todas las cartas que los amigos de V. han escrito.
What have the servants put on the table?	¿ Que han puesto los criados sobre la mesa?
They have put the broth on it.	Han puesto el caldo sobre ella.
Have you written all your letters?	¿ Han escrito VV. todas sus cartas?
We have written them all.	Las hemos escrito todas.
Why do you divide that cake?	¿ Porque divide V. ese bollo?
I divide it in order to give the pieces to my friends.	Le divido para dar los pedazos á mis amigos.
Open the door.	Abra la puerta.
To mend.	*Remendar* (varied* like *Cerrar*, Les. 38.)
The tailor mends my waistcoat and the shoemakers mend my shoes.	El sastre remienda mi chaleco, y los zapateros remiendan mis zapatos.
To conduct.	*Conducir* (varied as *conocer*, Les. 39.)

* When a verb is thus said to be varied as another, the present tense only is spoken of.

Where do you conduct that gentleman?	¿ Adonde conduce V. ese caballero?
I conduct him to the church.	Le conduzco á la iglesia.
The boy carries my note to the stranger and brings his reply.	El mozo lleva mi billete al estranjero y trae su respuesta.
All my clothes are contained in the drawers of that bureau.	Toda mi ropa cabe en los cajones de esa cómoda.

REMARK. The past participle used as an adjective agrees with its substantive in gender and number.

That carpenter has made these trunks, and they are very well made.	Ese carpintero ha hecho estos baules, y son muy bien hechos.
The table is covered with the table-cloth.	La mesa está cubierta con el mantel.

Do you open your windows early? I open them at six o'clock, and my neighbors open theirs at half-past six. At what hour do you open yours? We open ours late, for we do not open them before a quarter past seven. Why dost thou open the drawer of thy desk? I open it to look for my papers. What is the weather? It is cloudy. Does not the sun shine? No sir; the clouds cover it. Are you covering your floor? I am covering it with a beautiful carpet. Does the sun shine more here than in England? It shines much more here than in England. Where has the servant put the broth? He has put it on the table. Has he covered the table with the table-cloth? He has covered it. Does he often leave the door open in winter? He often leaves it open. Why has he opened the door? He has opened it because it is too warm in this room. Who is willing to carry these books to the bookstore? The boy is willing to carry them there and to bring others. Where does he carry your letters? He carries mine to my friend, and he brings me his. What do you bring me? I bring you good fruit. Carry it to the master. Carry it to him.

What does the seamstress mend? She mends my gloves and the tailors mend my waistcoats. Into how many parts do you divide your orange? I divide it into two parts. What do the servants carry? They carry wood to make a fire because it is cold. Where is that boy going? He is going to carry my note to Mr. B., and to bring his reply. Will he bring his reply at ten? No sir; he will not bring it before half-past twelve. What do you carry to that

little child? I carry a piece of cake and two pieces of melon to him. Where do you conduct that lady? I conduct her to the theatre. Where do you conduct the general? We conduct him to his home. Are twenty-five pounds of butter worth more than a hundred weight of flour? No sir; a hundred weight of flour is worth as much as twenty-five pounds of butter. Is an ounce of silver worth twenty-five cents? It is worth more than twenty-five cents. Do you like spring more than summer? Yes sir; and I like autumn more than winter. Are there many lakes in the United States? There are very many. Do you like beer more than brandy? Yes sir; and I like lemonade more than red wine. Open the door and the windows. Do not shut them.

Engreido[1] de su nobleza,[2] zeloso[3] de su belleza, el cisne parece hacer aprecio[4] de todas las ventajas;[5] parece que busca sufragios,[6] que trata[7] de cautivar[8] las miradas[9] y las cautiva en efecto. Por su flexibilidad,[10] por la facilidad[11] y la libertad de sus movimientos en el agua debe[12] reconocerse,[13] no solamente como el primero de los navegadores[14] con alas, sinó como el mas bello modelo[15] que la naturaleza nos da para la náutica.[16] Su cuello[17] elevado y su pecho[18] realzado[19] y redondo, parece en efecto figurar[20] la proa[21] de un buque;[22] su ancho[23] vientre[24] representa[25] la carena,[26] su cola es un verdadero timon,[27] sus piés son remos[28] anchos y sus grandes alas medio abiertas al viento y suavemente[29] infladas[30] son las velas[31] que dan impulso[32] al buque animado, navio[33] y piloto[34] al mismo tiempo.

1. *Engreido*, proud. 2, *Nobleza*, nobility. 3, *Zeloso*, jealous. 4, *Hacer aprecio* (to make estimation) to value. 5, *Ventaja*, advantage. 6, *Sufragio*, favor. 7, *Tratar*, (to have a care) to seek. 8, *Cautivar*, to captivate. 9, *Mirada*, regard. 10, *Flexibilidad*, flexibility. 11, *Facilidad*, ease. 12, *Deber*, (to owe) ought. 13, *Reconocerse*, to be recognized. 14, *Navegador*, navigator. 15, *Modelo*, model. 16, *Náutica*, navigation. 17, *Cuello*, neck. 18, *Pecho*, breast. 19, *Realzado*, raised. 20, *Figurar*, to represent. 21, *Proa*, prow. 22, *Buque*, vessel. 23, *Ancho*, broad. 24, *Vientre*, body. 25, *Representar*, to represent. 26, *Carena*, hull. 27, *Timon*, helm. 28, *Remo*, oar. 29, *Suavemente*, gently. 30, *Inflado*, inflated. 31, *Vela*, sail. 32, *Impulso*, impulso. 33, *Navio*, ship. 34, *Piloto*, pilot.

---

57. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

VERBS, PARTICIPLES, ETC.

Theft. Robbery.	El *hurto*. El *robo*.
Murder. The *appetite.*	El *asesinato*. El *apetito*.

Regular. Castilian.	*Regular. Castellano.*
Tongue, language. Singular.	*Lengua. Singular.*
For example. To kill.	*Por ejemplo. Matar.*
There are many irregular verbs in the Castilian language.	Hay muchos verbos irregulares en la lengua castellana.
To return, to come or *go back.*	*Volver*, (varied like *Mover*, Les. 37.)
I come at six and return at seven.	Vengo á las seis y vuelvo á las siete.
He returns early.	Vuelve temprano.
When do you return?	¿Cuando vuelven VV.?
We return at six in the evening.	Volvemos á las seis de la tarde.
Returned.	*Vuelto*, (past part. of *volver.*)
He has not returned.	El no ha vuelto.
To dissolve. Dissolved.	*Disolver* (as *Mover.*) *Disuelto.*
What do you dissolve?	¿Que disuelve V.?
I dissolve sugar.	Disuelvo azúcar.
I have dissolved some salt.	He disuelto sal.
To satisfy.	*Satisfacer*, (varied as *Hacer*, Les. 34.)
Do you satisfy your master?	¿Satisface V. á su maestro?
I satisfy him.	Le satisfago.
Satisfied.	*Satisfecho*, (past part. of *satisfacer.*)
Have you satisfied your appetites?	¿Han satisfecho VV. sus apetitos?
We have satisfied them.	Los hemos satisfecho.
To die.	*Morir* (varied as *Mover*, Les. 37.)
Almost. Almost all.	*Casi.* Casi todo.
I almost die of heat in summer, and my brother almost dies of cold in winter.	Casi muero de calor en el verano, y mi hermano casi muere de frio en el invierno.
We almost die of thirst.	Casi morimos de sed.
Every day many persons die.	Todos los dias muchas personas mueren.
Died.	*Muerto* (past part. of *Morir.*)
Has he died? He has died.	¿Ha muerto él? Ha muerto.
The *printer. To finish, end.*	El *impresor. Acabar.*
To print. Printed.	*Imprimir* (past part. *Impreso.*)
He wishes to print his books.	Quiere imprimir sus libros.
The printer prints books.	El impresor imprime libros.
He has printed a hundred today.	Ha impreso cien hoy.
They have printed a thousand.	Han impreso mil.
To accuse. To accuse of robbery.	*Acusar.* Acusar de robo.
Do you accuse that man of murder?	¿Acusa V. á ese hombre de asesinato?
No sir; I accuse him of theft.	No señor; le acuso de hurto.
We have accused him of theft.	Le hemos acusado de hurto.
I kill birds.	Yo mato aves.
We kill rabbits.	Matamos conejos.

Of what do you accuse that man? I accuse him of robbery. Do those men accuse him of murder? They do not accuse him of murder, but of theft. At what hour do you go to the market? I go to the market at six, and return at seven. Where has your brother-in-law gone (*idlo*)? He has gone to New York, but he will return in April. That soldier has been very hungry; has he satisfied his appetite? He has satisfied it, for he has eaten much. Have you a desire to satisfy the master? I have a desire to satisfy him. Do you satisfy him? I do satisfy him, because I study much, and he says that I learn well.

Do you know, Charles, what person of the verb *amo* is? Yes, sir; for I know that in all the regular verbs of the first conjugation (*conjugacion*) in the Castilian language, the first person singular (*de singular*,) in the present of the indicative ends in *o*; for example, *I love my father.* The second person ends in *as*; as, *Thou buyest bread in the baker's shop* (*panadería*). The third ends in *a*; as, *My brother sings well, but plays badly* (*toca mal.*) The first person plural (*de plural*) ends in *mos*; as, *We kill birds with the gun.* The third person plural ends in *an*; as *My brothers dance* (*bailan*) *but do not play* (*tocan*). Charles, have the verbs of the Castilian language no second person plural? Yes, but only kings, bishops (*obispos*), fathers, masters, and persons of dignity (*dignidad*) use it (*la usan*). For example, when the king speaks to his soldiers, and says to them; *You fight* (*peleais*) *with bravery* (*valor*), or, when the bishop says to his parishioners (*feligreses*); *You love wine more than virtue* (*virtud*); or, when a father says to his sons; *You study more than the other boys.*

Where are your clothes (*ropa*)? They are contained in the drawer of this bureau. Where do you live? I live near the lake. Is a barrel of cider worth as much as a barrel of flour? No, sir; a barrel of flour is worth two barrels of cider. Do you like oranges? Yes, sir; I like oranges better than apples. What wine do you like? I like champagne wine. When will your father return? He will return to-morrow. Speak to the printer. Speak to him. Give the needles to the seamstress. Give them to her.

Las flores son el adorno[1] de la tierra y el ornamento[2] de nuestras moradas.[3] Las flores principales de nuestros jardines son la rosa,[4] el clavel,[5] el jonquillo,[6] la violeta,[7] el jasmin[8] y el tulipan.[9] Los árboles son el ornamento de la tierra. Los principales frutales[10] propios[11] para el alimento[12] del hombre son el manzano[13] el peral,[14] el duraznero,[15] el ciruelo,[16] el cerezo,[17] el naranjo,[18] y el nogal.[19] El reino de Francia es mas grande que el de Inglaterra, y el de Dinamarca es mas pequeño que el de Inglaterra.

El raton[20] come[21] ordinariamente[22] granos. Un raton grande es mas malo, y casi tan fuerte como un gato nuevo.[23] La ardilla[24] es un animal bonito y pequeño. Come ordinariamente frutas; está casi siempre en el aire como las aves. Los árboles que no producen frutos propios para el alimento del hombre son la encina,[25] el olmo,[26] el fresno,[27] y el pino.[28] Dios ha hecho las ballenas[29] y todos los peces del mar. Ha hecho tambien los animales terrestres.[30]

1, *Adorno*, decoration. 2, *Ornamento*, ornament. 3, *Morada*, dwelling. 4, *Rosa*, rose. 5, *Clavel*, pink. 6, *Jonquillo*, jonquille. 7, *Violeta*, violet. 8, *Jasmin*, jessamine. 9, *Tulipan*, tulip. 10, *Frutal*, fruit-tree. 11, *Propio*, proper. 12, *Alimento*, aliment. 13, *Manzano*, apple-tree. 14, *Peral*, pear-tree. 15, *Duraznero*, peach-tree. 16, *Ciruelo*, plum-tree. 17, *Cerezo*, cherry-tree. 18, *Naranjo*, orange-tree. 19, *Nogal*, walnut-tree. 20, *Raton*, rat. 21, *Come*, eats. 22, *Ordinariamente*, commonly. 23, *Nuevo*, young. 24, *Ardilla*, squirrel. 25, *Encina*, oak. 26, *Olmo*, elm. 27, *Fresno*, ash. 28, *Pino*, pine. 29, *Ballena*, whale. 30, *Terrestre*, of the land.

---

58. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA OCTAVA.

PAST PARTICIPLES.

All PAST PARTICIPLES which form tenses of the verb* with *Haber*, with the exception of those already given and their compounds, are formed by the following general rule. Change *ar* final of the infinitive in the first conjugation into *ado*, and *er*, and *ir* final in the second and third into *ido*.

FIRST CONJUGATION.		INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLE.
To speak.	*spoken.*	Hablar,	hablado.
To carry.	*carried.*	Llevar,	llevado.
To accuse.	*accused.*	Acusar,	acusado.
To kill.	*killed.*	Matar,	matado.

* Some Spanish verbs have both a regular and an irregular participle, but as these irregular ones never form tenses of the verb, but are only used like adjectives, they need not be given here. The following, however, may be used with *haber*, like the regular ones; *ingerto*, grafted; *opreso*, oppressed; *preso*, caught; *provisto*, provided; *roto*, broken; *supreso*, suppressed.

SECOND CONJUGATION.		INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLE.
To eat.	*eaten.*	Comer,	*comido.*
To drink.	*drunk.*	Beber,	*bebido.*
To bring.	*brought.*	Traer,	*traido.*
To answer, reply.	*answered, replied.*	*Responder,*	*respondido.*
THIRD CONJUGATION.		INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLE.
To live.	*lived.*	Vivir,	*vivido.*
To receive.	*received.*	Recibir,	*recibido.*
To prefer.	*preferred.*	Preferir,	*preferido.*
To ask for.	*asked for.*	*Pedir,*	*pedido.*

The IRREGULAR PARTICIPLES, all of which have been given in the preceding lessons are these*

Abierto, past part. of	*Abrir,*	Les. 56.		*Impreso,* past part. of	*Imprimir,*	Les. 57.	
Cubierto, "	*Cubrir,*	" 56.		*Muerto,* "	*Morir,*	" 57.	
Dicho, "	*Decir,*	" 55.		*Puesto,* "	*Poner,*	" 56.	
Disuelto, "	*Disolver,*	" 57.		*Satisfecho,* "	*Satisfacer,*	" 57.	
Escrito, "	*Escribir,*	" 56.		*Visto,* "	*Ver,*	" 55.	
Hecho, "	*Hacer,*	" 55.		*Vuelto,* "	*Volver,*	" 57.	

Yo *pido,*	*tú pides,*	*él pide,*	*nosotros pedimos,*	*vosotros pedis,*	*ellos piden.*
I ask for,	thou askest for,	he asks for,	we ask for,	you ask for,	they ask for.

Pedir takes *á* before the person, the thing asked for being the direct object.

What do you ask of that boy?	¿ Que pide V. á ese muchacho?
I ask him for his penknife.	Le pido su cortaplumas.
Do you ask the scholar for his books?	¿ Piden VV. sus libros al discípulo?
We ask him for them.	Se los pedimos.
Have you asked your brother for his horse?	¿ Ha pedido V. su caballo al hermano de V.?
I have asked him for it.	Se le he pedido.
At what o'clock do you return from school?	¿ A que hora vuelven VV. de la escuela?
We return at four.	Volvemos á las cuatro.
The sick man has died.	El enfermo ha muerto.
Many die in summer.	Muchos mueren en el verano.
With whom have you spoken?	¿ Con quien ha hablado V.?

* The following compounds form their participles like the above simple verbs.

INF. PART.	INF. PART.	INF. PART.
Absolver, *absuelto.*	Deshacer, *deshecho.*	Prever, *previsto.*
Anteponer, *antepuesto.*	Disponer, *dispuesto.*	Proponer, *propuesto.*
Antever, *antevisto.*	Encubrir, *encubierto.*	Proscribir, *proscrito.*
Componer, *compuesto.*	Envolver, *envuelto.*	Rehacer, *rehecho.*
Contradecir, *contradicho.*	Esponer, *espuesto.*	Reponer, *repuesto.*
Contrahacer, *contrahecho.*	Imponer, *impuesto.*	Resolver, *resuelto.*
Deponer, *depuesto.*	Indisponer, *indispuesto.*	Rever, *revisto.*
Descomponer, *descompuesto.*	Oponer, *opuesto.*	Revolver, *revuelto.*
Descubrir, *descubierto.*	Predecir, *predicho.*	Sobreponer, *sobrepuesto.*
Desdecirse, *desdicho.*	Preponer, *prepuesto.*	Suponer, *supuesto.*
Desenvolver, *desenvuelto.*	Presuponer, *presupuesto.*	Trasponer, *traspuesto.*

I have spoken with your brother. He hablado con su hermano de V.
What have you killed?
We have killed birds.
Do you answer that man?
I answer him.
Have you replied to his letter?
I have replied to it.
He has always lived in the cou
We have preferred to live in th
I am going to ask my father fo

Do the servants satisf
You eat little, do you sat
sick man wish to die? H
mer better than the winter
in summer I almost die c
mals die easier than other
tigers. Does the serpent
does the printer wish to
print many? He prin
write? We do not prin
this week? No, sir;
friends print more than

You have spoken to
nothing to him; but he
and brought me his re
They have accused hi
killed? They have k
(*patos*), in that lake?
every day. Do you ki
keys nor geese; but
eaten and drunk suff
drink one more cup of
you some beer? He has brought us some beer, some brandy, and
some red wine; we have drunk the beer, and he has carried the
brandy and the red wine home. Have you always preferred cider
to lemonade? No, sir; I have always preferred lemonade to cider.

Do you wish to reply to your friend's note? I have replied to it. Do you always reply quickly to the letters which you receive? I always answer them quickly, and I frequently do it the same day.

Do you answer all your brothers' letters? We answer them all. Have you answered the notes of my cousin? No, sir; but we are going to answer them now. Have you received the Madeira wine which my father has sent you? I have received it, and I have asked the merchant for some champagne. Do you ask your father for much money? I do not ask him for any. For what do those seamstresses ask? They ask for money to buy pins and needles

GRUTA MARAVILLOSA[1] DE ANTIPAROS. Antiparos se llama[2] así, porque está[3] al lado opuesto[3] de Paros; no tiene sinó cinco leguas[4] de circunferencia[5]; el pais está muy bien cultivado,[6] pero el vino y el algodon son sus principales riquezas.[7] En este país se ve[8] una famosa[9] gruta que es considerada[10] como una de las mas admirables maravillas[11] de la naturaleza. Una caverna[12] rústica[13] le sirve[14] de entrada.[15] Esta caverna está dividida naturalmente[16] en dos partes por algunas masas[17] de piedra que parecen torres,[18] sobre la mas grande de las cuales se ve una inscripcion[19] griega[20] muy antigua. Se baja[21] de esta caverna con escaleras[22] ó sogas[23] á muchos precipicios[24] que tienen ciento cincuenta brazas[25] de profundidad,[26] y despues se llega[27] á la gruta cuyo alto es como de[28] cuarenta brazas y como cincuenta de ancho.[29]

1, ***Maravilloso***, wonderful. 2, Llamarse, to be called. 3, ***Opuesto*** (opposed) opposite. 4, ***Legua***, league. 5, ***Circunferencia***, circumference. 6, ***Cultivado***, cultivated. 7, ***Riqueza***, riches. 8, ***Verse***, to be seen. 9, ***Famoso***, famous. 10, ***Considerado***, considered. 11, ***Maravilla***, wonder. 12, ***Caverna***, cavern. 13, ***Rústico***, rural. 14, ***Servir***, to serve. 15, ***Entrada***, entrance. 16, ***Naturalmente***, naturally. 17, ***Masa***, mass. 18, ***Torre***, tower. 19, ***Inscripcion***, inscription. 20, ***Griego***, Greek. 21, ***Bajarse***, to descend. 22, ***Escalera***, ladder. 23, ***Soga***, rope. 24, ***Precipicio***, precipice. 25, ***Braza***, fathom. 26, ***Profundidad***, depth. 27, ***Llegar***, to arrive. 28, ***Como de***, about. 29, ***Ancho***, breadth.

---

59. LECCION QUINCUAGÉSIMA NONA.

NOUNS, ADVERBS, ETC.

Beauty. The *word.*	La *belleza.* La *palabra.*
The ***bottom.*** At the bottom.	El *fondo.* Al fondo.

The *end*. At the end.	El *cabo*, el *fin*. Al cabo, al fin.
The *side*. At the side.	El *lado*. Al lado.
The *road*. *Yesterday*.	El *camino*. *Ayer*.
By the side of the road.	Al lado del camino.
At the end of the street.	Al fin de la calle.
The day after to-morrow.	*Pasado mañana*.
The day before yesterday.	*Antes de ayer*, *anteayer*.
The *service*. *Necessary*.	El *servicio*. *Necesario*.
His services are useful.	Sus servicios son útiles.
It is necessary to study.	Es necesario estudiar.
A *shop* also *tent*. A *shopkeeper*.	Una *tienda*. Un *tendero*.
Lazy. A lazy servant.	*Perezoso*. Un criado perezoso.
Dry. The dry tree.	*Seco*. El árbol seco.
It is dry weather.	El tiempo está seco.
All day. The *dust*.	*Todo el dia*. El *polvo*.
There is much dust.	Hay mucho polvo.
The *countryman*. The *countrywoman*.	El *paisano*. La *paisana*.
Are you right to tear your book?	¿ Tiene V. razon de rasgar su libro ?
Have you learned all these words?	¿ Ha aprendido V. todas estas palabras ?
There is wine at the bottom of the barrel.	Hay vino en el fondo del barril.
He has gone to the end of the street.	El ha ido al fin de la calle.
I have wished to go to the shop.	He querido ir á la tienda.
We have seen the shopkeeper.	Hemos visto al tendero.
There are trees by the road side.	Hay árboles al lado del camino.
I have taken two cups of tea.	He tomado dos tazas de té.
We knocked at your door.	Hemos tocado á su puerta.
The servants called the children.	Los criados han llamado á los niños.
The scholars have studied much, and the master has given them books.	Los discípulos han estudiado mucho y el maestro les ha dado libros.
Have you sold your wooden trunk?	¿ Ha vendido V. su baul de madera ?
Yes, sir; and I have bought another.	Si señor; y he comprado otro.
The countryman will come the day after to-morrow.	El paisano vendrá pasado mañana.
I have never been colder than the day before yesterday.	Nunca he tenido mas frio que ántes de ayer (or anteayer.)
That boy is lazy.	Ese mozo es perezoso.
I live at the end of this street.	Vivo al fin de esta calle.
The wind has raised much dust.	El viento ha levantado mucho polvo.
The countrywoman is satisfied with her beauty.	La paisana está satisfecha de su belleza.
The clouds have covered the sun.	Las nubes han cubierto el sol.
Since. Since yesterday.	*Desde*. Desde ayer.

After. After dining.

I speak of Bacon, a very wise man.

Depues. Depues de comer.

Hablo de Bacon, hombre muy sabio, Les. 52, Rem. 1. (p. 123.)

What has that shopkeeper done? He has sung some good songs. Do ducks (*patos*) move their wings easily? They move them very easily. Have you bought the wooden trunk or the leather one? I have bought the wooden one. Do your cousins sing better than you? No, madam; we have always sung better than they. Have the scholars learnt all the words in their lessons? They have not learnt them, because they are lazy, and have not studied much. Have you written all the words of this lesson? I have written them all. Where has the countryman put his money? He has put it in the bottom of his trunk. Where does the countryman live? He lives in the country, by the side of the road. When will you go to his house? I shall go there to-morrow, and I shall return the day after to-morrow. When have you seen the countrywoman? I have not seen her since the day before yesterday. What is it necessary to do in order to learn Spanish? It is necessary to study much. Have you been in the shop of that shopkeeper to-day? No, sir; I have not been there since the day before yesterday, and I shall not go there again until the day after to-morrow. Who is that man? It is John, the brother of my friend, (Les. 52, Rem. 1.) (p. 123)

Is not that boy useful to his master? He is very useful, and his master is satisfied with his services. How do you like this country (*pais*)? I like it much, because its beauty is very great. How is the weather to-day? It is bad weather. Does the sun shine? No, sir; the sun has not shone (*lucido*) to-day. Is not the weather dry? No, sir; it has rained (*llovido*) all day. What did that man say to you? He said to me that he made that trunk, and I have never seen one better made. Why has the servant covered the plates with the table-cloth? He has covered them because the weather is dry, and the wind raises much dust. Is not Miss C. very beautiful? She is very much satisfied with her beauty, but she is not so pretty as she thinks (*cree*). Where does the painter live? He lives at the end of this street. Has that sick man any appetite? He has some

appetite, for he has eaten (*tomado*) all his broth. What have you given to that boy? I have given him a piece of cake.

What time is it? It is late. Is it noon? It is near one. When will you come to my house? I will come at a quarter past two. Have you put the notes which you received into your pocket-book? No, sir; I have put them on the table. How far has the blind man (*el ciego*) gone? He has gone as far as the deaf man's. Has the bachelor gone to the ball? No, sir; he has gone to the theatre. Where has your brother-in-law gone? He has gone to the library, and to the bookstore.

GRUTA MARAVILLOSA DE ANTIPAROS. El camino está cubierto en muchos lugares de masas en relieve,[1] de donde penden[2] viñas[3] de un largo extraordinario.[4] Los lados de la gruta parecen adornados[5] de cortinas[6] transparentes que se estienden[7] en todas direcciones[8] y que dejan algunos vacíos[9] en forma de torres huecas[10] que parecen otros tantos gabinetes[11] al rededor de esta sala.[12] Todas estas maravillosas masas son de mármol[13] blanco y transparente[14] que se rompe como el cristal,[15] y que da un sonido[16] claro[17] cuando le tocan. Cerca de la entrada de la gruta, en la estremidad[18] de una roca, se ven[19] algunas columnas[20] semejantes á troncos[21] de árboles. El objeto mas admirable es una pirámide[22] aislada[23] de veinte y cuatro piés de alto y cargada[24] de ornamentos en forma de grandes ramos[25] de una blancura resplandeciente, tan bellos[26] y tan perfectos[27] como los que salen de las manos de un artífice[28].

1. *Relieve*, relief. 2, *Pender*, to hang. 3, *Viña*, vine. 4, *Extraordinario*, extraordinary. 5, *Adornado*, adorned. 6, *Cortina*, curtain. 7, *Estender*, to extend, (varied like *querer*, Les. 10). 8, *Direccion*, direction. 9, *Vacío*, void. 10, *Hueco*, hollow. 11, *Gabinete*, *closet*. 12, *Sala*, hall. 13, *Mármol*, marble. 14, *Transparente*, transparent. 15, *Cristal*, crystal. 16, *Sonido*, sound. 17, *Claro*, clear. 18, *Estremidad*, extremity. 19, *Verse*, to be seen. 20, *Columna*, column. 21, *Tronco*, trunk. 22, *Pirámide*, pyramid. 23, *Aislado*, isolated. 24, *Cargado*, loaded. 25, *Ramo*, branch of a tree. 26, *Bello*, beautiful. 27, *Perfecto*, perfect. 28, *Artífice*, artificer.

---

60. LECCION SEXAGESIMA.

VERBS, PARTICIPLES, ETC.

Somewhere. No where, not any where. Alguna parte. Ninguna parte.
In this *country*. A *hole*. En este *país*. Unh *oyo*. un hoyo.

To go for,	*Ir por*, or *ir á buscar.*
The *corner* (interior). *To listen.*	El *rincon*. *Escuchar.*
To play.	*Jugar*, (varied as *mover*, Les. 37.)
Instead of.	*En vez de*, *en lugar de* (gov. inf.)
The *forehead*. *To sleep.*	La *frente*. *Dormir.*

Duermo,	*duermes*,	*duerme*,	*dormimos*,	*dormis*,	*duermen*.
I sleep,	thou sleepest,	he sleeps,	we sleep,	you sleep,	they sleep.

Spacious. *Broad*, *wide.*	*Espacioso*. *Ancho.*
The *face*. *Wrinkled.*	La *cara*. *Arrugado.*
To pay, also *to pay for*.	*Pagar.*
I pay a hundred dollars.	Pago cien pesos.
I pay for the horse.	Pago el caballo.
I pay the man for the horse.	Pago el caballo al hombre.

REMARK 1. *Pagar*, as seen above, may take for its direct object either the value paid, or the thing paid for, while the person paid is the indirect object. *Por* may be used before the thing paid for.

He pays for the boots.	Paga las botas, or paga por las botas.
He pays the shoemaker for the boots.	Paga las botas al zapatero.
They pay eight dollars for the boots.	Pagan ocho pesos por las botas.
We pay the shoemaker eight dollars for the boots.	Pagamos ocho pesos al zapatero por las botas.
Do you wish to go anywhere?	¿ Quiere V. ir á alguna parte?
I wish to go nowhere, or I do not wish to go anywhere.	No quiero ir á ninguna parte.
Many foreigners come to this country.	Muchos estranjeros vienen á este país.

REMARK 2. The *present participle* when used as a noun is often translated into Spanish by the infinitive.

Dost thou play instead of studying?	¿ Juegas tú en vez de estudiar?
I study instead of playing.	Estudio en lugar de jugar.
The boy plays instead of listening.	El muchacho juega en vez de escuchar.
Do you play instead of listening?	¿ Juegan VV. en vez de escuchar?
We do not play, we listen.	No jugamos, escuchamos.
Are you going for wine?	¿ Va V. por vino (or á buscar vino)?
No, sir; I have sent the servant for it.	No, señor; he enviado el criado por él.
The cat is in the hole in the corner of that room.	El gato está en el agujero en el rincon de aquel cuarto.
Instead of working you sleep.	En lugar de trabajar V. duerme.
Why dost thou sleep?	¿ Porqué duermes?
I do not sleep but listen.	No duermo pero escucho.
Do you sleep much in summer?	¿ Duermen VV. mucho en el verano?
We sleep more in winter than in summer.	Dormimos mas en el invierno que en el verano.

I study more than I play.	Estudio mas de lo que juego.
The stranger's forehead is wide.	El forastero tiene la frente ancha.
His face is wrinkled.	Su cara está arrugada.
Has the servant brought you your letters?	¿Ha traido el criado sus cartas á V.?
He has brought them to me.	Me las ha traido.
Have you carried the notes to my brother?	¿Ha llevado V. los billetes á mi hermano?
I have carried them to him.	Yo se los he llevado (á él.)
He has carried them to her.	El se los ha llevado (á ella.)
She has brought them to us.	Ella nos los ha traido.

Does it rain? It does not rain. Is it going to rain? It is going to rain. Will it rain to-day? It will rain soon. Does it begin to rain now? It does not begin now, but it will begin in a few minutes. Is it early? No, sir; it is late. What hour is it? I do not know what hour it is; but I believe that it is near noon. Where will you be at midnight? I shall be at the ball. Will you go out to-night if it rains? No, sir; I never go out when it rains. What do you wish to buy? I wish to buy that basket full of flowers. What will you do with them? I will give the flowers to those young ladies, but I will send the basket home. Will you go anywhere to-morrow? I shall not go anywhere to-morrow, but the day after I shall go to the country, and shall not return before next week. Has any one gone for wine? I have sent the servant. Has he not returned? No, sir; but he will return before noon. Do children like to play better (*mas*) than to study? They like to play much better than to study. Do not the lazy like to sleep better than to work? They like it much better.

Do you not play more than (*mas de lo que*) you study? No, sir; I play a little, but I study more than I play. When do you play? We play at half-past seven in (*de*) the morning, and at four in the afternoon. Do you not play instead of listening to the master? We do not play; we listen instead of playing. Do you not like to play better than to study? Sometimes I like to study better than to play. Are you acquainted with that old man whose face is wrinkled? I believe that I am acquainted with him. Is not his

forehead large? Yes, sir; his forehead is very broad. Have you paid the tailor for the waistcoat? I have paid him for it. Have you paid him ten dollars for it? No, sir; I have paid him six. Do you pay the shopkeeper for the beer? We pay him for the beer and for the brandy. Have you given those flowers to the ladies? We have not given them to them. Have you given them to the master? We have given them to him. Has he given them to us? He has not given them to you. Pay me for the boots. Pay me for them. Do not pay him for them.

Uncle, will you go to see the lion? I wish to go, but do not know if I shall have time. If you go will you take (*llevará*) me? I will take you, but you will first (*primero*) learn your lesson in (*de*) Spanish. Yes, sir; my brother and I will learn our lessons, and then (*despues*) we will come where you are, and will say them to you by heart (*de memoria.*)

Los pueblos[1] que viven de verduras son de todos los hombres los mas robustos,[2] los que están ménos espuestos[3] á enfermedades y á las pasiones,[4] y los que viven mas. Tales[5] son en Europa, una gran parte de los Suizos.[6] La mayor parte de los aldeanos,[7] que son siempre la porcion[8] de los pueblos mas sana,[9] y la mas vigorosa,[10] es la que come ménos carne. Los Rusos[11] tienen cuaresmas[12] y dias de abstinencia[13] multiplicados, de que ni aun[14] los soldados están exentos,[15] y sin embargo[16] resisten[17] á toda suerte[18] de fatigas.[19] Los negros,[20] que soportan[21] en las colonias[22] tantos trabajos, no viven sinó de cazabe,[23] patatas y maíz.[24] Los Bramines[25] de las Indias, que viven frecuentemente mas de un siglo[26] no comen sinó verduras. Los vegetables influyen[27] dichosamente[28] en la belleza del cuerpo y en la tranquilidad del alma. Los vegetables prolongan[29] la infancia[30] y por consecuencia[31] la vida humana. No es ménos conveniente[32] á una nacion[33] guerrera[34] que á una nacion agrícola.[35]

1, ***Pueblo***, people. 2, ***Robusto***, robust. 3, ***Espuesto***, exposed. 4, ***Pasion***, passion. 5, ***Tal***, such. 6, ***Suizo***, Swiss. 7, ***Aldeano***, countryman. 8, ***Porcion***, portion. 9, ***Sano***, healthful. 10, ***Vigoroso***, vigorous. 11, ***Ruso***, Russian. 12, ***Cuaresma***, lent. 13, ***Abstinencia***, abstinence. 14, ***Aun***, even. 15, ***Exento***, exempt. 16, ***Sin embargo***, nevertheless. 17, ***Resistir***, to resist. 18, ***Suerte***, kind. 19, ***Fatiga***, fatigue. 20, ***Negro***, negro. 21, ***Soportar***, to endure. 22, ***Colonia***, colony. 23, ***Cazabe***, manioc. 24, ***Maíz***, Indian corn. 25, ***Bramin***, Bramin 26, ***Siglo***, century. 27, ***Influir***, influence (See Les. 39, Rem. 1.) 28, ***Dichosamente***, happily. 29, ***Prolongar***, to prolong. 30, ***Infancia***, infancy. 31, ***Consecuencia***, consequence. 32, ***Conveniente***, useful. 33, ***Nacion***, nation. 34, ***Guerrero***, warlike. 35, ***Agrícola***, agricultural.

61. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA PRIMERA.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

IMPERFECT TENSE OF SER, TO BE.

Yo era,	*tú eras,*	*él era,*	*nosotros éramos,*	*vosotros erais,*	*ellos eran.*
I was,	thou wast,	he was,	we were,	you were,	they were.

IMPERFECT TENSE OF VER, TO SEE.

Yo veia,	*tú veias,*	*él veia,*	*nosotros veíamos,*	*vosotros veiais,*	*ellos veian.*
I saw,	thou sawest,	he saw,	we saw,	you saw,	they saw.

IMPERFECT TENSE OF IR, TO GO.

Yo iba,	*tú ibas,*	*él iba,*	*nosotros íbamos,*	*vosotros ibais,*	*ellos iban.*
I went,	thou wentest,	he went,	we went,	you went,	they went.

THE IMPERFECT TENSE in Spanish always *denotes continuance;* when, therefore, a past action or state is spoken of as only once done or existing, this tense is not to be used; but when continuance, either from repetition, or from the unfinished condition of the action is expressed, this tense is employed; as,

He was old when I was young.	El era viejo cuando yo era jóven.
I saw my friends frequently in the city.	Yo veia á mis amigos frecuentemente en la ciudad.
I saw your friend this morning.	He visto á su amigo esa mañana.

In the first of the above phrases the imperfect tense is used, because being old and being young were *continuous* states, and in the second, because I *continued* to see my friends repeatedly; but in the third there is no continuance denoted, and the imperfect can not be used. Observe also the following.

We were rich when you were poor, (*continuance.*)	Nosotros *éramos* ricos cuando VV. *eran* pobres.
He saw us every day, (*continuance.*)	El nos *veia* todos los dias.
We saw them every morning, (*continuance.*)	Los *veíamos*, todas las mañanas.
I was going to their house, and they were going to mine, (*continuance.*)	Yo iba á su casa de ellos, y ellos iban á la mia.
He went to church every Sunday, and we went also, (*continuance.*)	El iba á la iglesia todos los domingos, y nosotros íbamos tambien.
I went to church to-day, did you go also? (*no continuance.*)	He ido á la iglesia hoy; ¿ha ido V. tambien?
To lose.	*Perder*, (varied like *Cerrar*, Les. 38.)
Do you lose many umbrellas?	¿Pierde V. muchos parágüas?
I lose many.	Pierdo muchos.
Do you often lose your books?	¿Pierden VV. sus libros frecuentemente?
We never lose them.	No los perdemos nunca.
To find, to meet with.	*Encontrar*, (varied as *Mover*, Les. 37.)

Do you find what you look for?	¿ Encuentra V. lo que busca?
I find it.	Lo encuentro.
Do you find many friends in this country?	¿ Encuentran VV. muchos amigos en este país?
We do not find any.	No encontramos ninguno.

REMARK 1. To express that something has just been done, the Spanish often use *acabar* followed by *de* and the infinitive.

I have just written a letter.	Yo acabo de escribir una carta.
They have just arrived.	Ellos acaban de llegar.
He has just dined.	El acaba de comer.
To have to.	*Tener que.*
What have you to write?	¿ Que tiene V. que escribir?
I have letters to write.	Tengo que escribir cartas.

REMARK 2. An infinitive depending on *tener* is preceded by *que*, and implies obligation, as seen above. 213.

What has the scholar to learn?	¿ Que tiene que aprender el discípulo?
He has to learn his lesson.	Tiene que aprender su leccion.
The *future*. *To conjugate*.	El *futuro*. *Conjugar*.
To compose. A *sentence*.	*Componer*. Una *sentencia*.
Different. *Tense*.	*Diferente*. *Tiempo*.
Plural. *To suffer*.	*Plural*. *Sufrir*.
A *malady*. A *cage*, *coop*.	Un *enfermedad*. Una *jaula*.

Did you see your cousins often last summer? We saw them every evening. Were you a soldier when you were young? No, sir; I was a merchant. Did you go frequently to the theatre last winter? I went every week. Do you often lose your books? I do not lose my books, but I very often lose my umbrella. Do you wish to look for the pocket-book which you have lost? No, sir; I have found it. Where did you find it? I found it in a hole in (*de*) the floor. Are those foreigners afraid of losing their money? Yes, sir; for they often lose it when they travel (*viajan*) in other countries. Do you find what you are looking for? I do not find it. Do you find many good books in this library? We do not find many, but we find some. What have you to do? I have to finish my lesson. At what o'clock do you finish your lessons? Sometimes I finish them early, and at other times I do not finish them before midnight. What has the carpenter to do? He has nothing to do, but the boy has to sweep that spacious room.

Nephews, if you conjugate some verbs in the future of the indicative, and compose a sentence in each person with different verbs, I will give you two shillings for each sentence. We will conjugate the verbs, and compose the sentences. Very well; I wish for a sentence with the verb *to read*, in the first person of the future, *I will read to-morrow the book which I read every day.* I wish for another in the second person of the same tense, with the verb *to go. Thou shalt go to the theatre to-night, if thou goest to the church on Sunday.* I wish for another in the third person of the same tense with the verb *to sleep. My cousin will sleep in my brother's bed to-night.* I wish for another in the first person (*de*) plural, with the verb *to kill. We will kill the dog with the same gun with which we have killed the cat.* I wish for another in the second person plural of the future with the verb *to suffer. You will suffer the same maladies which you suffer now.* I wish for the last in the third person plural with the verb *to be contained. The hens will not be contained in the coop in which the chickens are contained.* Very well, to-morrow I will give you the money, and you will make the best use (*uso*) of it. We will do so (*así lo*) dear (*querido*) uncle; many thanks for your generosity (*generosidad.*)

El topo[1] es un animal pequeño muy comun[2] en Europa. Tiene los ojos tan pequeños que dicen ciego como un topo. Destinado[3] á pasar[4] sus dias bajo de la tierra cava[5] galerías[6] para buscar raíces de que se alimenta. Es muy perjudicial á los legumbres.[7] Se reconoce el lugar por donde pasa por el montoncito[8] de tierra que levanta. Su piel guarnecida de pelos muy finos sirve para forro[9] y es muy cara[10] á causa de[11] la pequeñez[12] del animal.

El jaguar[13] es del tamaño de un perro y manchado como el tigre. Es carnívoro como el último y tambien peligroso[14] cuando está humbriento.[15] Cuando ha comido bien su valor[16] le abandona,[17] y le hacen huir presentándole[18] un tizon[19] encendido.[20].

1, *Topo*, mole. 2, *Comun*, common. 3, *Destinado*, destined. 4, *Pasar*, to pass. 5, *Cavar*, to dig. 6, *Galería*, gallery. 7, *Legumbres*, herbs. 8, *Montoncito*, little ridge. 9, *Forro*, fur. 10, *Caro*, dear. 11, *A causa de*, because of. 12, *Pequeñez*, smallness. 13, *Jaguar*, jaguar. 14, *Peligroso*, dangerous. 15, *Hambriento*, hungry. 16, *Valor*, courage. 17, *Abandonar*, to forsake. 18, *Presentando*, presenting. 19, *Tizon* (brand of fire) torch. 20. *Encendido*, lighted.

62. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA SECUNDA

IMPERFECT TENSE FORMED.

THE IMPERFECT TENSE of all Spanish verbs, except the three given in the preceding lesson, is formed by the following general rule. In the first conjugation change *ar* final of the infinitive into the following terminations.

ABA, ABAS, ABA, ÁBAMOS, ABAIS, ABAN,

In the second and third change *er* and *ir* final into the following,

IA, IAS, IA, ÍAMOS, IAIS, IAN.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

Llevar,	*Llevaba,*	*llevabas,*	*llevaba,*	*llevábamos,*	*llevabais,*	*llevaban.*
To carry,	I carried,	thou carriedst,	he carried,	we carried,	you carried,	they carried.
Cortar,	*cortaba,*	*cortabas,*	*cortaba,*	*cortábamos,*	*cortabais,*	*cortaban.*
To cut,	I cut,	thou cutest,	he cut,	we cut,	you cut,	they cut.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

Perder,	*Perdia,*	*perdias,*	*perdia,*	*perdiamos,*	*perdiais,*	*perdian.*
To lose,	I lost,	thou lostest,	he lost,	we lost,	you lost,	they lost.
Traer,	*Traia,*	*traias,*	*traia,*	*traíamos,*	*traiais,*	*traian.*
To bring,	I brought,	thou broughtest,	he brought,	we brought,	you brought,	they brought.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

Dormir,	*Dormía,*	*dormias,*	*dormia,*	*dormiamos,*	*dormiais,*	*dormian.*
To sleep,	I slept,	thou sleptst,	he slept,	we slept,	you slept,	they slept.
Venir,	*Venia,*	*venias,*	*venia,*	*veníamos,*	*veniais,*	*venian.*
To come,	I came,	thou camest,	he came,	we came,	you came,	they came.

The three exceptions to the above rule are these, as before seen, *Ir* makes *iba: Ser, era,* and *Ver,* and its compounds *Antever* and *Prever* make *veia, anteveia,* and *preveia.*

While. While we were singing you were studying.	*Mientras que.* Mientras que cantábamos VV. estudiaban.
They were cutting the bread, while we were drinking the tea.	Cortaban el pan mientras que bebíamos el té.
My brother had much fruit when he lived in the country, and he brought me some every day.	Mi hermano tenia muchas frutas cuando vivia en el campo y me traia algunas todos los dias.
Napoleon was a great general, but Washington was a great man.	Napoleon era un gran general, pero Washington era un grande hombre.
I saw Mr. C. this morning	He visto al señor C. esta mañana.
What was he doing?	¿Que hacia?
He wrote letters while it rained.	Escribia cartas mientras que llovia.
We were at home when you were looking for us.	Estábamos en casa cuando VV. nos buscaban.
New-Year's Day. The *company.*	*El dia de año nuevo.* La *compañia.*

Amusements. To pass.	Las *diversiones. Pasar.*
He passed the time in amusements.	Pasaba el tiempo en las diversiones.
To practice on the piano.	*Practicar* en el piano.
Eating, also *dinner. To set, go down.*	La *comida. Ponerse.*
The sun is setting. The *happiness.*	Él sol se pone. La *felicidad.*
Mode, manner. In this manner.	*Modo.* De este modo.
To envy. To *gather flowers.*	*Envidiar. Coger flores.*
I envy nobody.	No envidio á nadie.
To breakfast. After breakfasting.	*Almorzar.* Despues de almorzar.

Have you ever lived in New York? I lived there while you traveled. Did your brother live there at the same time? No, sir; he was in Europe. What did you do when you lived in the country? We read and studied much. Were you and your neighbors rich? We were not all rich; but, I was not poor, and some of my neighbors were very rich. When you were in England did you see the sun often? I did not see it often for the weather was very cloudy. What did thy cousin do yesterday at the school while thou wast studying? He cut papers with his penknife. When you lived in the country did you come to the city every day? I came almost every day. Did you always sleep in the country? No, sir; I sometimes slept in the city. Did your friends often come to the city with you? They came with me often. Did you always come early? Sometimes we came at seven o'clock, and sometimes we did not come before ten.

Have you found your pocket-book? I have found it; it was in a corner of the drawer. Has the servant lost the axe? No, sir; he has put it in a corner of the yard. Where have you been? I have been as far as the bookstore. Do you frequently go to the bookstore? No, sir; but I went there frequently last summer. How far have those ladies been? They have been as far as the library. Has that blindman ever seen? Yes, sir; he saw well when he was young. Where is the deaf man? He has gone to the market. Where was the general's grandson yesterday, when we were at his house? He was at the deaf man's. Where was the captain's granddaughter last night (*anoche*)? She was at the ball with her sister-in-law.

Louisa (*Luisa*), where were you last year on New-Year's Day? I lived in the country. Did you not come to the city? I came sometimes, but New-Year's Day my mother was at home, and I preferred her company to the amusements of the city. In what did you pass the time in the country? In (*por*) the morning, after breakfasting, I read an hour, after that (*despues*) I practised on the piano until (*hasta que*) the dinner was ready. In the afternoon I wrote until the sun went down, and then (*entonces*) I went to the garden, and gathered some flowers which I gave to my friends in (*à*) the city. In that manner, Louisa, you lived very happy. Yes, my friend, I was always very contented, and envied not the happiness of other persons.

La gran ciudad de Méjico[1] estaba fundada[2] en un plano[3] muy espacioso, coronado[4] por todas pártes de altísimas sierras[5] y montañas, de cuyos rios y cascadas detenidas[6] en el valle[7] se formaban diferentes lagunas,[8] y en lo mas profundo[9] los dos lagos mayores que ocupaba,[10] con mas de cincuenta poblaciones,[11] la nacion mejicana.[12] Tenia este pequeño mar treinta leguas de circunferencia,[13] y los dos lagos que le formaban, se unian[14] y comunicaban[15] entre sí por un dique[16] de piedra que los dividia, reservando[17] algunas aberturas[18] con puentes[19] de madera, en cuyos lados tenian sus compuertas[20] levadizas[21] para cebar[22] el lago inferior siempre que necesitaban socorrer[23] la mengua[24] del uno con la redundancia[25] del otro. Era el mas alto, de agua dulce y clara, donde se hallaban[26] algunos pescados de agradable mantenimiento,[27] y el otro de agua salobre[28] y oscura[29] semejante á la del mar.

1, *Méjico*, Mexico. 2, *Fundado*, founded. 3, *Plano*, plain. 4, *Coronado*, crowned. 5, *Sierra*, mountain ridge. 6, *Detenido*, detained. 7, *Valle*, valley. 8, *Laguna*, marsh. 9, *Profundo*, deep. 10, *Ocupar*, to occupy. 11, *Poblaciones*, cities. 12, *Mejicano*, Mexican. 13, *Circunferencia*, circumference. 14, *Unirse*, to unite. 15, *Comunicar*, to communicate. 16, *Dique*, dike. 17, *Reservando*, reserving. 18, *Abertura*, opening. 19, *Puente*, bridge. 20, *Compuerta*, tide-gate. 21, *Levadizo*, capable of being raised. 22, *Cebar*, to feed. 23, *Socorrer*, (to succor) to supply. 24, *Mengua*, deficiency. 25, *Redundancia*, superfluity. 26, *Hallarse*, to be found. 27, *Mantenimiento*, sustinence. 28, *Salobre*, brackish. 29, *Oscuro*, dark.

63. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA TERCERA.

VERBS, NOUNS, ETC.

To hunt. To fish.	*Cazar, Pescar.*
I am going a hunting (to hunt).	Voy á cazar.
He is going a fishing (or to fish.)	El va á pescar.
To catch, take. To have a sore.	*Coger. Tener mal.*
He has a sore (finger) or (on the finger.)	Tener mal en el dedo.
A *chain. To arrange, to put in order.*	Una *cadena. Ordenar, arreglar.*
The *hair.* The *nose.*	El *cabello, los cabellos.* La *nariz.*
The *mouth.* The *chin.*	La *boca.* La *barba.*
The *neck.* The *shoulder.*	El *cuello, pescuezo.* El *hombro.*
A *burden, load.* The *exercise.*	Una *carga.* El *ejercicio.*
He is doing his exercise.	El hace su ejercicio.
Last night. Somewhat.	*Anoche. Algo.*
I play somewhat.	Juego algo.
A *pocket, purse.* A *fault, mistake.*	Un *bolsillo.* Una *falta, equivocacion.*
The *kitchen. Such, such a one.*	La *cocina. Tal.*
Such a tree as that.	Un árbol tal como aquel.
The cook is in the kitchen.	El cocinero está en la cocina.
I have a hole in my pocket.	Tengo un agujero en el bolsillo.
He has many mistakes in his exercise.	Tiene muchas faltas en su ejercicio.
The fisherman catches many fish.	El pescador coge muchos pescados.
I am arranging my books.	Ordeno (or, arreglo) mis libros.
His hair is black.	El tiene el cabello negro.
His nose is long and his mouth small.	Tiene la nariz larga y la boca pequeña.
I have a sore chin.	Tengo mal á la barba.
He wears a chain of gold on the neck.	El lleva una cadena de oro al cuello.
He was carrying a burden on his shoulders.	Llevaba una carga sobre los hombros.
I was at the market last night.	Estaba en la plaza anoche.

REMARK 1. The imperfect of *acabar* followed by *de* and the infinitive expresses that the action had just been done.

He had just arrived.	El acababa de llegar.
We had just dined.	Acabábamos de comer.

REMARK 2. *Ir* followed by *á* and an infinitive denotes an immediate future.

I am (now) going to write a letter.	Voy á escribir una carta.
I am (now) going to look for my book.	Voy á buscar mi libro

Did you often go a hunting when you lived in the country? I often went a hunting and a fishing. What did you catch when you went a fishing? I caught many fish, and I killed many birds when I went a hunting. Were you at home yesterday? I was not at home, I was at the market. Have you seen the master this morning? I have seen him, he was arranging his books. Were the scholars arranging theirs? No, sir; they were playing instead of arranging their books. What were you doing in the school? We were arranging our books and papers. When you and your brother lived in the country did you catch many fish? We caught many, for we went a fishing almost every day. Did the clouds cover the sun every day when you were in England? They covered it almost every day, for the weather was very cloudy. What was the servant doing in that room? He was sweeping the room and arranging the chairs.

Into how many pieces have you divided that large cake? I have divided it into more than twenty. Have you received a reply to your note? I have not received any. Will you learn Spanish before going to Spain? I shall study it a little before going there. Does the sun shine? No, sir; the sun is covered with clouds. Is not that lady beautiful? She has beautiful hair and eyes, but her mouth is too small. What is the matter with you? My chin and my neck are sore. What is the servant carrying on his shoulder? He is carrying a large burden. Does the scholar listen to what the master says? He listens somewhat. Have you lost your penknife? I have lost it, for I have a hole in my pocket. Have you ever seen such a fish as that which my cook has in the kitchen (*la cocina*)? I have never seen such a one. Is (*es*) that man accused of theft? He is not accused of theft, but of murder. Whom do you accuse of murder? I accuse no one of murder, but I accuse the printer of theft.

With whom were you talking this morning at (*por*) a window, when I was going to the church? I was talking with a young lady. But what did she say to you that you laughed (*se reia*) so much? She was telling me that she had a parrot (*cotorra*) that did and said many pleasant (*graciosas*) things. What pleasant things did the

parrot do? He sang in French, spoke words in Spanish, and marched (*marchaba*) as a soldier

En el medio casi de esta laguna salobre, tenia su asiento[1] la ciudad cuya situacion[2] se apartaba[3] de la línea[4] equinoccial[5] hácia[6] el norte diez y nueve grados[7] y trece minutos. Era su clima benigno[8] y saludable donde se dejaba conocer á su tiempo el frio y el calor ambos con moderada[9] intension,[10] y la humedad corregida[11] con el favor[12] de los vientos ó morigerada[13] con el beneficio del sol.

Los edificios[14] públicos[15] y casas de los nobles,[16] de que se componia[17] la mayor parte de la ciudad, eran de piedra, y bien fabricadas;[18] las que ocupaba la gente[19] popular,[20] humildes[21] y desiguales.[22] Los templos[23] (si es lícito[24] darles este nombre) se levantaban suntuosamente[25] sobre los demas edificios; y el mayor, donde residia[26] la suma[27] dignidad[28] de aquellos inmundos[29] sacerdotes,[30] estaba dedicado[31] al ídolo[32] cuyo nombre en su lengua significaba[33] dios[34] de la guerra, y le tenian por el supremo de sus dioses; primacia[35] de que se infiere[36] cuanto se preciaba[37] de militar[38] aquella nacion.

1, *Asiento*, seat. 2, *Situacion*, situation. 3, *Apartarse*, to be removed or distant. 4, *Línea*, line. 5, *Equinoccial*, equinoctial. 6, *Hacia*, towards. 7, *Grado*, degree. 8, *Benigno*, mild. 9, *Moderado*, moderate. 10, *Intension*, intenseness. 11, *Corregido*, corrected. 12, *Favor*, (aid) favorable influence. 13, *Morigerado*, moderated. 14, *Edificio*, building. 15, *Público*, public. 16, *Noble*, nobleman. 17, *Componerse*, to compose. 18, *Fabricado*, built. 19, *Gente*, people. 20, *Popular*, common. 21, *Humilde*, humble. 22, *Desigual*, unlike (each other.) 23, *Templo*, temple. 24, *Lícito*, lawful. 25, *Suntuosamente*, sumptuously. 26, *Residir*, to reside. 27, *Sumo*, highest. 28, *Dignidad*, dignity. 29, *Inmundo*, impure. 30, *Sacerdote*, priest. 31, *Dedicado*, dedicated. 32, *Idolo*, idol. 33, *Significar*, to signify. 34, *Dios*, god. 35, *Primacia*, superiority. 36, *Inferirse*, to be inferred. 37, *Preciarse*, to value one's self. 38, *Militar*, warfare.

---

64. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA CUARTA.

PAST DEFINITE.

The *Russian*. The *Russian language*. El *Ruso*. El *ruso*.
Industrious. A *fool*. *Industrioso*. Un *bobo*.
To correct. *Corregir* (varied like *Pedir*, Les. 58.)
Dost thou correct my exercises? ¿ Corriges tú mis ejercicios ?
I do not correct them, the master corrects them. No los corrijo, el maestro los corrige.

Do you correct yours?	¿ Corrigen VV. los suyos?
We do not correct them.	No los corregimos.
Already. Yet.	*Ya. Todavia.*
Have you already written your exercise?	¿ Ha escrito V. ya su ejercicio.
I have not written it yet.	No le he escrito todavia.
Have they already finished their work?	¿ Han acabado ellos ya su trabajo?
They have not finished it yet.	No le han acabado todavia.
He is already hungry.	Tiene ya hambre.

THE PAST DEFINITE TENSE OF TENER.

Tuve,	*tuviste,*	*tuvo,*	*tuvimos,*	*tuvisteis,*	*tuvieron.*
I had,	thou hadst,	he had,	we had,	you had,	they had.

The PAST DEFINITE TENSE represents an action or state as finished in past time. The past indefinite represents it as finished in present time; that is, in time from which the present is not expressly excluded; thus,

I was cold last night (in past time.)	*Tuve* frio anoche.
I have been cold to-day (in present time.)	He tenido frio hoy.
You had my book yesterday (in past time.)	V. *tuvo* mi libro ayer.
You have had it this morning (in present time.)	V. le ha tenido esta mañana.
Had you bad weather on Sunday (in past time)?	¿ *Tuvieron* VV. mal tiempo el domingo?
We had fine weather (in past time.)	*Tuvimos* bello tiempo.

PAST DEFINITE OF SER.

Yo fuí,	*tú fuiste,*	*él fué,*	*nosotros fuimos,*	*vosotros fuisteis,*	*ellos fueron.*
I was,	thou wast,	he was,	we were,	you were,	they were.

PAST DEFINITE OF ESTAR.

Estuve,	*estuviste,*	*estuvo,*	*estuvimos,*	*estuvisteis,*	*estuvieron.*
I was,	thou wast,	he was,	we were,	you were,	they were.

Hast thou ever been poor? (in present time.)*	¿ Has sido tú jamas pobre?
I was poor *formerly* (in past time.)	Fuí pobre *ántes.*
Formerly.	*Antes, en otro tiempo.*
At first. Afterwards.	*Primero. Despues.*
A *lawyer*, an *advocate.*	Un *abogado.*
Formerly thou wast my friend, but now thou art my enemy.	Antes fuiste mi amigo, pero ahora eres mi enemigo.
At first he was industrious, now he is lazy.	Primero él fué industrioso, ahora es perezoso.

* In this phrase there is nothing which necessarily excludes the present from the time spoken of.

At first they were lawyers, and I was a physician; afterwards we were soldiers, and now we are merchants.	Primero ellos fueron abogados, y yo fuí médico; despues fuimos soldados, y ahora somos comerciantes.

What does the Russian learn? He learns English. Does that scholar write his exercises well? He can not write his exercises; he is a fool. Dost thou correct the exercises of thy friend? I correct them sometimes, and at others the master. Do you correct those of the Russians? We do not correct them. What are you going to correct? I am going to correct the letters of this little boy. Has the master already corrected your lesson? He has not corrected it yet, but he will correct it soon. Are you cold? I am not cold now, but I was very cold on Sunday in the church. Were you not cold? We were not very cold. Hadst thou much money yesterday? I had none, but my brother had much. Is your servant industrious? He was formerly industrious, but now he is lazy. Have you ever been poor? Formerly we were poor, but now we are rich. At first thou wast a lawyer, and thy cousins were lawyers; why are you now merchants? At first we were lawyers, afterwards soldiers, and now we are merchants because we wish to make much money. When hast thou been at my house? I was there on Wednesday, my brother was (there) on Thursday, and afterwards we were (there) on Friday.

Hast thou ever been in Boston? I was there last summer, and my brothers were there also. When I was sick wast thou not at my house? I was there once. Does the sun shine? It does not shine, because the clouds cover it. Has the boy returned from the market? He has not returned yet. Do more men die in summer than in winter? In the cities of the south, many more men die in summer than in winter. Have the printers already printed your book? They have not printed it yet, but they will print it soon. Of what do you accuse the Russian? I accuse him of nothing. Does any one accuse him of murder? No one accuses him of murder, but the neighbours accuses him of theft. You often go a hunting; what do you kill? I kill rabbits and birds. Do you and your brothers ever kill turkeys? We sometimes kill them. Have you eaten sufficient?

I have eaten and drunk sufficient. Have you spoken to the lawyers? I have spoken to them. Do you and your friends answer all the letters which you receive? We answer them all.

LA EDAD DE ORO. Dichosa[1] edad y siglos dichosos aquellos á quienes los poetas[2] han dado nombre de dorados.[3] Eran en aquella santa[4] edad todas las cosas comunes;[5] á nadie era necesario[6] para alcanzar[7] su ordinario sustento[8] tomar otro trabajo que alzar[9] la mano y alcanzarle de las robustas encinas[10] que liberalmente[11] les estaban convidando[12] con su dulce y sazonado[13] fruto.[14] Las claras fuentes[15] y corrientes[16] rios en magnífica[17] abundancia, sabrosas[18] y transparentes[19] aguas les ofrecian.[20] En las quiebras[21] de las peñas[22] y en los huecos[23] de los árboles formaban su república las solícitas[24] y discretas[25] abejas,[26] ofreciendo[27] á cualquiera[28] mano[29] sin interes[30] alguno la fértil cosecha[31] de su dulcísimo trabajo. Los valientes alcornoques[32] despedian[33] de sí, sin otro artificio,[34] que el de su cortesia,[35] sus anchas y livianas[36] cortezas[37] con que cubrian las casas sobre rústicas estacas[38] sustentadas,[39] no mas que para defensa[40] de las inclemencias[41] del cielo. Todo era paz entonces,[42] todo amistad, todo concordia.[43]

1, *Dichoso*, happy. 2, *Poeta*, poet. 3, *Dorado*, golden. 4, *Santo*, sacred. 5, *Comun*, common. 6, *Necesario*, necessary. 7, *Alcanzar*, to obtain. 8, *Sustento*, food. 9, *Alzar*, to raise. 10, *Encinas*, oaks. 11, *Liberalmente*, liberally. 12, *Convidando*, inviting. 13, *Sazonado*, savory. 14, *Fruto*, fruit. 15, *Fuente*, fountain. 16, *Corriente*, flowing. 17, *Magnífico*, magnificent. 18, *Sabroso*, well flavored. 19, *Transparente*, transparent. 20, *Ofrecer*, to offer. 21, *Quiebra*, cleft. 22, *Peña*, rock. 23, *Hueco*, hollow. 24, *Solícito*, careful. 25, *Discreto*, discreet. 26, *Abeja*, bee. 27, *Ofreciendo*, offering. 28, *Cualquier*, any. 29, *Mano*, hand. 30, *Interes*, gain. 31, *Cosecha*, crop. 32, *Alcornoque*, cork-tree. 33, *Despedir*, to let go. 34, *Artificio*, artifice. 35, *Cortesia*, courtesy. 36, *Liviano*, light. 37, *Corteza*, bark. 38, *Estaca*, stake. 39, *Sustentado*, supported. 40, *Defensa*, defense. 41, *Inclemencia*, inclemency. 42, *Entónces*, then. 43, *Concordia*, concord.

---

65. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA QUINTA.

USE OF THE PAST TENSES.

The use of the three past tenses which have now been given may be distinguished thus, When anything past is spoken of as continuous or unfinished, the imperfect tense is used (as shown in Les. 60.) When it is not continuous but finished, if the time alluded to, *may include the present*, the *past indefinite* is to be used; but if it *can not include the present*, the *past definite* is to be used thus.

Hast thou been at my house this week? ¿*Has estado* en mi casa esta semana?
(*includes the present.*)

I was there on Saturday, (*excludes the pres.*)	*Estuve* allí el sábado.
I was there this morning, (*incl. pres.*)	*He estado* allí esta mañana.
Wast thou at home yesterday at ten? (*exc. pres.*)	¿ *Estuviste* en casa ayer á las diez?
Hast thou been there today, (*incl. pres.*)	¿ *Has estado* allí hoy?
My brother has not been in the country this summer (*inc. pres.*) but he was there last summer, (*exc. pres.*)	Mi hermano no *ha estado* en el campo este verano, pero *estuvo* allí el verano pasado.
When were (*inc. pres.*) you at my house?	¿ Cuando *han estado* VV. á mi casa?
We were (*exc. pres.*) there when you were (*continuous*) sick.	*Estuvimos* allí, cuando V. estaba enfermo.

REMARK 1. The past indefinite may be sometimes used for the past definite when but one period of time is spoken of.

I was cold last night.	Yo *tuve* (or *he tenido*) frio anoche.
He was there yesterday.	El *estuvo* (or *ha estado*) allí ayer.

In the latter form of each of the above phrases, the past indefinite is used for the past definite.

The PAST DEFINITE of IR has the same form as that of Ser.

Yo fuí,	*tú fuiste,*	*él fué,*	*nosotros fuimos,*	*vosotros fuisteis,*	*ellos fueron.*
I went,	thou wentest,	he went,	we went,	you went,	they went.

When we were in the city I went to the theatre, and thou wentest to the ball.	Cuando estábamos en la ciudad yo *fuí* al teatro y tú *fuiste* al baile.
Did you go to Mr. B.'s yesterday?	¿ *Fué* V. á casa del señor B. ayer?
When you were in the country did you go to my brothers?	¿ Cuando VV. estaban en el campo *fueron* á casa de mi hermano?
We went there.	*Fuimos* allí.
Can the Russian learn Spanish?	¿ Puede el Ruso aprender el español?
He can not learn anything, he is a fool.	No puede aprender nada, es bobo.
Evil, pain. To show.	*Mal, Mostrar* (as *Mover*, Les. 37.)
To teach, show. History.	*Enseñar.* La historia.
Arithmetic. Geography.	La *aritmética.* La *geografía.*
What do you show my friend?	¿ Qué muestra (enseña,) V. á mi amigo?
I show him my books.	Le muestro (enseño) mis libros.
I show them to him.	Se los muestro.
Do you show him your pictures?	¿ Le muestran VV. sus cuadros?
We show them to him.	Se los mostramos.
What do the masters teach?	¿ Que enseñan los maestros?
They teach history and geography.	Enseñan la historia y la geografía.
Can you teach me arithmetic?	¿ Puede V. enseñarme la aritmética?
I can teach it to you.	Puedo enseñársela.

When thou wast in the country last week, didst thou go to see thy friends? I went to see them, and my brother went also. Where did you and your brother go last night? We went to the theatre. Where did your cousin go? He went to Mr. B.'s. Have you answered the captain? I have answered him. Have you always preferred the useful to the agreeable? I have always preferred the former to the latter. Do you ask your father for anything? I often ask him for money. Has the servant gone for wine? No, sir; he has gone for water. Have you much to do? Yes, sir; I have many letters to write.

Is not that lady pretty? She is very pretty; her neck is beautiful, but her mouth is too small, and her chin is too long. What is that man doing? He is carrying a load of books on his shoulder. Do you think of (*piensa*) going (intend to go) to the ball to-night? I think of (*pienso*) going. What is the matter with you? I have a sore mouth and a sore chin. Have you a penknife? No, sir; I have a hole in my pocket, and have lost my penknife. Hast thou ever seen such a fish as the cook has in the kitchen (*cocina*). I have never seen such a one. Dost thou show thy exercises to the master? I show them to him every day, and he corrects them. Do you make many mistakes? I do not make many. Do you show all your letters to your father? We do not show them all to him, but we show him many. What do you show us pretty? I show you my pretty pictures. Are you willing to show me your letter? I am willing to show it to you; for I have shown it to my father, and I shall show it to my mother.

What can the Frenchman teach? He can teach French. Does he teach history? He does not teach it. Dost thou teach arithmetic? Yes, sir; I teach arithmetic and geography. What does that timid man (*cobarde*) intend to do? He intends to do nothing. Have you ever been a hunting? Yes, sir; when I was in the country I went a hunting once. Did your little brother ever go to the theatre? Yes, sir; when his little cousin was here last week, he went to the theatre with him. Have you been a fishing to-day? No, sir; but we went yesterday. Were you ever at Mr. B.'s. Yes, sir; when we lived in Royal street, I was once at his house. Have you seen my

penknife? Yes, sir; when we were in the yard yesterday your little sister had it. Have your cousins ever been in Boston? Yes, sir; when they were travelling last summer, they went to Boston, and to New York. Didst thou go there also? I did not go.

La luna[1] está redonda ahora porque está llena, pero mañana no estará tan redonda, y pasado mañana[2] estará menos redonda, y el dia siguiente,[3] disminuirá[4] poco á poco durante quince dias, al fin de los cuales V. no verá mas luna. Despues V. verá otra luna nueva, despues de medio dia. Primero V. la verá muy pequeña, pero cada dia crecerá[5] mas, hasta que en fin, en otra quincena[6] estará llena como la que V. ve ahora, y V. la verá salir detras[7] de los árboles.

El gato cimarron[8] es mas fuerte y mas grande que el gato doméstico. Siempre tiene los labios negros, la cola mas gruesa,[9] y los colores mas permanentes.

El erizo[10] es un animal muy apacible. Tiene el cuerpo cubierto de puntas[11] que le sirven de defensa contra sus enemigos. El camello puede pasar[12] las ardientes[13] arenas[14] del Africa, hace doce leguas por dia, y se arrodilla para recibir la carga.

1, *Luna*, moon. 2, *Pasado mañana*, the day after to-morrow. 3, *Siguiente*, following. 4, *Disminuir*, to diminish. 5, *Crecer*, to increase. 6, *Quincena*, fifteen days. 7, *Detras*, *de*, behind. 8, *Cimarron*, wild. 9, *Grueso*, thick. 10, *Erizo*, hedge-hog. 11, *Punta*, points. 12, *Pasar*, pass. 13, *Ardiente*, burning. 14, *Arena*, sand.

---

66. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA SEXTA.

PAST DEFINITE.

Past Definite of Hacer.

Yo hice,	*tú hiciste,*	*él hizo,*	*nosotros hicimos,*	*vosotros hicisteis,*	*ellos hicieron.*
I made,	thou madest,	he made,	we made,	you made,	they made.

Hast thou done thy labors?	¿Has hecho tus trabajos?
Yes, sir; I did them yesterday.	Si, señor; los *hice* ayer.
Didst thou do them well, and did thy brother do his well?	¿*Hiciste* los tuyos bien é *hizo* tu hermano los suyos bien?
We did them very well, and our cousins did theirs well.	Los *hicimos* muy bien, y nuestros primos *hicieron* los suyos bien.

Past Definite of Decir.

Yo dije,	*tú dijiste,*	*él dijo,*	*nosotros dijimos,*	*vosotros dijisteis,*	*ellos dijeron.*
I said,	thou saidest,	he said,	we said,	you said,	they said.

Didst thou tell the master yesterday that I was sick?	¿Dijiste tú al maestro ayer que yo estaba enfermo?

I told him so (it to him).	Se lo dije.
Have you told your father what you are studying?	¿ Han dicho VV. á su padre lo que estudian?
We told it to him yesterday.	Se lo dijimos ayer.
Our sisters told it to him also.	Nuestras hermanas se lo dijeron tambien.
War. Peace.	La *guerra.* La *paz.*
A *boat.* A *boatman.*	Un *bote*, un *barco.* Un *barquero.*
A *place.* A beautiful place.	Un *lugar.* Un lugar hermoso.
A hut. The *rice.*	Una *choza.* El *arroz.*
The *honey. Bitter.*	La *miel. Amargo.*
Cowardly, timid.	*Cobarde, tímido.*
To think, to intend.	*Pensar*, (varied as *Cerrar*, Les. 38.)
What dost thou intend to do to-night?	¿ Que piensas hacer esta noche?
I intend to go to the theatre.	Pienso ir al teatro.
My brother thinks of going.	Mi hermano piensa ir.
At what hour to you intend to go?	¿ A que hora piensan VV. ir?
We intend to go at eight.	Pensamos ir á las ocho.
Whose boat is that?	¿ De quien es aquel barco?
It is that of the boatman who lives in this hut.	Es el del barquero que vive en esta choza.
Peace is better than war.	La paz es mejor que la guerra.
The cowardly man is going to the war.	El hombre cobarde va á la guerra.
I like this honey and this rice.	Me gustan esta miel y este arroz.
The honey is bitter.	La miel es amarga.
The bay. The *hand.*	La *bahia.* La *mano.*
Right, straight. Left.	*Derecho. Izquierdo.*
The *breakfast.* **To sup, sup on.*	El *almuerzo. Ceñar.*
The breakfast is ready.	El almuerzo está pronto.
It is on the table.	Está en la mesa.

Almorzar, to breakfast, is varied in the present as *Mover*, Les. 37.

I breakfast at seven, and my friend breakfasts at eight.	Almuerzo á las siete, y mi amigo almuerza á las ocho.
Do you breakfast on fish?	¿ Almuerzan VV. de pescado?
We breakfast on fish and toast.	Almorzamos de pescado y tostada.
Toast. Toast with coffee.	*Tostada.* Tostada con café.
I sup at nine o'clock.	Ceno á las nueve.

Where is the boatman? He has gone to the other side (*al otro lado*) of the bay. Where does he live? He lives on (*en*) the bay. Is your right hand sore (*mala*)? Neither my right hand nor my left hand is sore, but my left arm pains me. Will you breakfast with

me? Yes, sir; if you please. At what o'clock do you breakfast? I breakfast at eight. Is the breakfast ready? It is on the table. Do you sup early? We sup at half-past eight. What do you intend to buy? I intend to buy some honey and some rice. Have you bought something good? No, sir; I have bought some oranges, but they are bitter.

Do those who go to war wish to live in peace? They wish to live in peace. Do you know whose boat that is (*de quien es ese barco*)? It is that of the boatman who lives in that hut. What dost thou intend to do? I intend to do many things. Hast thou done what I told thee? Yes, sir; I did it yesterday. When did the mason do his labor? He did it on Thursday. Have you and your cousins done all that the master said? Yes, sir; we did it all on Friday. Did the other scholars do the same on Friday? No, sir; they did it on Wednesday. Has the Russian told you where he lives? Yes, sir; he told it to me the day before yesterday. What didst thou tell him? I told him that he lived in a beautiful place. Did you and your brothers tell him where you lived? We told it to him. Do you answer immediately the notes and the letters which you receive? I always answer them soon. Dost thou ask the master for anything? I ask him for my book. What do you ask him for? We ask him for our copy-books.

Hast thou learned all the words of thy lesson? I have learned them all. Is there water in the bottom of that barrel? There is some. Where are you going? I am going to the end of the road. Have you been to those huts by the road-side (*al lado del camino*) this morning? No, sir; but I went there yesterday, and my brothers went the day before yesterday; we shall go again the day after to-morrow. Is that boy useful to you? He is very useful, and I am satisfied with his services. Where is the shop of that shopkeeper? It is on Dauphin street. Is not the weather dry? It is dry and there is much dust. What is it necessary to do in order to learn Spanish? It is necessary to study much. Do you learn a long lesson every day? Yes, sir; and after learning it I go immediately to school. Show us your pictures. Show them to us. Do not show them to them.

Que bella digresion[1] hace Lucano[2] en el libro quinto de la guerra civil sobre la felicidad[3] del pobre barquero Amintas, cuando pinta á César en el silencio[4] de la noche pulsando[5] la puerta de su choza. Todo el mundo está conmovido[6] y temblando[7] con los movimientos de la guerra civil; y dentro[8] de la misma Grecia,[9] que es el teatro de la guerra, vecino á los mismos ejércitos[10] duerme sin temor alguno, un pobre barquero sobre enjutas[11] ovas.[12] Despiertan[13] le[14] los golpes[15] que da á su puerta el generoso Caudillo, sin introducir[16] en su pecho[17] el menor susto;[18] pues, aunque[19] no ignora[20] que está toda la campaña[21] cubierta de tropas,[22] sabe tambien que no hay en su choza riqueza alguna para temer[23] los insultos[24] de los militares.[25] ¡O vida del pobre! esclama[26] el poeta, que tienes la felicidad de estar exenta de las violencias! ¡O pobreza,[27] beneficio grande de los dioses, aunque no reconocida[28] de los hombres! Que muros[29] ó que templos gozaran[30] el privilegio[31] que tienen Amintas y su choza de no temblar[32] á los golpes de la robusta mano de César!

1, *Digresion*, digression. 2, *Lucano*, Lucan. 3, *Felicidad*, happiness. 4, *Silencio*, silence. 5, *Pulsando*, knocking. 6, *Conmovido*, excited. 7, *Temblando*, trembling. 8, *Dentro de*, within. 9, *Grecia*, Greece. 10, *Ejército*, army. 11, *Enjuto*, dried. 12, *Ova*, sea-weed. 13, *Despertar*, to waken. 14, *Le* and other pronouns are sometimes joined to the indicative in the same manner as to the infinitive. 15, *Golpe*, blow. 16, *Introducir*, to introduce. 17, *Pecho*, breast. 18, *Susto*, alarm. 19, *Aunque*, although. 20, *Ignorar*, to be ignorant. 21, *Campaña*, level country. 22, *Tropa*, troop. 23, *Temer*, to fear. 24, *Insulto*, insult. 25, *Militar*, military. 26, *Esclamar*, to exclaim. 27, *Pobreza*, poverty. 28, *Reconocido*, recognized. 29, *Muro*, wall. 30, *Gozar*, to enjoy. 31, *Privilegio*, privilege. 32, *Temblar*, to tremble.

---

67. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

PAST DEFINITE.

Have you supped?	¿Ha cenado V.?
I have just supped.	Acabo de cenar.
My hand is sore.	Tengo la mano mala.
The boatman has not gone to the bay now, for he went yesterday.	El barquero no ha ido á la bahia ahora, porque fué ayer.
The *cask*. In the cask.	El *tonel*. En el tonel.
The *color*. A *crop*.	El *color*. Una *cosecha*.
The *pocket*. The *pepper*.	La *faltriquera*. La *pimienta*.
A *visit*. *Pity*.	Una *visita*. La *lástima*, (*de* bef. n.)

For cash. On credit.	*Al contado. Al fiado.*
The *pitcher. To smoke.*	El *jarro. Fumar.*
Snuff. Tobacco.	*Rapé. Tabaco.*
Do you smoke?	¿ Fuma V.?
I do not smoke, but I take snuff.	No fumo pero tomo rapé.
Is there a good crop of cotton?	¿ Hay una buena cosecha de algodon?
He always has money in his pocket.	Siempre tiene dinero en su faltriquera.
I will make a visit to my sister-in-law.	Haré una visita á mi cuñada.
I pity that man.	Tengo lástima de aquel hombre.
Do you buy for cash, or on credit?	¿ Compra V. al contado, ó al fiado?
I buy for cash.	Compro al contado.
Take the pitcher. Go for water.	Toma el jarro. Ve por aqua.
Of what color are those ribbons?	¿ De que color son esas cintas?
The one is green and the other blue.	La una es verde y la otra azul.

PAST DEFINITE OF PODER.

Pude,	*pudiste,*	*pudo,*	*pudimos,*	*pudisteis,*	*pudieron.*
I could,	thou couldst,	he could,	we could,	you could,	they could.

You went to the city yesterday; could you return early?	VV. fueron á la ciudad ayer; ¿ pudieron volver temprano.?
We could not.	No pudimos.
Could you find Spanish books?	¿ Pudo V. encontrar libros españoles?
I could not find many.	No pude encontrar muchos.

PAST DEFINITE OF VENIR.

Vine,	*viniste,*	*vino,*	*vinimos,*	*vinisteis,*	*vinieron.*
I came,	thou camest,	he came,	we came,	you came,	they came.

Didst thou come here yesterday?	¿ Viniste aquí ayer?
I came the day before yesterday, and my brother came with me.	Vine anteayer, y mi hermano vino conmigo.
At what o'clock did you come?	¿ A que hora vinieron VV.?
We came at noon.	Vinimos á medio dia.
To swim. A *swimmer.*	*Nadar.* Un *nadador.*
Do you swim?	¿ Nada V.?
Yes, sir; I am a good swimmer.	Si, señor; soy buen nadador.

Do you wish for some tobacco? No, sir; I do not smoke. Do you take snuff? I sometimes take snuff. Is the sailor a swimmer? He is a very good swimmer. Do you breakfast early? No, sir; I breakfast late (*tarde*). What does your friend like (*que le gustá al amigo de V.*) for his breakfast? He likes toast with eggs and coffee. Do you like to sup early? I like to sup early and to breakfast late. Do you sup before nine? I sup at eight. Of what color is your

waistcoat? It is black. Have you bought the fine horse which my friend had? I could not buy him for I had not the money in my pocket. Could your friend buy him? He could not buy him. Do you never buy on credit? I sometimes buy on credit, but I prefer to buy for cash. Could you find many new books in the book-store yesterday? We could not find many. Have you just come from the city? No, sir; I came yesterday. Did your friends come at the same time? No, sir; they came the day before yesterday. Did you come to the country on Thursday? No, sir; we came on Friday.

Do you sup earlier than your neighbors? We sup earlier than they. Will the cotton crop be better this year than the last? It will be better. Why did you make a visit to that man? I made a visit to him because he is sick and poor, and I pitied him. Do you like this soup? I do not like it; there is too much pepper in it. Is there wine in the bottom of this cask? There is none. Who has taken the pitcher? The servant has taken it and has gone for water. Where has the boy gone? He has gone to the market. What is it necessary to buy? It is necessary to buy some honey and some rice. Is that man a coward? He is a coward. Do you intend to live in peace with all men? Yes, sir; we intend to live in peace, because peace is better than war. Whose boat is that? It is that of the boatman who lives in that place. What does the master teach? He teaches geography, history, arithmetic, and French. How do you go over (*al otro lado de*) the river? I go in a boat (*bote*). After supping do you always read? I do not read always. What is it necessary to do to have many friends? It is necessary to be very good.

How do you like this country? I do not like it much; it is too cold. Have you lost anything? Yes, sir; I have a hole in my pocket, and I have lost my money. Do those children listen? No, sir; they sleep instead of listening.

Las musas[1] hijas de Júpiter y Menemosina,[2] ó las diosas[3] de la memoria,[4] eran nueve, llamadas Caliope, Clio, Erato, Euterpe, Melpomene, Polimnia, Terpsicore, Talia, y Uranica. Participaban[5] de los honores que se rendian[6] á Apolo y eran conocidas tambien por las nueve hermanas, las diosas del valle sagrado,[7] las castas[8] hijas de la memoria, las hermanas de Apolo, etc. Se dice[9] que estas son las que

inspiran[10] á los poetas, las cuales se llaman sus hijos, los instruyen[11] en el buen gusto[12] de la poesía,[13] y les dictan[14] los versos[15] que cantando[16] los hechos[17] de los héroes,[18] inmortalizan[19] su memoria.

Caliope preside á la elocuencia,[20] y á la poesia heroica.[21] Se la representa[22] bajo la figura de una jóven con aire magestuoso[23] coronada[24] de laureles[25] y adornada con guirnaldas[26] de flores, en la mano derecha una trompeta[27] y en la izquierda un libro. Clio preside á la historia. Se la representa coronada de laurel, con una trompeta en la mano derecha y en la izquierda un libro. Erato preside á la poesía lírica.[28] Se la representa bajo la figura de una jóven con aire risueño,[29] coronada de mirto[30] y rosas, en una mano la lira[31] y en la otra el plectro,[32] á su lado un Cupidillo[33] alado[34] con arco[35] y aljaba.[36]

1, *Musa*, muse. 2, *Menemosina*, Mnemosyne. 3, *Diosa*, goddess. 4, *Memoria*, memory. 5, *Participar*, to participate. 6, *Rendirse*, to be rendered. 7, *Sagrado*, sacred. 8, *Casto*, chaste. 9, *Decirse*, to be said. 10, *Inspirar*, to inspire. 11, *Instruir*, to instruct, (verbs ending in *uir* change *i* into *y* in terminations which join it to a vowel; *instruyen* not *instruien.*) 12, *Gusto*, taste. 13, *Poesía*, poetry. 14, *Dictar*, to dictate. 15, *Verso*, verse. 16, *Cantando*, singing. 17, *Hecho*, deed. 18, *Héroe*, hero. 19, *Inmortalizar*, to immortalize. 20, *Elocuencia*, eloquence. 21, *Heróico*, heroic. 22, *Representarse*, to be represented. 23, *Magestuoso*, majestic. 24, *Coronado*, crowned. 25, *Laurel*, laurel. 26, *Guirnalda*, garland. 27, *Trompeta*, trumpet. 28, *Lírico*, lyric. 29, *Risueño*, smiling. 30, *Mirto*, myrtle. 31, *Lira*, lyre. 32, *Plectro*, plectrum. 33, *Cupidillo*, little Cupid. 34, *Alado*, winged. 35, *Arco*, bow. 36, *Aljaba* quiver.

---

68. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA OCTAVA.

PAST DEFINITE.

The boy knows how to swim.	El muchacho sabe nadar.

How, used as in this last phrase, is not to be translated into Spanish.

Does he know how to read?	¿Sabe él leer?
He knows how to read and write.	Sabe leer y escribir.
Cheap. Dear.	*Barato. Caro.*
A *lamp.* A *basin*, *washbowl.*	Una *lámpara.* Una *palangana.*
A *concert.* *Sugar-plums.*	Un *concierto.* Los *confites.*
Sugar-candy. Candy.	El *azúcar-candi.* El *caramelo.*
A *catholic.* A *protestant.*	Un *católico.* Un *protestante.*
The *metal.* Some *pewter.*	El *metal.* Algún *peltre.*

A *partridge*. To *depart*, *set out*.	Una *perdiz*. *Partir*.
I intend to depart to-morrow.	Pienso partir mañana.
What bird is this?	¿Que ave es esta?
It is a partridge.	Es una perdiz.
This metal is pewter.	Este metal es peltre.
I paid a dollar for that washbowl.	He pagado un peso por esa palangana.
Is it not dear?	¿No es cara?
No, sir; it is cheap.	No, señor; es barata.

PAST DEFINITE OF CONDUCIR.

Conduje, *condujiste*, *condujo*, *condujimos*, *condujisteis*, *condujeron*.
I conducted, thou conductedst, he conducted, we conducted, you conducted, they conducted.

REMARK. In this manner is formed the past definite of all verbs ending in *ucir*.

Didst thou conduct thy brother-in-law to the church on Sunday?	¿Condujiste á tu cuñado á la iglesia el domingo?
I conducted him to the church, and my brother conducted him to Mr. B.'s.	Yo le conduje á la iglesia, y mi hermano le condujo á casa del señor B.
They conducted him to the catholic church.	Le condujeron á la iglesia católica.
We conducted him to the protestant church.	Le condujimos á la iglesia protestante.

PAST DEFINITE OF DAR.

Yo di,	*tú diste*,	*él dió*,	*nosotros dimos*,	*vosotros disteis*,	*ellos dieron*.
I gave,	thou gavest,	he gave,	we gave,	you gave,	they gave.

When the little boys were here didst thou give them anything?	¿Cuando los muchachitos estaban aquí les diste alguna cosa?
I gave them sugar-plums, and my friend gave them sugar-candy.	Les di confites y mi amigo les dió azúcar-candi.
Did you give the master the gold rings?	¿Dieron VV. al maestro los anillos de oro?
We gave them to him.	Se los dimos.
To extinguish. A *fig*.	*Apagar*. Un *higo*.
The *furniture*. An *article of furniture*.	Los *muebles*. Un *mueble*.
You extinguish the lamp.	V. apaga la lámpara.
I have bought some furniture.	He comprado muebles.
There are figs in that garden.	Hay higos en aquel jardin.

Did you buy that washbowl cheap? I paid a dollar and a half (for it). You bought it very dear. Did you conduct your friend to the concert last night? No, sir; I conducted him to the theatre. Did you conduct him to your house? We conducted him there. Didst thou conduct him to the church on Sunday? Yes, sir; I con-

ducted him to the protestant church, and my nephews conducted him to the catholic. When does he intend to depart? He has departed already. Did he give the children anything before departing? He gave them some sugar-plums and candy. Didst thou give him anything? I gave him a beautiful ring, and my uncle's son-in-law gave him a gold watch. Did you give him any books? We gave him some French and some Spanish books; but we did not give him any English ones, because he does not know how to read English. Of what metal are those spoons? That one is of silver, and this of pewter. What bird is that? It is a partridge. Are there many partridges in this country? There are many.

Have you seen the countryman to-day? No, sir; I have not seen him since (*desde*) Sunday. What do you do after breakfasting? I read and study. What have you to do after dining? I have to write some exercises. Have you written any to-day? I have not written any since Saturday. Do you lose many umbrellas? I lose more than ten every year. Do you always find what you lose? I do not often find it. What have you to do now? I have to finish some lessons. Do you play instead of listening? No, sir; I listen instead of playing. Do you not sleep instead of studying? I sleep enough, but I study more than (*de lo que*) I sleep. Are your going a fishing to-day? I am going a fishing to-day, and I shall go a hunting to-morrow. What has the servant to do? He has to arrange (*arreglar*) my books. Are not your brother's eyes black? Yes, sir; and his hair is black also.

Is not Miss B. pretty? She is pretty, but her mouth is too small, and her neck too long. What is that man carrying on his shoulder? He is carrying a burden of books. Have the scholars made many mistakes in the exercises which they have written? They have made many. What are you reading? I am reading geography and history. What has the servant broken? He has broken the pitcher. What do you like for your breakfast? I like toast and eggs, with coffee.

Euterpe fué inventora[1] de la flauta,[2] y es la que preside á la música[3] y poesía pastoral. Se la representa en la figura de una jóven coronada de flores, que tiene en la mano un libro de música, y á su lado, flautas, oboes,[4] etc.

Melpomene preside á la tragedia,[5] se la representa jóven con aire triste, calzada[6] con coturno[7] y ricamente[8] ataviada[9] teniendo[10] en una mano cestros[11] y coronas,[12] y en la otra un puñal.[13]

Polimnia preside á la retórica[14] y al arte del gesto[15] y declamacion,[16] de que es la inventora. Se la representa jóven, vestida[17] de blanco y coronada de perlas,[18] teniendo un cetro[19] en la mano izquierda, y la derecha levantada en accion[20] de arengar.[21] Terpsicore preside al baile.[22] Se la representa bajo la figura de una jóven coronada de flores en accion de bailar[23] con una lira en la mano y varios instrumentos[24] de música en torno[25] suyo.

Talia preside á la comedia.[26] Se la representa bajo figura de una jóven, con aire alegre, coronada de yedra,[27] calzada de zuecos[28] y teniendo en una mano una máscara[29] y en la otra un cayado.[30] Urania preside á la astronomía.[31] Se la representa coronada de estrellas, ropage[32] azul, en una mano el globo[33] celeste,[34] en la otra una varita[35] para demostrar[36] lo que está señalado[37] sobre la esfera[38] y en torno suyo instrumentos de matemáticas[39] y astronomía.

1, *Inventora*, inventor. 2, *Flauta*, flute. 3, *Música*, music. 4, *Oboe*, hautboy. 5, *Tragedia*, tragedy. 6, *Calzado*, (shod,) having the feet covered. 7, *Coturno*, buskin. 8, *Ricamente*, richly. 9, *Ataviado*, ornamented. 10, *Teniendo*, holding. 11, *Cestro*, sistrum. 12, *Corona*, crown. 13, *Puñal*, dagger. 14, *Retórica*, rhetoric. 15, *Gesto*, rhetorical action. 16, *Declamacion*, declamation. 17, *Vestido*, clothed. 18, *Perla*, pearl. 19, *Cetro*, sceptre. 20, *Accion*, act. 21, *Arengar*, to harangue. 22, *Baile*, dance. 23, *Bailar*, to dance. 24, *Instrumento*, instrument. 25, *En torno suyo*, around her. 26, *Comedia*, comedy. 27, *Yedra*, ivy. 28, *Zueco*, sock. 29, *Máscara*, mask. 30, *Cayado*, shepherd's crook. 31, *Astronomía*, astronomy. 32, *Ropage*, apparel. 33, *Globo*, globe. 34, *Celeste*, celestial. 35, *Varita*, rod. 36, *Demostrar*, to point out. 37, *Señalado*, marked. 38, *Esfera*, globe. 39, *Matemático*, mathematical.

---

69. LECCION SEXAGÉSIMA NONA.

PAST DEFINITE.

Just as much.	*Justamente tanto.*
Just the same.	*Justamente lo mismo.*
Friendship. To go, to walk.	La *amistad. Andar.*
A *half.* A *mile.*	Una *mitad.* Una *milla.*
To hear of. Death.	*Oir hablar.* La *muerte.*
Frequently. I go out frequently.	*A menudo.* Salgo á menudo.
Worthy. Unworthy.	*Digno. Indigno.*

Distance. A great distance.	*Distancia.* Mucha distancia.
On *foot.* On *horseback.*	A *pié.* A *caballo.*
I like figs less than peaches.	Me gustan los higos ménos que los melocotones.
Do you like figs more than apples?	¿Le gustan á V. los higos mas que las manzanas?
I like them just as much.	Me gustan justamente tanto (lo mismo).
Do you eat more than your brother?	¿Come V. mas que su hermano?
I eat just the same.	Como justamente lo mismo.
I go in the garden every morning.	Ando en el jardin todas las mañanas.
I was walking in the garden when he came to my house.	Andaba en el jardin cuando vino á mi casa.
I have walked in the woods.	He andado en los bosques.

PAST DEFINITE OF ANDAR, (like that of *Estar*, Les. 64.)

Anduve,	*anduviste,*	*anduvo,*	*anduvimos,*	*anduvisteis,*	*anduvieron.*
I went,	thou wentest,	he went,	we went,	you went,	they went.

Where didst thou go this morning?	¿Por donde anduviste esta mañana?
I went in the street.	Anduve por la calle.
Did you go a great distance on foot?	¿Anduvieron VV. mucha distancia á pié?
We went more than five miles.	Anduvimos mas de cinco millas.
When my brother was going to the country, he went more than half way on foot.	Cuando mi hermano iba al campo, anduvo mas de la mitad del camino á pié.

PAST DEFINITE OF SABER.

Supe,	*supiste,*	*supo,*	*supimos,*	*supisteis,*	*supieron.*
I knew,	thou knowest,	he knew,	we knew,	you knew,	they knew.

Didst thou know thy lesson yesterday?	¿Supiste tu leccion ayer?
I knew it very well.	La supe muy bien.
My cousin did not know hers.	Mi prima no supo la suya.
Did you know what I did yesterday?	¿Supieron VV. lo que hice ayer?
We did not know it until this morning.	No lo supimos hasta esta mañana.
When I went to the country this morning, I went half the way on horseback.	Cuando fuí al campo esta mañana, anduve la mitad del camino á caballo.
My cousin is worthy of your friendship.	Mi primo es digno de su amistad de V.
That man is unworthy.	Aquel hombre es indigno.
I have heard of the death of my friend.	He oido hablar de la muerte de mi amigo.
Do you like peaches more than figs?	¿Le gustan á V. los melocotones mas que los higos?
I like them just as much.	Me gustan justamente tanto.

Do you extinguish the lamp? No, madam; I extinguish the

candle instead of extinguishing the lamp. Do the boys extinguish the fire? They do not extinguish the fire, but we extinguish it. Have you already extinguished the fire? We have not extinguished it yet, but we shall extinguish it soon. What article of furniture have you bought? I have bought a beautiful sofa. What furniture has the stranger in his room? He has a bed, six chairs, two tables, a bureau, a looking-glass (*espejo*), a book-case, (*armario para libros*), a wash-bowl, and a pitcher. Are you tired? Yes, sir; because when I came from the country this morning I went more than six miles on foot. Do you often go on horseback? I go on horseback almost every morning. Do you like better to go on horseback than on foot? I like sometimes to go on foot better than on horseback. Do our brothers go on horseback more than we? They go on horseback just as much as we. Did you go in the garden this morning? We went there before breakfasting. What did you give the little boy? I gave him the half of an apple, and the half of an orange. Have you heard of the death of the general? Yes, sir; I heard of it yesterday.

Are you acquainted with that bachelor? I am acquainted with him; he is a man worthy of your friendship; but, the spouse of his sister is a dunce (*bobo*), and unworthy of the friendship of a good man. Did you go in the street last night? I went a great distance. Didst thou know thy lesson yesterday? I knew mine, and my cousin knew his very well. Did you know them the day before yesterday? Yes, sir; we knew them then (*entónces*), and we almost always know them. Did you buy that article of furniture cheap? No, madam; it was somewhat dear. Did you conduct the general's niece to the concert? Yes, sir; and my sister conducted her to the protestant church. What did the master give the little boys? He gave them sugar-plums and candy.

Do you sleep as much in winter as in summer? Yes, sir; I sleep more in winter than in summer. Have the carpenters finished their work? They have finished it. Do you always listen to what the master says? I always listen to it, but my cousin plays instead of listening. Do you often go a hunting? Yes, sir; I often go a hunting and a fishing. Is your right hand sore? No, sir; but my left

hand is (*pero si la izquierda*). Has the master found many mistakes in your exercises? He has not found more than two.

Diana, hija de Júpiter y Latona y hermana de Apolo, es conocida[1] por los poetas bajo tres nombres y aspectos diferentes, lo que ha dado lugar á llamarla la *triple*[2] *Hecate;* á saber,[3] Luna en el cielo, Diana en la tierra, y Hecate en los infiernos. Casi siempre confunden[4] los poetas á Hecate con Proserpina á pesar de[5] que su poder[6] en los infiernos no se estendia mas que á poder detener[7] cien años en las márgenes de la Estigia[8] las sombras[9] de los que no habian sido sepultados.[10]

Diana era la diosa de los cazadores[11] porque habitaba los bosques[12] y las selvas[13] con una tropa de Ninfas[14] ocupadas siempre en la caza.[15] Se la representa con aire noble y majestuoso,[16] pero modesto, calzada de coturno, en una mano una flecha,[17] en la otra el arco, á la espalda[18] la aljaba,[19] y sobre la cabeza una media luna.[20] Algunas veces la representan en un carro[21] tirado[22] por corzas.[23] Comunmente[24] se la llama[25] la *casta Diana* porque nunca quiso[26] casarse.[27]

El marques[28] de Cortes decia que él que carecia[29] de amigos era como panal[30] sin miel, espiga[31] sin trigo, árbol sin fruto.

1, *Conocido*, known. 2, *Triple*, three-fold. 3, *A saber*, namely. 4, *Confundir*, to confound. 5, *A pesar de*, notwithstanding. 6, *Poder*, power. 7, *Detener*, to detain. 8, *Estigia*, Styx. 9, *Sombra*, ghost. 10, *Sepultado*, buried. 11, *Cazador*, hunter. 12, *Bosque*, wood. 13, *Selva*, forest. 14, *Ninfa*, nymph. 15, *Caza*, chase. 16, *Majestuoso*, majestic. 17, *Flecha*, arrow. 18, *Espalda*, back of the shoulder. 19, *Aljaba*, quiver. 20, *Luna*, moon. 21, *Carro*, car. 22, *Tirado*, drawn. 23, *Corza*, deer, 24, *Comunmente*, commonly. 25, *Llamarse*, to be called. 26, *Quiso*, was willing, past definite of *Querer*, See Les. 65. 27, *Casarse*, to marry. 28, *Marques*, marquis. 29, *Carecer*, to want. 30, *Panal*, honey-comb. 31, *Espiga*, ear.

---

70. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA.

PAST DEFINITE.

Thus, so. I do it thus.
A *book case.* A *looking-glass.*
A *squirrel.* *Heavy.*
The *wood, grove, forest.*
A *mouse, rat.* A *fox.*
The *bellows.* The *Irishman.*

A *moment.* *To begin.*

Así. Lo hago así.
Un *armario para libros.* Un *espejo.*
Una *ardilla.* *Pesado.*
El *bosque, la floresta, la selva.*
Un *raton.* Una *zorra.*
Los *fuelles.* El *Irlandes.*
Un *momento.* *Comenzar*, (varied as *Cerrar á* bef. inf.)

Dost thou begin to speak Spanish?	¿ Comienzas tú á hablar español?
I begin to speak it a little.	Comienzo á hablarle un poco.
That child begins to read.	Aquel niño comienza á leer.
Do you begin to understand French?	¿ Comienzan VV. á entender el frances?
We begin to understand it.	Comenzamos á entenderle.

PAST DEFINITE OF CABER.

Cupe,	*cupiste,*	*cupo,*	*cupimos,*	*cupisteis,*	*cupieron.*
I was contained,	thou wast contained, etc				

My clothes could not be contained in the trunk, and I had to sell them.	No cupo mi ropa en el baul, y tuve que venderla.
My books could not be contained in that book-case.	Mis libros no cupieron en ese armario.
The wine could not be contained in the cask.	El vino no cupo en el tonel.

PAST DEFINITE OF QUERER

Quise,	*quisiste,*	*quiso,*	*quisimos,*	*quisisteis,*	*quisieron.*
I wished,	thou wishedst,	he wished,	we wished,	you wished,	they wished.

What didst thou wish yesterday in the store?	¿ Que quisiste ayer en el almacen?
I wished for gloves, but my uncle wished for stockings.	Yo quise guantes, pero mi tio quiso medias.
Did you wish for anything more?	¿ Quisieron VV. algo mas?
We wished for nothing more.	No quisimos nada mas.

PAST DEFINITE OF TRAER.

Traje,	*trajiste,*	*trajo,*	*trajimos,*	*trajisteis,*	*trajeron.*
I brought,	thou broughtest,	he brought,	we brought,	you brought,	they brought.

Did you bring my brother anything when you came from the city?	¿ Trajo V. alguna cosa á mi hermano cuando vino de la ciudad?
I brought him a letter.	Le traje una carta.
Did you bring us some letters?	¿ Nos trajeron VV. cartas?
No, sir; we brought you some books.	No, señor; trajimos á VV. libros.
To throw, to throw away.	*Tirar.*
I have sold my book-case.	He vendido mi armario para libros.
I have to buy a looking-glass.	Tengo que comprar un espejo.
A heavy burden of books.	Una carga pesada de libros.
I have been in the wood.	He estado en el bosque.
Why dost thou throw away thy gloves?	¿ Porqué tiras tus guantes?
I throw them away because they are worth nothing.	Los tiro porque no valen nada.
To do well, to be right.	*Hacer bien.*
To do evil, to be wrong.	*Hacer mal.*
Have I done well in killing the mice?	¿ He hecho bien en matar los ratones?

You have done well in killing them, but you were wrong in killing the squirrel.	V. ha hecho bien en matarlos, pero ha hecho mal en matar la ardilla.
Lend me your bellows a moment.	Présteme sus fuelles un momento.

How do you make the fire? I make it thus. Why have you sold your trunk? Because all my clothes could not be contained in it. Did the merchant give you a glass of wine yesterday? He wished to give me one, but I was not willing to take it. Were his children willing to give you some flowers? They were willing to give us some, and we were willing to receive them. What have you to buy? I have to buy a lamp, a looking-glass, and much other furniture. Who brought you that heavy burden? The Irishman brought it to me last night. Who brought you those flowers? The children brought them to me yesterday. Didst thou bring anything from the country on Saturday? I brought a pretty little squirrel. Dost thou begin to speak Spanish? I begin to speak it a little, and my brother begins to speak French also. Do you begin to write letters in Spanish? We do not begin yet. Why have you been to the wood this morning? I have been a hunting. What have you killed? I have killed some partridges, some squirrels, and a fox. Were you not wrong in killing them? I was wrong in killing the squirrels, but not in killing the fox.

Will you lend me your bellows a moment? You can take them after a little (*en poco tiempo*). Have you heard of the death of my uncle? I have heard of it. Is the cotton crop good this year? It is not so good this year as the last. What have you bought at the store? I have bought some honey, some rice, and some pepper. Are you very fond of (*le gusta á V. mucho*) pepper? I am not very fond of it. Have you ever seen such a bird as that? I have never seen such. Is the cook in the kitchen (*cocina*)? No, sir; he is looking for the purse which he has lost in the street. Has the boy already learned his lesson? He has not learned it for he is a dunce (*bobo*), and can not learn anything.

Is that man a lawyer? He was formerly (*primero*) a lawyer, but now he is a merchant. Has the master corrected your exercises?

He cannot correct them, for I have made no mistakes. Whose cottage is that? It is the countryman's. Whose boat is that? It is the boatman's. What is your little friend studying? He is studying geography, arithmetic, and history. What do you like for breakfast? I like toast and eggs with coffee. Are the crops as good this year as the last? They are better. Did you buy that cask of wine for cash or on credit? I could not buy it for cash, for I have a hole in my pocket, and have lost my money.

Era Tlascala una ciudad muy populosa,[1] fundada sobre cuatro eminencias[2] poco distantes, que se prolongaban[3] de oriente á poniente[4] con desigual magnitud,[5] y fiadas[6] en la natural fortaleza[7] de sus peñascos,[8] contenian[9] en sí los edificios, formando[10] cuatro cabeceras[11] ó barrios[12] distintos,[13] cuya division se unia y comunicaba por diferentes calles de paredes gruesas[14] que servian de muralla.[15] Gobernaban[16] esta poblacion cuatro cáciques,[17] descendientes[18] de sus primeros fundadores,[19] que pendian[20] del senado.[21] Las casas se levantaban[22] moderadamente[23] de la tierra, porque no usaban[24] segundo techo:[25] su fábrica[26] de piedra y ladrillo, y en vez de tejados;[27] azoteas[28] y corredores.[29]

Tenia toda la provincia[30] cincuenta leguas de circunferencia, diez de longitud[31] de oriente al poniente y cuatro de latitud[32] de norte á sud;[33] país montuoso[34] y quebrado,[35] pero muy fértil y bien cultivado en todos los parajes[36] donde la frecuencia[37] de los riscos[38] daba lugar al beneficio de la tierra.

1, ***Populoso***, populous. 2, ***Eminencia***, eminence. 3, ***Prolongarse***, to extend. 4, ***Poniente***, west. 5, ***Magnitud***, magnitude. 6, ***Fiado***, confident. 7, ***Fortaleza***, strength. 8, ***Peñasco***, rock. 9, ***Contenir***, to contain. 10, ***Formando***, forming. 11, ***Cabecera***, capitals. 12, ***Barrio***, district. 13, ***Distinto***, distinct. 14, ***Grueso***, thick. 15, ***Muralla***, wall of defence. 16, ***Gobernar***, to govern. 17, ***Cázique***, chief. 18, ***Descendiente***, descendant. 19, ***Fundador***, founder. 20, ***Pender***, to depend. 21, ***Senado***, senate. 22, ***Levantarse***, to rise. 23, ***Moderadamente***, moderately. 24, ***Usar***, to use. 25, ***Techo***, story. 26, ***Fábrica***, structure. 27, ***Tejado***, tiling. 28, ***Azotea***, terrace. 29, ***Corredor***, corridor. 30, ***Provincia***, province. 31, ***Longitud***, length. 32. ***Latitud***, breadth. 33, ***Sud***, south. 34, ***Montuoso***, mountainous. 35, ***Quebrado***, broken. 36, ***Paraje***, place. 37, ***Frecuencia***, frequency. 38, ***Risco***, rock.

---

71. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA PRIMERA.

PAST DEFINITE.

To hang, to hang up.	***Colgar***, (varied as ***mover***, Les. 37.)
The ***cord***. On the cord.	El ***cordel***. En el cordel.

Behind. Behind the house.	*Detras.* Detras de la casa.
I hang my coat behind the door.	Cuelgo mi casaca detras de la puerta.
Where do you hang your hats?	¿En donde cuelgan VV. sus sombreros?
We hang them on the nails.	Los colgamos en los clavos.
A pair. *Pleased, contented.*	Un *par*. *Contento*.
Alive. Dead. *Pond.*	Vivo. *Muerto*.
A pair of boots. Two pair of shoes.	Un par de botas. Dos pares de zapatos.
A shirt. A dozen.	Una camisa. Una docena.
Half a dozen shirts.	Media docena de camisas.
To get mended. To get washed.	*Hacer remendar*. *Hacer lavar*.
To get swept. To get made.	*Hacer barrer*. *Hacer hacer*.
To mend, repair. To order made.	*Mandar*. *Mandar hacer*.
Have you had your coat mended?	¿Ha hecho V. remendar su casaca?
I have had it mended.	La he hecho remendar.
I will have my shirts washed.	Hare lavar mis camisas.
He has our room swept every day.	Hace barrer su cuarto todos los dias.
I have ordered a pair of boots to be made.	He mandado hacer un par de botas.
We have our own books sold.	Hacemos vender nuestros libros.
Has your father-in-law set out?	¿Ha partido su suegro?
He has set out for France.	Ha partido para Francia.
I am going to set out for England.	Voya partir para Inglaterra.
The house. Wet.	El *Jenado*. *Mojado*.
The weight. To weigh.	El peso. *Pesar*.
I weigh a hundred and forty pounds.	Peso ciento y cuarenta libras.
What weight has that fish?	¿Que peso tiene ese pescado?
I weigh four pounds, four ounces and a half.	Peso dos libras, cuatro onzas y media.
A lodger.	Un *huesped*, una *huespeda*.
A lodging-house.	Una casa de *huespedes*, Una *posada*.
I have found a good boarding-house: I pay twenty dollars a month for board and five for the room.	He encontrado una buena posada; pago veinte pesos al mes por la comida, y cinco por el cuarto.
That man keeps a boarding-house: there are many boarders in it.	Aquel hombre tiene una posada; hay muchos huespedes en ella.
The master is content with you.	El maestro está contento de V.
Is that fish alive or dead?	¿Está vivo ó muerto ese pescado?
It is alive.	Está vivo.

PAST DEFINITE OF PONER.

Where	I put,	you put,	he put,	we put,	you put,	they put.
Where	did you put,	he put,	we put,	you put,	they put.	

Where did you put my book yesterday? ¿Donde puiste mi libro ayer?

I put it on the table, and afterwards your brother put it in the drawer.	Le puse sobre la mesa, y despues su hermano de V. le puso en el cajon.
Where did you put your books?	¿ Donde pusiéron VV. sus libros?
We put them in the book-case.	Los pusimos en el armario para libros.

Do you wish to hang up your hat? Yes, sir; I wish to hang it on this nail. Where do you commonly hang your cloak? I commonly hang it in the other room, behind the door. Where (*en donde*) do the children hang their hats? They hang them on the nails near ours. In what room do you hang your cloaks? We hang them in the same room that you do (*que V*). Where does the washerwoman hang her wet linen? She hangs it on the cord behind the house. Did you not have my inkstand yesterday? Yes, sir; I had it and I put it on your desk. Where did you put my papers? I put them in the drawer. Where did you put our pens? We put them on the desk near the inkstand. Does your father set out to-day for Spain? No, miss; he will set out to-morrow. Has your brother set out for France? No, miss; he has set out for England and Scotland. How much does that cheese weigh? It weighs fifty pounds and a half. How much does that tea weigh? It weighs two pounds and five ounces. What weight has that trunk? It weighs twenty pounds.

Do you like this honey and this rice? I like the rice, but the honey is bitter. Does that man intend to go to the war? He does not intend to go; he is not a coward, but he prefers peace to war. Is that orange bitter? No, sir; it is very sweet. What does the master teach? He teaches the French language (*la lengua francesa*). What will you do to-morrow? I shall breakfast at seven, and go to the other side of the bay to hunt and fish, and shall return at six in the afternoon. What is the matter with you? My right hand is sore, and my left a little sore also. Of what color is your coat? It is black. To whom do you make a visit? I make a visit to that man who is sick, because I have pity for him.

Have you not pity on those who are sick? I pity them much. What have you bought? I have bought a cask of wine, a wash-bowl, and a pitcher. Did you buy that silver pitcher cheap? No, sir; I bought it dear, for I bought it on credit. Do you wish for some

tobacco (*tabaco*)? No, sir; I thank you; I never smoke. Do you know how to swim? I do not know how; but my brother is a good swimmer. Will that lady go to the concert? No, miss; she will go to the catholic church. Is she not a protestant? No, miss; she is a catholic. When you went to the country, did you go on foot? I went half of the way on foot and the rest (*lo demas*) on horseback. What does your neighbor do? He keeps a boarding-house. Are there many boarders in it? There are very many.

España á quien hoy desprecia[1] el vulgo[2] de las naciones extranjeras, fué altamente[3] celebrada,[4] en otro tiempo, por las mismas naciones extranjeras en sus mejores plumas.[5] Ninguna le ha disputado[6] el esfuerzo,[7] la grandeza[8] de ánimo,[9] la constancia,[10] la gloria[11] militar, con preferencia[12] á los habitantes de todos los demas reinos. Tucidides[13] testifica[14] que eran los Españoles sin controversia[15] los mas belicosos[16] entre todos los bárbaros.[17] Livio[18] los llama gente fiera[19] y belicosa. Dionisio[20] le da el atributo[21] de magnánima. Tibulo[22] de atrevida.[23] Lucio Floro[24] de guerreadora,[25] de noble en armas,[26] y varones[27] fuertes, y lo que es mas que todo, la apellida[28] *Maestra*[29] *del grande Anibal*[30] en la profesion[31] militar. Pero no es menor el de Vagecio,[32] el cual confiesa[33] que exceden[34] en fortaleza[35] los Españoles á los Romanos.

1, *Despreciar*, to despise. 2, *Vulgo*, multitude. 3, *Altamente*, highly. 4, *Celebrado*, celebrated. 5, *Pluma*, pen (writer). 6, *Disputado*, disputed. 7, *Esfuerzo*, courage. 8, *Grandeza*, greatness. 9, *Animo*, spirit. 10, *Constancia*, firmness. 11, *Gloria*, glory. 12, *Con preferencia*, in preference. 13, *Tucidides*, Thucydides. 14, *Testificar*, to attest. 15, *Contròversia*, controversy. 16, *Belicoso*, warlike. 17, *Bárbaro*, barbarian. 18, *Livio*, Livy. 19, *Fiero*, fierce. 20, *Dionisio*, Dionysius. 21, *Atributo*, attribute. 22, *Tibulo*, Tibulus. 23, *Atrevido*, bold. 24, *Lucio Florio*, Lucius Florius. 25, *Guerreador*, warrior. 26, *Armas*, arms. 27, *Varon*, man. 28, *Apellido*, called (so called). 29, *Maestra*, instructress. 30, *Anibal*, Hannibal. 31, *Profesion*, profession. 32, *Vegecio*, Vegecius. 33, *Confesar*, to confess (varied as *cerrar*.) 34, *Exceder*, to surpass. 35, *Fortaleza*, valor.

---

72. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA SEGUNDA.

VERBS, NOUNS, ETC.

The *cholera*. *Anger*.	El *cólera*. La *cólera*.
The *ice*. The *snow*.	El *hielo*. La *nieve*.
Ice-water	*Agua con hielo* (or *con nieve*).

Haber is sometimes impersonal as follows,

There is, there are.	*Hay* or *ha**, (present.)
There was, there were.	*Habia*, (imperfect.)
There was, there were.	*Hubo*, (past definite.)
There has been, there have been.	*Ha habido*, (past indefinite.)
There will be.	*Habrá*, (future.)
Are there many people at your house?	¿ Hay muchas gentes en casa de V.?
There are not many now, but there were many yesterday, and there will be many to-morrow.	No hay muchas ahora, pero habia muchas ayer, y habrá muchas mañana.
In the year thirty-two there was much cholera in Havana.	El año de trienta y dos hubo mucho cólera en la Habana.
The *robber*. *To bark.*	El *ladron*. *Ladrar.*
The dog barks.	El perro ladra.
To dance. He dances.	*Bailar.* El baila.
To lock. A *pine-apple.*	*Cerrar con llave.* Una *piña.*
I have locked the door.	Yo he cerrado la puerta con llave.
Fried. A *pig.* A *little pig.*	*Frito.* Un *cochino.* Un *cochinito.*
Roast pig and fried fish.	Cochino asado y pescado frito.
Former. Former years.	*Anterior.* Años anteriores.
Christmas day. To dance.	El *dia de navidad. Bailar.*
She sings, plays, and dances.	Ella canta, toca y baila.
I am much obliged to you.	Quedo á V. muy agradecido.
There is no occasion for it.	No hay de que.
Where were you on Christmas day?	¿ Donde estaba V. el dia de navidad?
I was at home.	Estaba en mi casa.

What does that man say? He says that there is much cholera in New Orleans. In the year thirty-two there was much also. Where did you go last winter? I went to Boston, and there I was almost always near the fire, for there was more cold that year than in many former ones. Is there ice-water in that pitcher? There is not now, but there was this morning, and there will be this evening. Has there been much heat this summer? There has not been much, but more than the last summer. Where did you go on Monday? I went to the market. Are you a merchant? No, sir; I keep a boarding-house. Have you many boarders? Not so many now as in the winter. Where does the washerwoman hang her wet clothes? She hangs them on the cord, in the yard. How many shirts are there in

* *Hay* becomes *ha* at the end of a clause or sentence; as, It is ten years, *diez años ha.*

that drawer? There are a dozen. What is the weight of that fish? It weighs four pounds and a half; I bought it alive in the market. Are you pleased with your servant? I am so (*lo*), for he is good and industrious. What does that Irishman wish for? He wishes for the bellows a moment. What is the servant doing? He is killing mice. Are there many here? Yes, sir; for we have no cat to kill them.

Why did you go to the woods yesterday? I went a hunting yesterday, and I have been a hunting to-day also. What have you killed? I have killed two squirrels and a fox. Were you right in killing them? I was right in killing the fox; but I was wrong in killing the squirrels. How do you make a fire without tongs (*tenazas*)? I make it thus. What has the Irishman bought? He has bought a looking-glass, a bellows, and a pair of boots. Is your right hand sore? My right hand is sore and my left also. What do you wish for breakfast? I wish for toast and eggs, with butter, salt, and pepper. Has there been snow here this winter? No, sir; but there was some last winter. Was there ice here last winter? Yes, sir; there is ice here every winter. Will there be much cotton this year? Yes, sir; the crop is very good.

Of what are those children afraid? They are afraid of the dogs which are barking in the street. Is that stranger afraid? Yes, sir; he is afraid of robbers. Do you always lock the door when you go out? I do not always lock it. What have you eaten for breakfast? I have eaten fried fish. What does the stranger like for his dinner? He likes fried fish and roast pig (*puerco*). Do you like pine-apples? I like them much, and I have bought some in the market.

Manuel allí tiene V. una sortija[1] que le presto. Vea[2] como brilla![3] Póngala[4] al sol.[5] Veo en ella todos los colores. ¿Que piedra brillante[6] es esta? Es un diamante. Es muy duro. Un rubí[6] es colorado, una emeralde[7] es verde, un topacio[8] es amarillo, un zafir[9] es azul,[10] una amatista[11] es purpúrea,[12] el granate[13] es colorado, el berilo[14] es de un verde claro.[15] Todas estas cosas son sacadas[16] de la tierra. Se llaman joyas[17] ó piedras preciosas. ¿Que son estos pequeños granos redondos y blancos que cuelgan de sus orejas. Son perlas. ¿Vienen tambien de la tierra? No, vienen del mar. Las perlas se encuentran en las conchas[18] de las ostras.[19] ¿Se derriten[20] las piedras preciosas en el fuego? No. ¿Viene

el vídrio de la tierra? No, le hacen en las vidrierías,[21] donde hay mucho fuego dia y noche. Algun dia llevaré á V. á una vidriería, en dónde verá hacer el vídrio. El vídrio no vale tanto como las piedras preciosas.

1, *Sortija*, ring. 2, *Vea*, see, (imperative of *ver*.) 3, *Brillar*, to shine. 4, *Ponga*, put, (imperative of *poner*.) 5, *Brillante*, shining. 6, *Rubí*, ruby. 7, *Emeralde*, emerald. 8, *Topacio*, topaz. 9, *Zafir*, sapphire. 10, *Azul*, blue. 11, *Amatista*, amethyst. 12, *Purpúreo* purple. 13, *Granate*, garnet. 14, *Berilo*, beryl. 15, *Claro*, bright. 16, *Sacado*, drawn (taken). 17, *Joyas*, jewels. 18, *Concha*, shell. 19, *Ostra*, oyster. 20, *Derretir*, to melt. 21, *Vidriería*, glass factory.

---

73. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA TERCERA.

THE PAST DEFINITE FORMED.

The past definite of all Spanish verbs, except those already given and their compounds, is formed in the *first conjugation*, by changing AR final of the infinitive into the terminations

	E,	ASTE,	O,	AMOS,	ASTEIS,	ARON, as
TOMAR, to take,	*Tomé*, I took,	*Tomaste*, Thou tookest,	*Tomó*, He took,	*Tomamos*, We took,	*Tomasteis*, You took,	*Tomaron*. They took.
LLAMAR, To call,	*Llamé*, I called,	*Llamaste*, Thou calledst,	*Llamó*, He called,	*Llamamos*, We called,	*Llamasteis*, You called,	*Llamaron*. They called.

In the *Second* and *Third Conjugations* it is formed by changing ER and IR final of the infinitive, into the terminations.

	I,	ISTE,	IO,	IMOS,	ISTEIS,	IERON, as
VENDER, To sell.	*Vendí*, I sold,	*Vendiste*, Thou soldest,	*Vendió*, He sold,	*Vendimos*. We sold,	*Vendisteis*, You sold,	*Vendieron*. They sold.
BEBER, To drink	*Bebí*, I drank,	*Bebiste*, Thou drankest,	*Bebió*, He drank,	*Bebimos*, We drank,	*Bebisteis*, You drank.	*Bebieron*. They drank.
VIVIR, To live,	*Vivi*, I lived,	*Viviste*, Thou lividst,	*Vivió*, He lived,	*Vivimos*, We lived,	*Vivisteis*. You lived,	*Vivieron*. They lived.
ESCRIBIR, To write.	*Escribí*, I wrote,	*Escribiste*, Thou wrotest,	*Escribió*, He wrote,	*Escribimos*, We wrote,	*Escribisteis*, You wrote,	*Escribieron*. They wrote.

The irregular past definites, all of which have been given in the preceding lessons are these;

Andar,	past definite	*Anduvé*,	Les. 69.	Poder,	past definite	*Pude*,	Les. 67.
Caber,	"	*Cupe*,	" 70.	Poner,	"	*Puse*,	" 71.
Conducir,	"	*Conduje*,*	" 68.	Querer,	"	*Quise*,	" 70.
Dar,	"	*Di*,	" 68.	Saber,	"	*Supe*,	" 69.
Decir,	"	*Dije*,	" 66.	Ser,	"	*Fui*,	" 64.
Estar,	"	*Estuve*,	" 64.	Tener,	"	*Tuve*,	" 64.
Haber,	"	*Hube*	"	Traer,	"	*Traje*,	" 70.
Hacer,	"	*Hice*,	" 66.	Venir,†	"	*Vine*,	" 67.
Ir,	"	*Fui*,	" 65.				

The following slight irregularities belong also to this tense:

1. Verbs of the third conjugation, having *e* in the penult syllable of the infinitive, which in the first person singular of the indicative present change that *e* into *i*, or take an *i* before it, have *i* also instead of *e* in the third person singular and plural of the past definite, as,

Pedir, present Pido, past definite *Pidió* (sing.) *Pidieron* (pl.)
Preferir " Prefiero, " *Prefirió* " *Prefirieron* "

2. The following also are irregular by a single letter, in the third person singular and plural.

Dormir, to sleep, makes *Durmió*, *Durmieron*.
Morir, to die, " *Murió*, *Murieron*.
Podrir, to rot, " *Pudrió*, *Pudrieron*.
Erguir, to erect, " *Irguió*, *Irguieron*.

When thou breakfastedst at the general's, didst thou take tea or coffee? — ¿Cuando almorzaste en casa del general, tomaste té ó café?
I took coffee, but the general took tea. — Tomé café pero el general tomó té.
How many cups did you take? — ¿Cuantas tazas tomaron VV.?
We took two. — Tomamos dos.
Didst thou sell him thy horse? — ¿Le vendiste tu caballo?
I sold him to him. — Se le vendí.

* All verbs compounded with *ducir* form this tense like *Conducir*; as, *Aducir*, to adduce; *Deducir*, to deduct; *Introducir*, to introduce; *Producir*, to produce; *Reducir*, to reduce; *Traducir*, to translate.

† The following also are compounds of the above,

Bendecir, to bless.
Contradecir, to contradict.
Desdecir, to give the lie.
Maldecir, to curse.
Predecir, to predict.
Contrahacer, to counterfeit.
Deshacer, to undo.
Rehacer, to do again.
Satisfacer, to satisfy.
Anteponer, to prefer.
Componer, to compose.
Deponer, to depose.
Descomponer, to discompose.
Disponer, to dispose.
Exponer, to expose.
Imponer, to impose.
Indisponer, to indispose.
Oponer, to oppose.
Proponer, to propose.
Presuponer, to presuppose.
Reponer, to replace.
Sobreponer, to put on.
Suponer, to suppose.
Trasponer, to transpose.
Atener, to keep pace.
Contener, to contain.
Detener, to maintain.
Retener, to retain.
Entretener, to entertain.
Mantener, to retain.
Sostener, to support.
Abstraer, to abstract.
Atraer, to attract.
Contraer, to contract.
Detraer, to detract.
Distraer, to distract.
Extraer, to extract.
Retraer, to withdraw.
Retrotraer, to antedate.
Sustraer, to subtract.
Avenir, to happen.
Contravenir, to countervene.
Convenir, to agree.
Desavenir, to disagree.
Intervenir, to intervene.
Prevenir, to anticipate.
Provenir, to proceed.
Revenir, to be consumed.
Sobrevenir, to come upon.

Did the merchant sell thee his?	¿Te vendió el comerciante el suyo?
He sold him to me.	Me le vendió.
Did you sell your books to those scholars?	¿Vendieron VV. sus libros á aquellos discípulos?
We sold them to them.	Se los vendimos.
Didst thou write a letter to thy friend yesterday?	¿Escribiste una carta á tu amigo ayer?
I wrote him the day before yesterday, and he wrote me the same day.	Le escribí ante ayer, y él me escribió el mismo dia.
Did you write more than two letters last month?	¿Escribieron VV. mas de dos cartas el mes pasado?
Yes, sir; we wrote three.	Si, señor; escribimos tres.
My father died last year.	Mi padre murió el año pasado.
I slept in my bed last night, and the servant slept on the floor.	Dormí en mi cama la noche pasada, y el criado durmió en el suelo.
Did you give your friends wine yesterday?	¿Dió V. vino á sus amigos ayer?
No, sir; they preferred water.	No, señor; prefirieron agua.
Did you prefer it also?	¿La prefirió V. tambien?
I preferred it.	La preferí.
When did you see my father?	¿Cuando vieron VV. á mi padre?
We saw him on Wednesday.	Le vimos el miércoles.
Did you ask him for money?	¿Le pidieron VV. dinero?
We did not ask him for it.	No se le pedimos.

What did you buy at the market last night? I bought a little pig and some fish. What did your friends buy? They bought some pine-apples, and my brother and I bought also a dozen oranges. Where did you dine yesterday? I dined at my brother-in-law's, but I supped at the house of the lady who came with you from the bay. What did you eat? We ate some roast pig and some fried fish. When didst thou receive a letter from thy sister? I received one on Tuesday, and my mother received another on Thursday. Did you receive letters from your brother also? We did not receive any from him. When you dined at Mr. B.'s, did you drink no wine? I drank a glass of red wine, but the persons who dined with me drank only beer.

Does your father always lock his door when he goes out? No, sir; he does not always lock it, but he locked it last night, because

he was afraid of the robbers. Are there many robbers in your city? Not now; but there were many the last summer. Have you been a fishing? No, sir; we bought a boat to go a fishing, but all those who wished to go with us could not be contained in it. What did you do with the boat? We sold it. Did you eat the pine-apple which I gave you last week? No, sir; I put it in the drawer of my bureau, and it rotted (*se pudrió.*) Did you sleep at home last night? No, sir; for I went to the theatre and arrived (*llegué*) home so late that I found the door locked; so that (*que*) I could not enter (*entrar*); and I slept at the house of my friend. The friend had a little dog in the house, that barked so much that I did not sleep well. What did you buy yesterday at the store? I bought a looking-glass, half a dozen shirts, and a little linen cloth (*lienzo.*)

Where did you dine on Christmas day? I dined at (*en casa de*) my aunts. Did you and your aunt dine alone (*solamente*)? No, sir; many persons dined with us, and we ate and drank many good things. The Miss B.'s (*las señoritas B.*) sung and played, and the other persons danced. Did you not dance? I did not dance. What did they do after they danced? The Miss B.'s, my aunt and I went to the theatre, but the others went, some (*unos*) to their homes, and others, I know not where.

La feliz situacion de España la hizo objeto de la codicia[1] de los Fenicios[2] y otros pueblos. Los cartaginenses,[3] parte[4] por dolo,[5] y parte por fuerza, se establecieron en ella. Los Romanos quisieron completar[6] su poder y gloria con la conquista[7] de España; pero encontraron una resistencia[8] que pareció tan estraña[9] como terrible á los soberbios[10] dueños[11] de lo restante[12] del mundo. Numancia,[13] una sola ciudad, les costó[14] catorce años de sitio,[15] la pérdida[16] de tres ejércitos, y el desdoro[17] de los mas famosos generales, hasta que reducidos[18] los Numantinos[19] á la precision[20] de capitular[21] ó morir por la total ruína[22] de la patria,[23] corto número[24] de vivos, y abundancia de cadáveres en las calles, incendiaron[25] sus casas, arrojaron sus mujeres, niños y ancianos[26] en las llamas,[27] y salieron á morir en el campo raso[28] con las armas en la mano.

1, *Codicia*, avarice. 2, *Fenicio*, Phenician. 3, *Cartaginenses*, Carthagenians. 4, *Parte*, partly. 5, *Dolo*, fraud. 6, *Completar*, to complete. 7, *Conquista*, conquest. 8, *Resistencia*, resistance. 9, *Estraño*, strange. 10, *Soberbio*, proud. 11, *Dueño*, master. 12, *Restante*, rest. 13, *Numancia*, Numantia. 14, *Costar*, to cost. 15, *Sitio*, siege. 16, *Pérdida*, loss. 17, *Des-*

doro, disgrace. 18, *Reducido*, reduced. 19, *Numantino*, numantian. 20, *Precision*, necessity. 21, *Capitular*, to capitulate. 22, *Ruina*, ruin. 23, *Patria*, country. 24, *Número*, number. 25, *Encender*, to set fire to. 26, *Anciano*, old. 27, *Llama*, flame. 28, *Raso*, open.

---

74. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA CUARTA.

VERBS, NOUNS, ETC.

To hear. He hears the wind.	Oir. Oye el viento.
To wear, *worn*. *To enter*.	*Usar*, *usado*. *Entrar* (*en*).
To wet. *To dry*.	*Mojar*. *Secar*.
To put to dry. A *piece*.	Poner á secar. Una *pieza*.
Clean. *Dirty*.	*Limpio*. *Sucio*.

REMARK 1. *Lo* is sometimes used in Spanish, as *so* in English, in reference to an adjective or qualifying phrase.

Is that scholar industrious?	¿ Es este discípulo industrioso?
He is so for he studies much.	Lo es porque estudia mucho.
Are your friends well?	¿ Están buenos sus amigos?
Yes, sir; they are so.	Si, señor; lo están.
Ten cents a pound.	A diez centavos la libra.

REMARK 2. In such phrases as this last, nouns of weight, measure, etc., take the definite article in Spanish.

What is the price of meat?	¿ A como está la carne?
It is eight cents a pound.	Está á ocho centavos *la* libra.
This cloth is six dollars a yard.	Este paño está á seis pesos *la vara*.
Beef is eight cents a pound.	La vaca está á siete centavos *la* libra.
What is the price of candles?	¿ A como están las velas?
They are thirty cents a pound.	Están á treinta centavos *la* libra.

REMARK 3. Verbs in *gar* take *u* after *g* before *e*, and those in *eer* change *i* to *y* before a vowel. Thus *llegar* to arrive, and *leer* to read, have the past definite.

Llegué,	llegaste,	llegó,	llegamos,	llegasteis,	llegaron.
Leí,	leiste,	*leyó*	leimos,	leisteis,	leyeron.

A *rose*. A *pink*.	Una *rosa*. Un *clavel*.
A *nosegay*. A *noise*.	Un *ramillete*. Un *ruido*.
Valor, *Famous*.	El *valor*. *Famoso*.
The *mistress*. The *stable*.	El *ama*. La *caballeriza*.
A *mare*. A *saddle*.	Una *yegua*, Una *silla*.
The *barking*. The barking of the dogs.	El *ladrido*. El ladrido de los perros.

That saddle is much worn.	Aquella silla es muy usada.
I wear my cloak every day.	Uso mi capa todos los dias.
I have wet this piece of linen, and I dry it by the fire.	He mojado esta pieza de lienzo, y la seco con el fuego.
I am acquainted with the famous captain; he often enters my store.	Conozco al famoso capitan; entra frecuentemente en mi almacen.
My handkerchief was clean this morning, but I have wet it, and now it is dirty.	Mi pañuelo estaba limpio esta mañana, pero le he mojado y ahora está sucio.
There are many roses and pinks here.	Hay muchas rosas y claveles aquí.
The boy carries a nosegay to his mistress.	El mozo lleva un ramillete á su ama.
He takes the mare to the stable.	Lleva la yegua á la caballeriza.
The Spaniards have much valor.	Los españoles tienen mucho valor.
The dogs make much noise.	Los perros hacen mucho ruido.

Is that piece of linen wet? No, sir; the washerwoman wet it yesterday, but she dried it also in the (*al*) sun. Have you seen the famous stranger? Yes, sir; when I was reading this morning he entered the room, and then I saw him and spoke to him. Have you found your penknife? Yes, sir; when I was looking for my pen last night I found it. Where is the servant? He has gone home, for while he was drying my wet gloves his mistress called him. Have your friends arrived? Yes, sir; when I was breakfasting this morning they entered the room. Are those handkerchiefs clean? Yes, sir; they were dirty but when I was in the country yesterday the washerwoman washed them and dried them by the (*al*) fire. Have you seen the mistress of that boy? Yes, sir; she entered the garden yesterday while I was there, and I gave her a nosegay of pinks and roses. When your friend was here yesterday, did the servant take his mare to the stable? He took her (there), but the door was so low, and the mare so tall, that she could not enter with the saddle. Have the Spaniards much valor? Yes, sir; they have much, but not more than the French.

What makes so much noise? The barking of the dog makes it. Why does the dog bark? He barks because he hears some noise. Has there been much heat this summer? There has been much, but there was more the last summer. Is there much cholera in

New Orleans? No, sir; but there is some in Havana. Why do you lock your door? I lock it because I am going out. Are you afraid of robbers? No, sir; there are none in this city. What didst thou drink yesterday at Mr. B's? I drank beer, my brother drank water, and the rest (*los demas*) drank wine. Will you give me a glass of icewater? Yes, sir; there is much in this pitcher. What is there in that boat? There are pine-apples, oranges, apples, and many other fruits. Do you smoke? No, madam; I never smoke. How much are those pewter spoons a dozen? A dollar and fifty cents. How much are eggs a dozen? Thirty cents, and butter is twelve cents a pound.

Who brought this trunk to my room last night? A negro (*negro*) brought it. Did he not bring also an umbrella with the trunk? Yes, sir; but he carried away (*se llevó*) the umbrella, and left only the trunk. Did the negro who brought the trunk say nothing? He said something to my brother which I did not hear. At what hour did the negro come? He came about (*como á*) nine in the evening.

El grande Escipion[1] fué testigo[2] de la ruina de Numancia, pues no puede llamarse propiamente[3] conquistador[4] de la ciudad; siendo[5] de notar[6] que Lúculo[7] encargado[8] de levantar un ejército para aquella espedicion, no halló en la juventud[9] romana reclutas[10] que llevar, hasta que el mismo Escipion se alistó[11] para animarla.[12] Si los Romanos conocieron el valor de los Españoles como enemigos, tambien experimentaron[13] su virtud como aliados.[14] Sagunto[15] sufrió[16] por ellos un sitio igual[17] al de Numancia, contra los Cartaginenses; y desde entonces formaron los Romanos de los Españoles el alto concepto[18] que se ve en sus autores,[19] oradores,[20] historiadores[21] y poetas. Pero la fortuna de Roma superior al valor humano,[22] la hizo señora[23] de España, como de lo restante del mundo, menos[24] algunos montes de Cantabria.

En una almoneda[25] de los bienes[26] de un mercader[27] que debia mucho dinero, uno compró un colchon diciendo que aquel era bueno para dormir, pues dormia en él hombre que debia tanto.

1, ***Escipion***, Scipio. 2, ***Testigo***, witness. 3, ***Propiamente***, properly. 4, ***Conquistador***, conqueror. 5, ***Siendo***, it being. 6, ***Notar***, to note. 7, ***Lúculo***, Lucullus. 8, ***Encargado***, charged. 9, ***Juventud***, youth. 10, ***Recluta***, recruit. 11, ***Alistar***, to enlist. 12, ***Animar***, to animate. 13, ***Experimentar***, to experience. 14, ***Aliado***, ally. 15, ***Sagunto***, Saguntum. 16, ***Sufrir***, to suffer. 17, ***Igual***, equal. 18, ***Concepto***, conception. 19, ***Autor***, author. 20, ***Orador***,

orator. 21, *Historiador*, historian. 22, *Humano*, human. 23, *Señora*, mistress. 24, *Menos*, except. 25, *Almoneda*, auction. 26, *Bien*, good. 27, *Mercader*, trader.

---

75. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA QUINTA.

REFLECTIVE VERBS.

Reflective verbs are such as take a reflective pronoun object of the verb of the same person as the subject, as, *yo me congratulo*, I congratulate myself, *tú te congratulas*, thou congratulatest thyself; *él se congratula*, he congratulates himself, etc. These verbs are much more numerous in Spanish than in English, and require the especial attention of the learner.

RULE I. Let it be observed that whenever the verb is reflective in English, it is reflective also in Spanish.

To warm one's self.	*Calentarse.*
Dost thou warm thyself?	¿Te calientas tú?
I warm myself.	Yo me caliento.
Does he warm himself?	¿Se calienta él?
He warms himself, and she warms herself also.	El se calienta, y ella se calienta tambien.
Do you not warm yourselves?	¿No se calientan VV?
We do not warm ourselves, but they warm themselves.	Nosotros no nos calentamos, pero ellos se calientan.
Do we warm ourselves?	¿Nos calentamos nosotros?
Do not our brothers warm themselves?	¿No se calientan nuestros hermanos?
To dress. To dress one's self.	*Vestir, vestirse*, (varied as *Pedir*, Les. 58.)
Do you dress yourself?	¿Se viste V.?
I dress myself every morning.	Me visto todas las mañanas.
Do you dress yourselves?	¿Se visten VV.?
We dress ourselves.	Nosotros nos vestimos.
Have you dressed yourself?	¿Se ha vestido V.?
I have dressed myself, but my friends have not dressed themselves.	Me he vestido, pero mis amigos no se han vestido.
Have you dressed yourselves?	¿Se han vestido VV.?
We have dressed ourselves.	Nosotros nos hemos vestido.
To shave. To shave one's self.	*Afeitar. Afeitarse.*
Were you washing while we were shaving?	¿Se lavaban VV. mientras que nos afeitábamos?

We were shaving while you were washing.	Nos afeitábamos mientras que VV. se lavaban.
What did you do yesterday in the *barber's shop?*	¿ Que hizo V. ayer en la *barbería?*
I shaved myself and the barber shaved my friend.	Yo me afeité y el *barbero* afeitó á mi amigo.
The barber. The barber's shop.	El barbero. La barbería.
At what o'clock will you dress?	¿ A que hora se vestirán VV?
We shall dress at six.	Nos vestiremos á las seis.
Virtue. The *sight*, the *view.*	La *virtud.* La *vista.*
Admirable. Miserable.	*Admirable. Miserable.*
Suitable, convenient. Free.	*Conveniente. Libre.*
Truly. Impossible.	*Verdaderamente. Imposible.*
Opinion. The *conduct.*	La *opinion.* La *conducta.*
The *mode*, *manner.* In this manner.	El *modo.* De este modo.
He is short-sighted.	El tiene la vista corta.
This view is admirable.	Esta vista es admirable.
He lives in the most miserable manner.	El vive del modo mas miserable.
It is impossible to be truly free without virtue.	Es imposible ser verdaderamente libre sin virtud.
The furniture is suitable to the house.	Los muebles son convenientes á la casa.
His opinions are better than his conduct.	Sus opiniones son mejores que su conducta.

What is the matter with that man? He is short-sighted. What is he doing? He is shaving himself. Does he shave before dressing himself? He shaves and washes before dressing himself. Do you wash before shaving yourself? I wash and dress before shaving myself. Do those foreigners shave themselves before dressing? They shave and wash before dressing themselves. Do you shave and dress before washing yourselves? We shave but we do not dress before washing ourselves. Do those children wash themselves every day? They wash themselves and the servant washes them also every day. Did they wash themselves to-day before going out? They did not wash themselves. Did you warm yourself yesterday before going to the market? I warmed myself and my brother warmed himself. Did you wash yourselves before warming yourselves? Yes, sir; we washed and shaved before warming ourselves. Have you washed yourself this evening? I have not

washed yet, but I shall wash soon. Have you shaved this evening? No, sir; but I shall shave early to-morrow morning (*mañana por la mañana.*) Will you shave before dressing? I shall shave and wash before dressing myself. What were you doing this morning at half-past six? I was shaving. Was your brother shaving also? No, sir; he was dressing. Were you dressing while we were shaving? We were washing, shaving, and dressing while you were warming yourselves.

Has the barber shaved you this morning? No, sir; he shaved me last night, and I shaved myself the day before yesterday. Is not that lady admirable? She is admirable for her virtue and for her good conduct. Is not that man miserable? Yes, sir; for he lives in a most miserable manner. Is your room as convenient as this? No, madam; it is very convenient, but it is not as convenient as this. Can all men be truly free? All the good can be free, but the bad can not, for no one can be truly free without virtue. Is opinion free? No, sir; opinion ought (*debe*) to be free, but it is not so always. Is it possible to be always right? It is impossible.

Did your friends set out for France yesterday? No, miss; they will set out to-morrow. Who has extinguished the lamps? The servant has extinguished the candles and the lamps. Have you seen many figs this year? Yes, sir; when I was walking in the garden this morning, I saw many good figs. Do you like figs more than apples? I like them more than apples, but I like peaches more than either (*las unas ó los otros.*) Are you tired? We are tired for we have come many miles this morning. Do you go much on foot? I go several miles on foot and on horseback every day. Did you know of the death of the captain? Yes, sir; and I heard yesterday of the death of his wife.

Conrado[1] tercero, emperador, despues de haber tomado á Munick, determinó[2] pasar los hombres á filo[3] de la espada, permitiendo[4] solo á las mujeres salir de allí pudiendo[5] llevar sobre ellas sus muebles mas preciosos. Estas mujeres aprovechando[6] la ocasion tomaron sobre sus hombros á sus maridos, asegurando[7] que eran sus mas preciosos muebles. Esto agradó[8] tanto al emperador, que no solo perdonó á los habitantes, sinó tambien á su príncipe que habia destinado[9] á la muerte. El caballero Tomas More, famoso canciller[10] de Inglaterra, puesto en

prision por Enrique octavo, dejó crecer[11] sus cabellos y barba, y viniendo[12] un barbero para cortárselos y afeitarle: Amigo, le dijo, el rey y yo pleiteamos[13] sobre mi cabeza, y no quiero hacer el menor gasto[14] en este pleito[15] sin saber antes quien de los dos ha de disponer[16] de ella.

Examinando[17] Alexandro[18] su retrato[19] hecho por Apéles, no le alabó[20] tanto como lo merecia la excelencia[21] de la obra; pero el caballo del monarca,[22] viendo[23] el caballo pintado, relinchó[24] al instante. En verdad[25] señor, dijo Apéles, que Bucéfalo[26] entiende de pinturas[27] mejor que vos.

El rey Don Alonso de Aragon decia que cinco cosas le agradaban mucho; leña seca para quemar; caballos viejos para cabalgar;[28] vino añejo para beber; amigos antiguos para conversar[29] y libros antiguos para leer.

1, *Conrado*, Conrad. 2, *Determinar*, to determine. 3, *Pasar á filo*, etc., to put to the sword. 4, *Permitiendo*, permitting. 5, *Pudiendo* (being able) allowed. 6, *Aprovechando*, improving. 7, *Asegurando*, affirming. 8, *Agradar*, to please. 9, *Destinado*, destined. 10, *Canciller*, chancellor. 11, *Crecer*, to grow. 12, *Viniendo*, coming. 13, *Pleitear*, to go to law. 14, *Gasto*, expense. 15, *Pleito*, matter at law. 16, *Disponer*, to dispose. 17, *Examinando*, examining. 18, *Alexandro*, Alexander. 19, *Retrato*, portrait. 20, *Alabar*, to praise. 21, *Excelencia*, excellence. 22, *Monarca*, monarch. 23, *Viendo*, seeing. 24, *Relinchar*, to neigh. 25, *Verdad*, truth. 26, *Bucéfalo*, Bucephalus (Alexander's horse). 27, *Pintura*, painting. 28, *Cabalgar*, to ride. 29, *Conversar*, to converse.

---

76. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA SEXTA.

REFLECTIVE VERBS.

RULE II. Reflective verbs are used also in Spanish when one speaks of doing anything to any limb or part of himself.

Dost thou wash thy hands?	¿Te lavas tú las manos?
I wash them.	Me las lavo.
Dost thou wash thy glasses?	¿Lavas tus vasos?
I wash them.	Los lavo.

In the two former of the above phrases, the verb is reflective, because one's hands are a part of himself; in the two latter, it is not, because one's glasses are not a part of him; so the following.

He warms his feet.	El se calienta los piés.
He warms his shoes.	El calienta sus zapatos
We warm our hands.	Nosotros nos calentamos las manos.

We warm our gloves.	Nosotros calentamos nuestros guantes.
They cut their fingers.	Ellos se cortan los dedos.
They cut their pens.	Ellos cortan sus plumas.

REMARK 1. The reflective pronoun used as above is the indirect object; literally, *We warm for ourselves the hand; they cut for themselves the fingers; He warms for himself the feet, etc.*

REMARK 2. When the same part of several individuals is spoken of, if that part be singular with each individual, it is singular in Spanish; if plural with the individual, it is plural in Spanish; as,

Do the children wash their faces?	¿Se lavan los niños la cara (*sing.*)?
They wash them.	Se la (*sing.*) lavan.

In these two phrases the singular noun and pronoun are used because each child has but one face; in the two following it is plural, because each one has many teeth.

Do they wash their teeth?	¿Se lavan los dientes (*plur.*)?
They wash them.	Se los (*plur.*) lavan.
Does the servant wash their faces?	¿Les lava el criado la cara?
He does not wash them.	No se la lava.
Have you cut your nails?	¿Se han cortado VV. las *uñas*?
We have not cut them.	No nos las hemos cortado.
I was cutting my nails when I cut my finger.	Me cortaba las *uñas* cuando me corté el dedo.

RULE III. Verbs immediately followed by *each other* and *one another* are also reflective in Spanish.

To hate. They hate each other.	*Aborrecer.* Se aborrecen el uno al otro.
They shave one another.	Se afeitan los unos á los otros.
Those ladies serve each other.	Esas señoras se sirven la una á la otra.
Fortune. The *nail*, (of the finger.)	La *fortuna.* La uña.
Variable. Distant.	*Variable. Distante.*
The *present.* The *past.*	Lo *presente.* Lo *pasado.*
The *future. Ignorant.*	Lo *venidero.* Ignorante.
Imprudent. Moist, damp.	*Imprudente. Húmedo.*
Troublesome. A country house.	*Incómodo.* Una casa de campo.
My country house is very distant.	Mi casa de campo está muy distante.
No one knows the future.	Ninguno sabe lo venidero.
Fortune is variable.	La fortuna es variable.
This damp weather is troublesome.	Este tiempo húmedo es incómodo.

You put your feet near (*cerca de*) the fire; will you not burn them? We shall not burn them. Is it possible to know the future? No, sir; it is difficult to know the present, it is more difficult to know the past, and it is impossible to know the future. What art thou cut-

ting? I am cutting my nails. Dost thou cut thy nails every day? I cut them every day. What does that child cut? He wishes to cut his pen, but he will cut his fingers instead of cutting it. Will you wash your hands? We will wash our hands and our faces, (*sing.*) Have the children washed their feet? They have washed them. Have they washed their necks (*sing.*)? They have washed them. Were you cutting your pen when you cut your finger? No, sir; I was cutting my nails. Were you warming your gloves when you burnt your fingers? No, sir; I was warming my hands. Will the children wash their faces? They will not wash them. Will they wash their hands? They will wash them. Has that imprudent man broken (*rompido*) his arm? No, sir; he has broken his leg (*pierna*). Will not those imprudent children break their legs? No, sir; they will break their necks instead of breaking their legs.

Has not that ignorant man made his fortune? He made it, but the ignorant are imprudent and fortune is variable, he has lost it again. What distance (*á que distancia*) is your country house (from here)? It is very distant. Is your house more distant than mine? It is much more distant. Do the wise (*los sabios*) know the future? No, sir; they do not know the past or the present perfectly, and they cannot know the future. How do you like this weather? I do not like it, it is very troublesome, for it is damp and changeable. How does the servant make a fire without tongs? He makes it thus. Were all your books contained in your book-case? All were not contained in it, and I sold it. Why did you go to the store yesterday? I went there because I wanted to buy a looking-glass, a bellows, and a piece of linen.

Why do you throw away (*tira*) that tumbler? I throw it away because it is broken. Are you not wrong in throwing away your stockings? I am not wrong, for they are much worn, and are good for nothing. Have you hung your hat on the nail behind the door? No, sir; but I shall hang it there in a moment. Why does the cat kill the mice? He kills them and eats them because he is hungry. What did you bring that lady from the city? I brought her a nosegay of pinks and roses. Is it true (*verdad*) that those two sisters hate (*aborrecen*) each other? No, sir; they love each other

much. Are those men looking for each other? They are looking for each other, because they need each other. They are friends and they serve one another.

Thales Milesio,[1] uno de los siete sabios de Grecia, preguntado[2] cual era la cosa mas antigua, respondió que era Dios, porque Dios ha siempre sido; cual era la mas bella, respondió que el mundo, porque era la obra[3] de Dios; cual la mas grande, respondió que el espacio[4] que comprende[5] todo; cual la mejor, la virtud, dijo él, porque sin ella no se puede decir ni hacer bien; cual la mas fácil, la de dar consejos á otro; cual la mas difícil, la de conocerse á si mismo, dijo él.

Caton[6] célebre[7] por su heroica virtud y su amor á la patria que llegó hasta el fanatismo,[8] hizo ver en toda su vida una firmeza,[9] que tenia su orígen[10] en la austeridad[11] de sus costumbres,[12] y en su sistema[13] de filosofía.[14] Despues de haberse opuesto á Catilina,[15] se unió con todos los amigos de la patria contra César y Pompeyo.[16] Despues se ladeó[17] al partido[18] de este, mirándole[19] como defensor[20] de la república, mientras el primero la amenazaba[21] con una próxima servidumbre.[22] Su odio á la tiranía[23] se manifestó desde la edad de catorce años. Sarpedon su ayo,[24] le habia llevado al palacio[25] de Sila. Horrorizado[26] á la vista de las cabezas de tantos proscritos,[27] preguntó quien era el monstruo que habia sacrificado tantos Romanos. Es Sila, respondió Sarpedon. ¡Ah, replicó[28] Caton, Sila los degolló,[29] y Sila vive aun! Quiero tu espada oh Sarpedon, para clavarla[30] en el corazon del tirano, y restituir[31] la libertad á mi patria.

1, *Milesio*, Milesian. 2, *Preguntado*, being asked. 3, *Obra*, work. 4, *Espacio*, space. 5, *Comprender*, to comprehend. 6, *Caton*, Cato. 7, *Célebre*, celebrated. 8, *Fanatismo*, fanaticism. 9, *Firmeza*, firmness. 10, *Orígen*, origen. 11, *Austeridad*, austerity. 12, *Costumbres*, (customs) manners. 13, *Sistema*, system. 14, *Filosofía*, philosophy. 15, *Catilina*, Catiline. 16, *Pompeyo*, Pompey. 17, *Ladear*, to incline. 18, *Partido*, party. 19, *Mirando*, looking to. 20, *Defensor*, defender. 21, *Amenazar*, to threaten. 22, *Servidumbre*, servitude. 23, *Tiranía*, tyranny. 24, *Ayo*, tutor. 25, *Palacio*, palace. 26, *Horrorizado*, struck with horror. 27, *Proscrito*, proscribed. 28, *Replicar*, to reply. 29, *Degollar*, to behead. 30, *Clavar*, (to nail) to pierce. 31, *Restituir*, to restore.

---

77. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

REFLECTIVE VERBS.

RULE IV. English phrases in which the proper object of the verb is made the subject, also passive forms, where the

agent if expressed would be general, are usually reflective in Spanish.

Wood sells dear.*	La leña se vende cara.
It is said † that they have arrived.	Se dice que han llegado.
Cotton sells well.	El algodon se vende bien.
Glass breaks easily.	El vidrio se rompe facilmente.
Wine sells cheap.	El vino se vende barato.
This wood splits easily.	Esta leña se parte facilmente.
That book is easily understood.	Ese libro se entiende facilmente.
Short letters are soon written.	Las cartas cortas se escriben pronto.
It is said that the crops are good.	Se dice que las cosechas son buenas.
I am told that he is dead.	Se me dice que está muerto.
He is praised, but he is not loved.	(A él) se le alaba, pero no se le ama.
Half of the money will be given to him.	Se le dará la mitad del dinero.
A knife has been given to the child.	Se le ha dado un cuchillo al niño.
Much money has been promised to them.	Se les ha prometido mucho dinero.

REMARK 1. Phrases like the above are often expressed in Spanish by the third person plural, without the reflective pronoun; as,

It is said that the crops are good.	Dicen que las cosechas son buenas.
I am told that he is dead.	Me dicen que está muerto.
He is praised, but he is not loved.	Le alaban, pero no le aman.
An old maid.	Una *doncella* (or *soltera*) vieja.

REMARK 2. Besides the use of reflective verbs according to the four rules which have been given, there are many reflective verbs for which no general rule can be given, and which are to be learned only by practice and observation; as,

To rise. To go to bed.	*Levantarse. Acostarse*, (varied as *mover*, Les. 37.)
To marry. To abstain.	*Casarse. Abstenerse*, (varied as *tener*.)
To bathe. To remember.	*Bañarse. Acordarse*, (varied as *mover*, Les. 37.)
To walk. To take a walk.	*Pasear. Pasearse.*
Raw. Tepid, lukewarm.	*Crudo. Tibio.*
Oysters. Lean.	Las *ostras*, los *ostiones*. *Flaco.*
To conquer. To produce.	*Vencer. Producir*, (varied as *conocer*, Les. 39.)

REMARK 3. Most verbs in *cer* and *cir* change *c* to *z* before *a* and *o*.

I conquer. Mexico.	*Venzo. Méjico.*
California. California produces gold.	La *California*. La *California* produce oro.

* In proper form, *wood* would here be the object; thus, They sell *wood* dear.

† Here the agent, if expressed, would be general; *People* say that they have arrived.

The United States conquered Mexico in eighteen hundred and forty-eight.	Los Estados Unidos vencieron á Méjico en mil ochocientos cuarenta y ocho.
Eggs are sometimes eaten raw.	Los huevos se comen algunas veces crudos.
I go to bed early and I rise early.	Yo me acuesto temprano y me levanto temprano.
The old bachelor will marry soon.	El soltero viejo se casará pronto.
He abstains from wine and we abstain from coffee.	El se abstiene de vino y nosotros nos abstenemos de café.
We remember the past.	Nosotros nos acordamos de lo pasado.
Do you remember what I said?	¿Se acuerda V. de lo que dije?
I remember it.	Me acuerdo de ello.
I will bathe in tepid water.	Me bañaré en agua tibia.
He is walking in the garden.	El se pasea en el jardin.
These oysters are excellent.	Estos ostiones son excelentes.
My horse is very lean.	Mi caballo es muy flaco.

What does Mexico produce? Mexico produces silver, and California produces gold. Did the Spaniards conquer Mexico? The Spaniards, commanded by Fernando (*Hernan*) Cortes, conquered Mexico in fifteen hundred and twenty. Did the Spaniards conquer other countries? They conquered many others. Does Mexico produce many vegetables? Yes, sir; it produces almost all the vegetables in the (*del*) world. Do apples sell well this year? Apples do not sell well, but cotton sells very well. Does glass break easier than wood? Yes, sir; glass breaks easier than wood, and wood breaks easier than iron. Does cheese cut easier when it is cold than when it is warm? No, sir; but butter cuts easier when it is warm than when it is cold. Has your friend arrived? I am told that he has arrived, but I have not seen him. What will the soldiers receive who go to war? They will receive many acres (*acres*) of land (*tierra*), and much money has been promised to them also. Where is your neighbor? I have been told that he has gone to France. What has been promised to you if you study well? Some good books have been promised to us. Are fish ever eaten raw? Fish are eaten raw in some parts (*algunas partes*) of the world, and many fruits are eaten raw everywhere.

At what hour do you rise in the morning? I do not always rise at the same hour; when I go to bed early, I rise early, and when I

go to bed late, I rise late. Is that old maid going to marry? Yes, sir; and that old bachelor is going to marry also. Does he abstain from tobacco? Yes, sir; and the old maid abstains from tea. Do the children bathe every morning? No, madam; they bathe every evening. Do you bathe in warm water? I sometimes bathe in warm water, but generally in cold water. After shaving this morning did you walk? Yes, sir; I walk every morning. Do you like oysters? I like them very much, and these are excellent. Why is your horse lean? He is lean because he eats little.

Have you remembered what your father told you? I always remember what he tells me. Where will you go this summer? I shall go to California. Do you like the climate of that country? No, sir; it is too wet and the heat is very troublesome. What did Thales, the Milesian (*Milesio*), say of virtue? He said that it was the best thing, because without it nothing could be said or done (that was) good. Do you wear (*usa*) this hat much? I wear it every day; this morning it became wet (*se mojó*), and I have put it near the fire to dry it. Are those handkerchiefs clean or dirty? They are dirty. The mistress is pleased with her servant, for he knows how to do almost everything (*casi de todo*).

El templo de Diana mas célebre y magnífico era el de Efeso,[1] contado[2] por una de las siete maravillas del mundo, tardaron[3] en construirle[4] doscientos veinte años, y por espacio de doscientos contribuyeron[5] á este fin todas las provincias[6] de Asia. Se admiraban[7] en él los excelentes cuadros y estatuas[8] que le adornaban, y sobre todo ciento y veinte columnas que eran monumento[9] de la magnificencia[10] de otros tantos reyes. Este soberbio templo fué abrasado[11] por Erostrato,[12] natural[13] de Efeso, que queriendo[14] dejar fama de sí, y no pudiendo ó no queriendo inmortalizarse[15] con otro hecho mejor, le prendió[16] fuego el 6 de Julio del año del mundo 1698, dia en que nació[17] en Macedonia, Alejandro[18] el Grande.

Otra maravilla del mundo era El Coloso[19] de Rodas:[20] estatua de bronce que representa un hombre, algunos dicen que Apolo, de pié sobre dos torres que defendian la entrada del puerto[21] de la isla de Rodas. Tenia ciento cinco piés de altura, y los navíos de mastiles[22] los mas altos, pasaban facilmente por entre[23] sus piernas. Un mercader judío,[24] que mucho tiempo despues de arruinado[25] compró los trozos,[26] cargó[27] con el metal nueve cientos camellos.

1, *Efeso*, Ephesus. 2, *Contado*, reckoned. 3 *Tardar*, to spend, (time.) 4, *Construir*, to construct. 5, *Contribuir*, to contribute. 6, *Provincia*, province.

7, *Admirar*, to admire. 8, *Estatua*, statue. 9, *Monumento*, monument. 10, *Magnificencia*, magnificence. 11, *Abrasado*, burnt. 12, *Erostrato*, Herostratus. 13, *Natural*, native. 14, *Queriendo*, wishing. 15, *Inmortalizar*, to immortalize. 16, *Prender fuego*, to set fire to. 17, *Nacer*, to be born. 18, *Alexandro*, Alexander. 19, *Coloso*, Colossus. 20, *Rodas*, Rhodes. 21, *Puerto*, port. 22, *Mastil*, mast. 23, *Por entre*, between. 24, *Judío*, jew. 25, *Arruinado*, ruined. 26, *Trozo*, fragment. 27, *Cargar*, to load.

---

78. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA OCTAVA.

VERBS, PRONOUNS, ETC.

The *college*. The *university*.	El *colegio*. La *universidad*.
Except. Except two.	*Ménos*. Ménos dos.
To ask, *to enquire*. The *work*.	*Preguntar*. La *obra*.
I *hear*.	*Oigo* (*oir* is varied as *salir*, Les. 38.)
To fall. I *fall*.	*Caer*. *Caigo*.

The other persons of the present of *caer* are regular.

To kindle, *to light*.	*Encender*, (as *cerrar*, Les. 38
The *shade*. The *piano*.	La *sombra*. El *piano*.
To play on the piano.	Tocar el piano.
The *progress*. *To understand*.	El *progreso*. *Entender*.

Entiendo, *entiendes*, *entiende*, *entendemos*, *entendéis*, *entienden*.
I understand, thou understandest, etc.

REMARK 1. In speaking of anything begun in past time and continued at present, the English use a past tense, but the Spanish, the present.

How long have you studied Spanish?	¿Cuanto tiempo ha que estudia V. el español?
I have studied it a year.	Le estudio hace un año.
I have been here six months.	Estoy aquí hace seis meses.
We have taken lessons two years.	Tomamos lecciones hace dos años.
The *method*. *To comprehend*.	El *método*. *Comprender*.
Practice. *Give attention*.	La *práctica*. *Ponga atencion*.
A *mine*. A *story*.	Una *mina*. Una *historia*.
He composes stories.	El compone historias.
He will send his son to college.	El enviará su hijo al colegio.
I shall go to the university.	Yo iré á la universidad.
I do not hear what you say, but you hear what I say.	Yo no oigo lo que V. dice, pero V. oye lo que yo digo.

He asks me what works Cervantes wrote.	El me pregunta que obras escribió Cervantes.
To address one's self. He addresses himself to me.	*Dirigirse.* El se me dirige.

REMARK 2. The reciprocal is placed before the indirect objective pronouns.

John addressed himself to us.	Juan *se nos* dirigió.
He declared himself *grateful* to me.	El se me declaró *reconocido.*
When I was going to the market I fell.	Cuando iba á la plaza me caí.
He kindles the fire.	El enciende el fuego.
They are playing in the shade.	Juegan á la sombra.
You make much progress, you understand what I say.	V. hace mucho progreso, entiende lo que digo.
There are gold mines in California.	Hay minas de oro en California.

Are you going to college? No, miss; we are going to the university. Have the sons of our neighbor gone to the university? They have not gone to the university, they have all gone to the college, except the oldest (*el mayor*). Did you hear what that man said? No, sir; he asked me something, but I did not hear what it was. What did he ask? He asked if the new theatre in this city was a beautiful work. Can all men be truly free in their conduct? The bad cannot be free in their conduct nor the ignorant in their opinions. Has the barber shaved you? No, sir; the barber is near-sighted, and I prefer to shave myself (*yo mismo*). Have you heard Miss C. play on the piano? Yes, miss; when I passed by (*pasaba por*) your house last night, I heard you singing (*que cantaba*) and her playing (*que tocaba*) on the piano. Do you remember all that you read? I do not remember all that I read, but I remember much. Do the scholars hear all that the master says? They do not hear it all, because they talk and play sometimes instead of listening. Do you always hear it? We always hear it and remember it because we always listen.

What did that boy say to you? He asked me how many books there were in the library; I told him that I did not know, and then he asked (*se lo preguntó*) the master. Have you many flowers in your garden? I have almost every species (*casi de toda clase*) except pinks. Is that old maid fond of flowers? She is very fond of them, and this morning I gave her a nosegay of beautiful roses. Are there

oysters in the bay where you live? There are oysters and many other species of fish. When will that old bachelor and that old maid marry? I believe that they will never marry. Do you abstain from wine? We abstain from wine and from brandy.

Do you make much progress in the Spanish language? I make so much that I can already understand and support (*sostener*) a conversation (*conversacion*). How long is it that you have taken lessons? Six months. And in six months only do you understand and support a conversation? Yes, sir; because the method with which they teach me is so good, and has the rules (*reglas*) so easy to comprehend, and so clear, that it is necessary (*necesario*) to be very stupid not to learn in a short time. Besides that (*á mas de eso*), we always speak Spanish with the master. In that manner, it is certain (*cierto*) that you will learn soon, for nothing is like (*como*) practice and a good grammar to learn a language.

La tercera maravilla del mundo era el Mausoleo,[1] ó el sepulcro de Mausolus,[2] rey de Caria, que Artemisa, su esposa para mitigar[3] el dolor que le causaba su pérdida,[4] hizo construir á su memoria, con tal magnificencia, y gastos tan crecidos,[5] que llegó este monumento á contarse[6] entre las maravillas. De aquí toma orígen el llamar Mausoleos á los monumentos eregidos[7] á la gloria de los hombres célebres, y á los simulacros[8] que se ponen en las honras[9] fúnebres.[10]

La cuarta maravilla del mundo era el Jupiter Olímpico;[11] estatua de este dios colocada[12] en el templo que tenia en Olimpia, ciudad célebre, situada[13] entre los montes de Osa y Olimpo.[14] Esta estatua, obra del escultor[15] Fidias, que mereció la admiracion de la antigüedad,[16] era de oro y marfil,[17] y representaba el dios sentado[18] sobre un trono[19] de oro adornado[20] de piedras preciosas, la corona en forma de un olivo,[21] el calzado[22] y manto[23] tambien de oro, en la máno derecha una esfera de oro y marfil, y en la izquerda, un cetro coronado de un águila. Dicen que Fidias pidió al dios que le mostrase[24] por algun signo[25] si su trabajo[26] le habia agradado, y que al punto,[27] hirió[28] el rayo[29] en el pavimento[30] del templo, en un lugar que luego enseñaban,[31] y donde pusieron una urna de bronce.

1, ***Mausoleo***, Mausoleum. 2, ***Mausolus***, Mausolus. 3, ***Mitigar***, to assuage. 4, ***Perdida***, damage. 5, ***Crecido***, great. 6, ***Contarse***, to be reckoned. 7, ***Erejido***, erected. 8, ***Simulacro***, image. 9, ***Honras fúnebres***, funeral honors. 11, ***Olímpico***, Olimpian. 12, ***Colocado***, placed. 13, ***Situado***, situated. 14, ***Olimpo***, Olimpus. 15, ***Escultor***, sculptor. 16, ***Antigüedad***, antiquity. 17, ***Marfil***, ivory. 18, ***Sentado***, seated. 19, ***Trono***, throne. 20, ***Adornado***, adorned. 21, ***Olivo***, olive-tree. 22, ***Calzado***, shoes. 23, ***Manto***, mantle. 24, ***Mostrase***,

would show, (imperfect subjunctive of *mostrar*). 25, *Signo*, sign. 26, *Trabajo*, work. 27, *Al punto*, immediately. 28, *Herir*, to shine upon. 29, *Rayo*, ray. 30, *Pavimento*, pavement. 31, *Enseñar*, to show.

---

79. LECCION SEPTUAGÉSIMA NONA.

PRESENT PARTICIPLES.

RULE. THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE in Spanish is formed from the infinitive by changing, in the first conjugation, AR final into *ando*, and in the second and third, ER and IR final into IENDO, as,

	INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLE.	INFINITIVE.	PARTICIPLE.
1st CONJ.	To speak	*speaking.*	Hablar,	*hablando.*
	To wash,	*washing.*	Lavar,	*lavando.*
	To be,	*being.*	Estar,	*estando.*
	To buy,	*buying.*	Comprar,	*comprando.*
2d CONJ.	To eat,	*eating.*	Comer,	*comiendo.*
	To have,	*having.*	Tener,	*teniendo.*
	To be,	*being.*	Ser,	*siendo.*
	To make,	*making.*	Hacer,	*haciendo.*
3d CONJ.	To write,	*writing.*	Escribir,	*escribiendo.*
	To receive,	*receiving.*	Recibir,	*recibiendo.*
	To go out,	*going out.*	Salir,	*saliendo.*
	To conduct,	*conducting.*	Conducir,	*conduciendo.*

1. The four following, besides the regular change, take *u* instead of *o*, in the penult.

To die,	*dying.*	Morir,	*muriendo.*
To sleep,	*sleeping.*	Dormir,	*durmiendo.*
To be able,	*being able.*	Poder,	*pudiendo.*
To rot,	*rotting.*	Podrir,	*pudriendo.*

2. There is also a considerable number of verbs ending in *ir*, having an *e* in the penult, which change the *e* into *i*, in this participle.

To correct,	*correcting.*	Corregir,	*corrigiendo.*
To ask,	*asking*	Pedir,	*pidiendo.*
To come,	*coming.*	Venir,	*viniendo.*
To say,	*saying.*	Decir,	*diciendo.*
To prefer,	*preferring.*	Preferir,	*prefiriendo.*
To dress,	*dressing.*	Vestir,	*vistiendo.*

Participles of this class* will be given with their verbs in the following lessons.

3. Verbs which have a vowel before *er* or *ir* of the infinitive, as also *Ir*, to go, change *i* into *y* in the present participle, and in all parts of the verb where i is followed by a vowel.

To read,	*reading.*	Leer,	*leyendo.*
To bring,	*bringing.*	Traer,	*trayendo.*
To hear,	*hearing.*	Oir,	*oyendo,*
To go,	*going.*	Ir,	*yendo.*
To build,	*building.*	Construir,	*construyendo.*

He built that house.	El construyó aquella casa.
He fell and broke his neck.	El cayó y se rompió el pescuezo.
What art thou doing?	¿ Que estás tú haciendo?
I am studying, and my brother is writing a letter.	Yo estoy estudiando, y mi hermano está escribiendo una carta.
We are talking, and our friends are eating.	Estamos hablando, y nuestros amigos están comiendo.

REMARK 1. We see in these examples, that the present participle with the verb to be, is used in Spanish, as in English, to express continuous action or being; also, that this participle is not varied to agree with its substantive.

I was writing while you were shaving.	Yo estaba escribiendo mientras que VV. estaban afeitándose.

* The following list contains nearly all the verbs of this class besides the above six.

Adherir, to adhere.
Adquirir, to acquire.
Advertir, to advert.
Arrepentirse, to repent.
Arrecirse, to become numb.
Asentirse, to assent.
Avenirse, to agree.
Ceñir, to gird.
Colegir, to collect.
Comedirse, to govern one's self.
Competir, to compete.
Concebir, to conceive.
Concernir, to concern.
Conferir, to confer.
Consentir, to consent.
Conseguir, to obtain.
Constreñir, to constrain.
Contradecir, to contradict.
Controvertir, to controvert.
Convertir, to convert.
Descenir, to ungird.
Descomedirse, to become rude.
Desconsentirse, to dissent.
Desdecirse, to retract.
Desservir, not to serve.
Desleir, to dilute.
Desmentir, to give the lie.
Despedir, to dismiss.
Desteñir, to discolor.
Diferir, to differ.
Digerir, to digest.
Divertir, to divert.
Elegir, to elect.
Embestir, to assail.
Engreirse, to grow proud.
Envestir, to invest.
Espedir, to expedite.
Estreñir, to bind.
Freir, to fry.
Gemir, to groan.
Henchir, to fill up.
Heñir, to knead.
Herir, to wound.
Hervir, to boil.
Impedir, to impede.
Inadvertir, not to attend.
Inferir, to infer.
Ingerir, to insert.
Intervenir, to intervene.
Invertir, to invert.
Investir, to invest.
Medir, to measure.
Mentir, to lie.
Perseguir, to persecute
Pervertir, to pervert.
Predecir, to predict.
Preferir, to prefer.
Presentir, to perceive before.
Prevenir, to prevent.
Proferir, to utter.
Proseguir, to pursue.
Provenir, to originate.
Referir, to refer.
Regir, to rule.
Reir, to laugh.
Rendir, to yield.
Reñir, to quarrel.
Repetir, to repeat.
Requerir, to require.
Resentirse, to resent.
Reteñir, to dye again.
Revenir, to recover.
Revestir, to invest.
Seguir, to follow.
Sentir, to feel.
Servir, to serve.
Sobrevenir, to happen.
Sonreirse, to smile
Sugerir, to suggest.
Teñir, to dye.
Zaherir, to upbraid.

Remark 2. Pronouns are united to the present participle, as to the infinitive, and an accent is placed on the vowel where the stress of voice is.

Were you correcting your exercise while I was washing?	¿Estaba V. corrigiendo su exercicio mientras que yo estaba lavándome?
I was correcting it.	Estaba corrigiéndole.

Remark 3. When two actions are spoken of as performed at the same time, the more enduring of the two is often expressed by this participle. p. 321.

He eats while reading.	El come leyendo.
He studies while working.	El estudia trabajando.
He spoke while sleeping.	Habló durmiendo.
In falling I broke my arm.	Cayendo me rompí el brazo.
I see the children playing under the shade.	Veo á los niños jugando á la sombra.

What are you doing? We are talking, and our friends are eating. Were you writing your letters while we were breakfasting? I was writing them. What will you be doing to-morrow morning at eight? I shall be studying. Have you been writing? No, sir; I have been reading. What are you reading? I am reading a new work of history. Is the servant bringing the wood? He is bringing it. Is the master sleeping? Yes, sir; he fell asleep (*se durmió*) while writing. Why do you punish (*castiga*) that boy? I punish him because I saw him stealing my fruit. What is the servant doing in the kitchen? He is kindling the fire. Does he kindle a fire when it is warm? Yes, sir; he kindles it every day. What are those carpenters doing? They are building a house. Are they building it for you? No, sir; they built me a house in the spring, and now they are building one for my neighbor.

When did you see the children? I saw them at eight this morning, playing in the shade, in the yard of your house. Has your brother breakfasted? No, sir; he has not breakfasted yet, and I believe that he has not risen; for, he was sleeping when I was dressing, at seven. Are you reading a work of history? No, madam; I am reading Don Quixote (*el Don Quijote*), written by Cervantes; it is the master (*maestra*) work of the Spanish. At what hour do you go to bed? I go to bed commonly at ten, and rise at six, then I take a walk, and breakfast at half past seven. Do you bathe often? We bathe often in cold water. Is California a rich country? It is

not a rich country although (*aunque*) it produces gold. Have the United States conquered Mexico the present year? No, sir; they conquered it some years ago. What are you buying? I am buying a pair of boots and this long cord. Are those fish alive or dead? They are dead now; but they were alive this morning when I bought them. Why does the maid servant hang the wet linen on the cord? She hangs it up to dry it.

Why does your neighbor lock his door when he goes out? He locks it because he is afraid of the robbers. Why do those dogs bark? They bark because they hear the noise of the pigs. What is there in that boat? It is full of pine-apples, oranges, and other fruits. That man is hungry; does he wish for some fried eggs? No, sir; he wishes for some fried fish and boiled eggs (*huevos pasados por agua*)

Dios ha hecho el mundo de nada por su palabra y voluntad;[1] y para su gloria. Le hizo en seis dias. El primero creó el cielo y la tierra, despues la luz; el segundo creó el firmamento[2] que llamó cielo; el tercero, separó la tierra del agua y la hizo producir las plantas;[3] el cuatro, creó el sol, la luna y las estrellas; el quinto, formó las aves del aire y los peces del mar; el sexto, hizo los animales terrestres y formó al hombre á su semejanza.[4]

Dios dijo á Adam: La tierra será maldita[5] por tu causa,[6] te alimentarás con el sudor[7] de tu frente, y ella no te producirá sino espinas[8] y cardos.[9] Vivirás trabajando[10] continuamente,[11] hasta que[12] vuelvas[13] á la tierra de que has sido formado, porque eres pelvo y á polvo has de convertir.[14]

El mármol se saca[15] de la tierra. Es muy duro; no se puede cortar con un cuchillo, sino con una sierra ó un cincel.[16] Hay mármol blanco, negro, colorado, verde y amarillo. Los monumentos en las iglesias son de marmol. Las piedras y los pedernales[17] se sacan de la tierra. Allí tiene V. dos pedernales, son muy duros. Golpee[18] el uno contra el otro y saldrán chispas.[19] El oro és amarillo. Es un metal muy bonito y brillante,[20] y es extremamente[21] pesado.

1, *Voluntad*, will. 2, *Firmamento*, firmament. 3, *Planta*, plant. 4, *Semejanza*, likeness. 5, *Maldito*, cursed. 6, *Causa*, (cause) sake. 7, *Sudor*, sweat. 8, *Espina*, thorn. 9, *Cardo*, thistle. 10, *Trabajar*, to labor. 11, *Continuamente*, continually. 12, *Hasta que*, until. 13, *Vuelvas*, thou returnest, (pres. subj. of *volver*). 14, *Convertir*, to change. 15, *Sacarse*, to be drawn. 16, *Cincel*, chisel. 17, *Pedernal*, flint. 18, *Golpear*, to strike. 19, *Chispa*, spark. 20, *Brillante*, brilliant. 21, *Extremamente*, extremely.

80. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

THE PLUPERFECT TENSE is formed, in Spanish as in English, by joining the past participle to the imperfect tense of the auxiliary ; as

Habia tenido, habias tenido, habia tenido, habiamos tenido, habiais tenido, habian tenido.
I had had, thou hadst had, he had had, we had had, you had had, they had had.

Hadst thou breakfasted when thy friend arrived ?	¿ *Habias almorzado* tú cuando tu amigo llegó ?
I had breakfasted.	*Habia almorzado.*
He had heard the barking of the dogs when he saw the thief.	*Habia oido* el ladrido de los perros cuando yió el ladron.
The mare had lost her saddle when we found her.	La yegua *habia perdido* la silla cuando la encontramos.
We had locked the door at eight o'clock.	*Habiamos cerrado* la puerta con llave á las ocho.
Had the servants seen their mistress when she entered ?	¿ *Habian visto* los criados á su ama cuando entró ?
To take away, to take off. A *carriage.*	*Quitar, quitarse.* Un *carruaje.*
Fat. A fat ox.	*Gordo.* Un buey gordo.
To pass. The *ivory.*	*Pasar.* El *marfil.*
Boiled eggs.	*Huevos pasados por agua.*
The *wheel.* *To wait for.*	La *rueda.* *Esperar.*
A *canary-bird.* A *cage.*	Un *canario.* Una *jaula.*
The *climate.* The *wharf.*	El *clima.* El *muelle.*
A *class.* A *species, kind.*	Una *clase.* Una *especie.*
The *president.* *Although.*	El *presidente.* *Aunque.*
To put on. *To have on.*	*Ponerse.* *Tener puesto.*
He puts on his gloves before putting on his hat.	El se pone sus guantes antes de ponerse su sombrero.
I put on my boots before putting on my coat.	Yo me pongo las botas antes de ponerme la casaca.
Do you take off your gloves before taking off your hat ?	¿ Se quita V. sus guantes ántes de quitarse su sombrero ?
I take off my hat before taking off my gloves.	Yo me quito el sombrero ántes de quitarme los guantes.
I cut my paper with an ivory knife.	Corto mi papel con un cuchillo de marfil
Whom are you waiting for ?	¿ A quien está V. esperando ?
I am waiting for the boy who is to bring me a bird in a cage.	Estoy esperando al muchacho que debe traerme un pájaro en una jaula.

What kind of bird?	¿Que clase de pájaro?
A yellow canary bird with green spots.	Un canario amarillo con pintas verdes.
Where is he now?	¿Donde está ahora?
He is on the wharf.	Está en el muelle.

What does the servant do? He takes the mare from the stable and puts her in the carriage. Have you a good horse? I have one very good for the saddle. Do you pass that river often? Yes, sir; and in passing it yesterday I broke a wheel of my carriage. Do you wear much the hat that you have on (*tiene puesto*)? I wear it every day. This waistcoat which I have on is of silk; is it not beautiful? It is beautiful, although it is much worn. Of what color is that coat which you have on? It is blue, and these pantaloons which I have on are black. Is your horse fat? No, sir; he is always lean, although he eats much. What kinds of flowers have you in your garden? I have roses, pinks, and many other kinds. Had you passed the river when the wheel of your carriage broke (*se rompió*)? I had passed the river, and had arrived near my house. Where is your broken (*roto*) carriage? It is on the wharf.

Had you found the canary-bird when you bought that cage? No, sir; I had bought the cage when I found the canary-bird. Did you wait a long time for your friend? I waited for him a long time, but he did not arrive. Do you like this climate? I like it much, although it is damp and changeable, and the heat is sometimes a little troublesome. What had you bought when I saw you in the store? I had bought some ivory combs, an ivory knife, and a piece of cloth. Had the servant kindled the fire when you entered? He had not kindled it. Have you seen the neighbor's children this morning? Yes, sir; when I passed his house, I saw them playing in the shade. Have you heard my sisters sing? I have heard them all except Louisa (*Luisa*). Had Charles gone to college when you wrote to him? Yes, sir; he had already been gone some weeks (*hacia ya algunas semanas*).

How do you pass the river? I pass it in a boat (*en bote*). What does the stranger wish to eat? He wishes for fried fish, roast pig, and boiled eggs. Does he abstain from wine? Yes, sir; he drinks only water. Do you like pine-apples better than apples? Yes, sir;

and I like peaches better than pine-apples. Is your brother well? No, sir; he wet his feet yesterday, and to-day he is sick. Is he very sick? He is so, and for that reason (*por eso*) he has not risen to-day. Has the washerwoman dried the clothes which she wet in the river? She has dried them. Are these handkerchiefs clean or dirty? They are clean. Is the mare which you bought good for the saddle? She is good for the saddle, and good for the carriage. Is not the barking of the dogs a very disagreeable (*desagradable*) noise? Yes, sir; it is so, and it is impossible to sleep when there is much (of it).

La quinta maravilla del mundo era el Faro de Alexandria;[1] obra de Sostrases, natural de Gnido, y construida en el reinado[2] de Tolomeo Filadelfo,[3] que gastó[4] en él inmensas[5] sumas.[6] Era un compuesto[7] de galerias,[8] sostenidas unas sobre otras con columnas que formaba una torre cuadrada[9] de mármol blanco, y de una elevacion[10] prodigiosa;[11] y esta torre estribaba[12] sobre un palacio tambien de mármol. En lo alto de ella ardia[13] un fanal,[14] que era el faro del puerto, y desde allí dicen que se descubrian[15] los buques[16] que entraban en la isla de Rodas, lo cual es imposible, pues dista[17] mas de doscientas leguas de Alexandria. Ni aun las ruinas se conocen hoy de este soberbio monumento.

La sesta maravilla del mundo eran los jardines y muros de Babilonia; obras magníficas y sólidas[18] que han hecho inmortal[19] á Semiramis, reina de Egipto, que las mandó[20] construir. Quinto Curcio,[21] al principio de su libro quinto, hace una descripcion[22] de estos deliciosos y vastos jardines que estaban suspendidos[23] en el aire con columnas.

Carlos quinto, que hablaba naturalmente el español, el frances, el italiano, y el aleman, acostumbraba[24] decir que para servirse de esas cuatro lenguas como mas convenia[25] al genio[26] de ellas, hablaba en español á Dios, á los hombres en frances, á las damas en italiano, y á los caballos en aleman.

1, *Faro de Alexandria*, lighthouse of Alexandria. 2, *Reinado*, reign. 3, *Tolomeo Filadelfo*, Ptolemy Philadelphus. 4, *Gastar*, to expend. 5, *Inmenso*, immense. 6, *Suma*, sum. 7, *Compuesto*, composition. 8, *Galeria*, gallery. 9, *Cuadrado*, square. 10, *Elevacion*, elevation. 11, *Prodigioso*, prodigious. 12, *Estribar*, to rest upon. 13, *Arder*, to burn. 14, *Fanal*, lantern. 15, *Descubrirse*, to be discovered. 16, *Buque*, vessel. 17, *Distar*, to be distant. 18, *Sólido*, solid. 19, *Inmortal*, immortal. 20, *Mandar*, to command. 21, *Quinto Curcio*, Quintus Curcius. 22, *Descripcion*, description. 23, *Suspendido*, suspended. 24, *Acostumbrar*, to be accustomed. 25, *Convenir*, to suit. 26, *Genio*, genius.

81. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA PRIMERA.

IMMEDIATE PLUPERFECT.

The IMMEDIATE PLUPERFECT TENSE denotes that an action had been done immediately before something else specified. It is formed by joining the past participle to the past definite of the auxiliary, as;

Hube tenido, hubiste tenido, hubo tenido, hubimos tenido, hubisteis tenido, hubieron tenido.
I had had, thou hadst had, he had had, we had had, you had had, they had had.

This tense is used after the following adverbs of time.

Apenas, hardly.	*Cuando*, when.
Así que, *Al momento que*, } as soon as,	*Despues*, after.
	Luego que, as soon as.
Como, as, when.	*No bien*, no sooner.
Hardly had I gone out when he arrived.	*Apenas hubo salido* cuando él llegó.
As soon as he saw me he came to meet me.	*Así que* él me *hubo visto* vino á encontrarme.
When we had read the book we returned it.	*Cuando hubimos leido* el libro le devolvimos.
When they had breakfasted they went out.	*Cuando hubieron almorzado* salieron.
As soon as he had arrived they departed.	*Luego que* él *hubo llegado* ellos partieron.
After I had seen him I departed.	*Despues que* le *hube visto* partí.
No sooner had they found him than they lost him again.	*No bien* le *hubieron encontrado* cuando le perdieron otra vez.
Humor. Bad humor.	*Humor*. Mal humor.
Rarely. A *ring*.	*Rara vez*. Una *sortija*.
A *gambler*. *Auxiliary verbs*.	Un *jugador*. *Verbos auxiliares*.
The gambler plays away his money.	El jugador juega su dinero.
How long have you been in this country?	¿Cuanto tiempo ha que V. está en este país (See Les. ~~73~~, Rem. 1.)?
I have been here since the year thirty-seven.	Estoy aquí desde el año treinta y siete.
How long have you had this book?	¿Cuanto tiempo ha que V. tiene este libro?
I have had it two weeks.	Hay dos semanas que le tengo.
How long have you studied French?	¿Cuanto tiempo ha que V. estudia el frances?
It is two years.	Hay dos años.

General P. has been president two years.	Hace dos años que el general P. es presidente.
Washington was president eight years.	Washington fué presidente ocho años.

We here see that when the act is no longer continued, the Spanish use the past tense like the English. (See page 202)

He has been in France these three years.	Está en Francia hay tres años.
He was in France three years.	Estuvo en Francia tres años.

REMARK 1. We have seen Les. 66., Rem. 2, that an infinitive depending on *tener* is preceded by *que*. This pronoun is often used before other infinitives also, which admit no equivalent in English.

He wishes for something to eat.	El quiere alguna cosa *que* comer.
I seek for something to do.	Busco alguna cosa *que* hacer.

Had the servant kindled the fire when you entered? No, sir; but as soon as I had entered he kindled it. Have you seen the physician to-day? Yes, sir; hardly had I gone out this morning when I met (found) him. Did the merchant pay you your money? Yes, sir; as soon as I had found him he paid me. When did you write to your mother? As soon as I had breakfasted I wrote to her. Have you not an umbrella? No, sir; no sooner had I bought one yesterday, than (*cuando*) I lost it. Is not virtue the most precious thing (*lo mas precioso*) in the (*del*) world? Yes, sir; it is; for without it, it is impossible to be good and happy. What is the matter with you? In shaving myself this morning I cut my face. What is the matter with that servant? In (*al*) kindling the fire this morning, he burnt his hand. Has the child broken his arm? Yes, sir; in falling yesterday he broke it.

Can you conjugate all the verbs regular and irregular (*irregulares*) of the Castilian (*castellana*) language? Yes, perfectly. Can you compose a story (*historia*) with irregular verbs? Yes, sir; I am going to begin; give attention. "In my country there was an old man who was very rich, but he died very poor, because he wished to do things that he could not. He went to the theatre every night, and played as one who (*como quien*) has all the mines of California at his disposal (*disposicion.*) The days (*el dia*) when (*que*) he lost he became (*se ponia*) of so bad humor, that when he came to his house, he punished (*castigaba*) all the servants. He rarely slept in his house, and the day that he had no money to play he sacrificed

(*sacrificaba*) the best article (*al haja*) that he had in order to have it. One day very early, he met (found) in the road, an old woman, who gave him a gold ring, and said to him; Sir, with this ring placed on the little finger of the right hand, you will find a spouse very rich. If you make good use (*uso*) of what she has, you will die tranquil (tranquilo) in your bed; but if not, you will die without having a bed on which to lie down (*acostarse.*) The old man took the ring, put it on the finger which the old woman told him, and went to a gambling house (*casa de juego*), and as he was a gambler, lost the money which he had in his pocket book, and played away the ring. Therefore (*por esa razon*) he did not find the rich wife, and died without having a bed on which to lie down.

How do you find my story with the irregular verbs? I believe that all the verbs of your story are not irregular; because there are in it auxiliary and regular verbs. There are auxiliary verbs, but no regular verbs.

Louis XII. respondió á cierto[1] cortesano,[2] que le incitaba[3] á castigar[4] á un sujeto que le habia disgustado[5] ántes de subir[6] al trono. No toca[7] al rey de Francia vengar[8] las injurias del duque[9] de Orleans.

Jamas se lee, sin enternecerse[10] y edificarse[11] un rasgo[12] del rey Roberto. Descubiertos[13] algunos cómplices[14] de una conspiracion[15] formada contra este monarca, confesaron su delito[16] con señales[17] de verdadero arrepentimiento.[18] Mas sin embargo el tribunal de los lores los condenó[19] á muerte, sin querer mitigar[20] la sentencia.[21] Roberto fué el único[22] que se compadeció,[23] y obligó[24] al consejó á suscribir[25] al perdon[26] con esta piadosa[27] estratagema;[28] envió su confesor[29] á aquellos infelices delincuentes,[30] y á la mañana les hizo administrar[31] la comunion;[32] dirigiendo[33] luego la palabra á sus consejeros,[34] les dijo; ¿os convendrá[35] enviar á la horca[36] á los que Jesu Cristo[37] acaba de recibir en su mesa?

Luis XII. preguntó al señor de Tribulce, ¿que era menester[38] para hacer la guerra con buen éxito?[39] Tres cosas son absolutamente indispensables, le respondió el mariscal; la primera dinero, la segunda dinero, y la tercera dinero.

1, *Cierto*, certain. 2, *Cortesano*, courtier. 3, *Incitar*, to incite. 4, *Castigar*, to punish. 5, *Disgustado*, displeased. 6, *Subir*, to ascend. 7, *Tocar*, to belong to. 8, *Vengar*, to avenge. 9, *Duque*, duke. 10, *Enternecerse*, to become affected. 11, *Edificarse*, to become edified. 12, *Rasgo*, trait. 13, *Descubierto*, discovered. 14, *Cómplice*, accomplice. 15, *Conspiracion*, conspiracy. 16, *Delito*, guilt. 17, *Señal*, mark. 18, *Arrepentimiento*, repentance. 19, *Condenar*, to condemn. 20, *Mitigar*, to mitigate. 21, *Sentencia*,

sentence. 22, *Unico*, only one. 23, *Compadecerse*, to pity. 24, *Obligar*, to oblige. 25, *Suscribir*, to subscribe. 26, *Perdon*, pardon. 27, *Piadoso*, pious. 28, *Estratagema*, stratagem. 29, *Confesor*, confessor. 30, *Delincuente*, offender. 31, *Administrar*, to administer. 32, *Comunion*, communion. 33, *Dirigir*, to direct. 34, *Consejero*, counseller. 35, *Convenir*, to become. 36, *Horca*, gallows. 37, *Jesu Cristo*, Jesus Christ. 38, *Menester*, necessary. 39, *Exito*, result. 40, *Mariscal*, marshal.

---

82. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA SEGUNDA.

FUTURE PERFECT.

THE FUTURE PERFECT is formed in Spanish, as in English, by joining the past participle to the future of the auxiliary.

Wilt thou have learned thy lesson at ten o'clock?	¿ *Habrás aprendido* tu leccion á las diez?
I shall have learned it at nine.	La *habré aprendido* á las nueve.
Will you have dined at two?	¿ *Habrán comido* VV. á las dos?
We shall have dined at two, and my brother will have dined at one.	*Habremos comido* á las dos, y mi hermano *habrá comido* á la una.
A *spot*, *stain*. A *spot*, *mark*.	Una *mancha*. Una *pinta*.
Disagreeable. His *country*.	*Desagradable*. Su *patria*.
To stain, *defile*. *In front*.	*Manchar*. *En frente*.
To command, also *to send*. *Several*.	*Mandar*. *Varios*.
To remain. *To take away*, *carry away*.	*Quedar*, *quedarse*. *Llevarse*.
To get wet. *To breakfast*.	*Mojarse*. *Desayunarse*.

Desayunar is to break one's fast by taking the first food in the morning; *almorzar* is to take a morning meal.

Why do you not put on your vest?	¿ Porqué no se pone V. su chaleco?
Because it has stains.	Porque tiene manchas.
That bird has several spots on his wings.	Ese pájaro tiene varias pintas en las alas.
To serve.	*Servir* (varied as *pedir*, Les. 58.)
He has served his country well.	El ha servido bien á su patria.
I have stained my handkerchief.	He manchado mi pañuelo.
My house is in front of the church.	Mi casa está en frente de la iglesia.
I shall remain here.	Me quedaré aquí.
My father commands it.	Mi padre lo manda.
The servant takes away the table.	El criado se lleva la mesa.

My hat has become wet.	Mi sombrero se ha mojado.
I break my fast at six with a cup of coffee and a piece of bread.	Me desayuno á las seis con una taza de café y un pedazo de pan.
That girl serves her mistress well.	Esa moza sirve á su ama bien.
A *republic.*	Una *república.*
The ignorant can be free neither in his opinions nor in his conduct.	El ignorante no puede ser libre ni en sus opiniones ni en su conducta.
You bathe in tepid water, but I bathe in cold.	V. se baña en el agua tibia, pero yo me baño en la fria.

Why do you not put on your new vest? I do not put it on, because it has several stains. Who has stained it? That little boy has stained it with ink, and the washerwoman can not take them out (*quitárselas*) with soap and water. What are you looking for? I am looking for a cow which I have lost; she has on the right side a black spot, and on the head several yellow spots. What has the master commanded you to do? He has commanded us to write these letters. Will you have written them at nine o'clock? No sir; but I shall have written them at eleven. What makes that disagreeable noise? The carriage-wheels (make it.) Whom are you waiting for? I am waiting for several persons who are on the wharf. Is not France a republic? No, sir; the United States are a republic, but France is not. Is not your horse very fat? He is very fat although he does not eat much.

What works has your friend written? He has written a poem and several other works. When you had washed and dressed, did you not shave yourself? No, sir; after I had bathed and dressed, the barber shaved me. Is it not very convenient to have much money? It is convenient to have much money, but it is more convenient to have good friends. Have you a sore finger? Yes, sir; in cutting my nails yesterday, I cut my finger. Has not that youth made his fortune? He has made it; but he is imprudent, fortune is variable, and no one knows the future; I believe that he will lose it again. Is your house more distant than the merchant's? No, sir; it is less distant than his. Do you like this damp weather? No, sir; it is very troublesome. Are oysters eaten raw? They are often eaten raw, but I prefer them (*á mí me gustan mas*) cooked.

Will you have gone to bed at ten? I shall have gone to bed at ten, and I shall have risen at six. Will you bathe to-morrow morning? I shall have bathed at seven. Do you walk much? I walk every morning and every evening. Are you going to college? I am going to college, and my brother is going to the university. Have you read all the books that I lent you? I have read them all but one, and I shall read that soon. Is the master correcting your exercises? No, sir; as soon as I had written them yesterday, he corrected them. What is that lazy scholar doing? He is sleeping while we are studying. What have you to do? I have to learn a lesson, and write two letters. That man is hungry, has he anything to eat? Yes, sir; he has enough to eat. Have you read that letter? Yes, sir; while you were breakfasting and while your friend was talking, I was reading it.

La séptima maravilla del mundo eran las pirámides de Egipto; monumentos célebres que son sepulcros de sus reyes y muestra[1] de su poder. Como la pasion favorita[2] de los Egipcios era prepararse[3] sepulcros, para privar[4] sus cuerpos de corrupcion, y ponerlos al abrigo[5] de todo insulto, quedan aun gran porcion de estas pirámides, cuyos preciosos restos[6] son objeto de la admiracion[7] é investigaciones[8] de los sabios; pero las mas bellas y mayores son las tres que existen[9] en la orilla izquierda del Nilo, y cerca del antiguo Cairo. Su elevacion es tal, que desde el pié parecen lanzarse[10] en las nubes; exteriormente[11] están revestidas[12] de marmol, y las rodean[13] una multitud de suntuosos edificios entre los cuales se cuenta[14] el que el rei Gian destinó[15] para sepultura[16] de sus ascendientes,[17] y que consistia en un inmenso salon,[18] sostenido por cien columnas de pórfido,[19] cuarenta estatuas de oro, que habia dentro, encerraban[20] los restos de otros tantos reyes, y en el sitio preferente,[21] estaba la del rey Gian, sentada en un trono, y cubierta de diamantes.

Los historiadores que han hablado de estos prodigios del arte, escribieron en tiempos tan posteriores al que se construyeron las pirámides, que los nombres de los reyes que concibieron y ejecutaron al proyecto de edificarlas los ha sepultado el olvido.

1, *Muestra*, specimen. 2, *Favorito*, favorite. 3, *Prepararse*, to prepare for themselves. 4, *Privar*, to secure. 5, *Al abrigo*, in protection. 6, *Restos*, remains. 7, *Admiracion*, admiration. 8, *Investigacion*, investigation. 9, *Existir*, to be. 10, *Lanzarse*, to shoot upwards. 11, *Exteriormente*, externally. 12, *Revestido*, covered. 13, *Rodear*, to encompass. 14, *Cantarse*, to be counted. 15, *Destinar*, to destine. 16, *Sepultura*, burial. 17, *Ascendiente*,

ancestor. 18, *Salon*, saloon. 19, *Pórfido*, porphyry. 20, *Encerrar*, to inclose. 21, *Preferente*, preëminent. 22, *Prodigio*, prodigy. 23, *Posterior*, later. 24, *Concebir*, to conceive. 25, *Ejecutar*, to execute. 26, *Edificar*, to build. 27, *Olvido*, forgetfulness.

---

83. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA TERCIA.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF SER.

Yo sea,	*tú seas,*	*él sea,*	*nosotros seamos,*	*vosotros seais,*	*ellos sean.*
I may be,	thou mayest be,	he may be,	we may be,	you may be,	they may be.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF ESTAR.

Yo esté,	*tú estés,*	*él esté,*	*nosotros estemos,*	*vosotros estéis,*	*ellos estén.*
I may be,	thou mayest be,	he may be,	we may be,	you may be,	they may be.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD, in Spanish, depends upon some other word or phrase, and is generally preceded by the conjunction *que* or a relative pronoun. It expresses the meaning of the verb under a condition of doubt or uncertainty, *not as actually existing; but as regarded by the mind*, and all the cases of its use may be reduced to this one rule. For the benefit of the learner however more specific rules are given.

RULE I. Verbs expressing *will, desire, doubt, fear, command, consent,* and affections of the mind generally, govern a dependent verb in the subjunctive, when the subject of the dependent is different from that of the governing verb.

I wish that thou mayest be satisfied, or I wish thee to be satisfied.	Quiero que *estés** satisfecho.
I wish that thou mayest be good, or I wish thee to be good.	Quiero que *seas* bueno.
He desires that I may be here, or He desires me to be here.	El desea que yo *esté* aquí.
He desires that I may be learned, or He desires me to be learned.	El desea que yo *sea* docto.

REMARK 1. When there is no change of person the infinitive is preferred to the subjunctive in Spanish as in English.

He desires that he may be good.	Desea *ser* bueno.
I desire that I may be learned.	Deseo *ser* docto.
We fear that he is our enemy.	Tememos que *sea* él nuestro enemigo.

---

* Here the second verb *estes* depends on the first *quiero*, and has a different subject *tú* instead of *yo* understood; it is therefore in the subjunctive, *Quiero el libro que tienes;* here the second verb is not in the subjunctive, because it does not depend on *quiero*, which has *libro* for its object, *Quiero estar satisfecho;* here the second verb *estar*, is not in the subjunctive, because it has no subject different from that of the first, *quiero*.

We fear that he is sick.	Tememos que *esté* él enfermo.
They doubt our being honest.	*Dudan* que *seamos honrados.*
They doubt our being here.	Dudan que *estemos* aquí.
I do not approve of your being proud.	No *apruebo* que *sean* VV. soberbios.
I do not approve of your being in this place.	No apruebo que *estén* VV. en este lugar.
To doubt. To approve.	*Dudar. Aprobar*, (varied as *Mover*, Les. 37.)
To be ignorant of, not to know. To desire.	*Ignorar. Desear.*
To feel, to perceive, also *to regret.*	*Sentir*, (varied as *preferir*, Les. 35.)
Honest. *An honest man.*	Honrado. *Un hombre de bien.*
Proud. A *philosopher.*	*Soberbio.* Un *filósofo.*
To fear, apprehend. Learned.	*Temer.* Docto.
To take place. To throw, to shoot.	*Darse* or *ser. Tirar* or *arrojar.*
To refuse.	*Negar* (varied like *cerrar*, Les. 38.)
To bite.	*Morder*, (varied like *mover*, Les. 37.)
I regret that you are poor.	Siento que V. *sea* pobre.
He regrets that we are sick.	Siente que estemos enfermos (or malos.)
We feel the cold in winter.	Sentimos el frio en invierno.
She does not know that her brothers are in the country.	Ella ignora que sus hermanos estén en el campo.
She does not know that they are our friends.	Ignora que *sean* nuestros amigos.
The ball takes place this evening.	El baile será (or se da) esta noche.
It took place last evening.	El fué (or se dió) anoche.
It took place the day before yesterday at ten o'clock in the evening.	Fué (or se dió) anteayer á las diez de la noche.
He throws stones at the dog.	El tira piedras al perro.
He throws himself on the ground.	Se arroja contra el suelo.
He denies what he has done.	Niega lo que ha hecho.
The dog has bitten the child.	El perro ha mordido al niño.

Where do you wish your son to be? I wish him to be in school (*la escuela.*) Do you not desire your sons to be wise? Yes, sir; all parents desire their sons to be wise. What does the boy who is in the street wish? He wishes his brothers to be with him. Does he not fear that the dog of his neighbor may be in the yard? He does not fear the dog's being in the yard, but his being in the street. Have you friends? We have some. What do you desire for them? We desire that they may be happy. I desire your

father to be in my store to-morrow. I doubt his being in the city to-morrow, because we fear that he is sick in the country. Does that old man doubt that my son is as wise as his cousin? He does not doubt his being as wise; but he doubts his being as honest. What o'clock is it? It is twelve o'clock. Do you approve of your children's being here? We approve of their being here, but we do not approve of their being in the street.

Is not your white handkerchief stained? Yes, sir; it has several stains. Why does that boy make that disagreeable noise? Because he is bad. His father commands him to be (*que esté*) at home, and not in the street. Do you know the neighbor who lives in front of your house? I know him well; he is an honest man, and learned, but he is too proud. At what hour did you break your fast this morning? I broke my fast at half past six, with a cup of coffee and a biscuit. Did you know last night that your friend had been to see you? Yes, sir; and I regretted extremely (*en estremo*) not to have been (*haber estado*) at home. Why do you regret to have Mr. B. for a neighbor? Because he has a son who is almost always throwing stones. Did you ask your father for something? I asked him for money and he refused it to me. Why does the boy fear that dog? He fears him because he sometimes bites him. I do not doubt that this lesson is very long, and the master wishes you to be at home, and me to be in my room.

A person asked one of his friends why he had married (*se habia casado con*) a woman small and lean (*delgada*): "It is," he replied, "because I have always thought that of all the evils which afflict (*afligen*) us, a prudent man ought always to choose (*escoger*) the least.

Queremos que nuestra juventud lea[1] con alguna detencion[2] las siguientes[3] líneas que consagramos[4] unicamente[5] á su verdadera felicidad.

Bacon, este sabio tan superior[6] á su siglo, esta guia[6] tan ilustrada[7] en el estudio[8] de la naturaleza, este legislador[9] de la razon humana, que habia penetrado[10] en las profundidades de la filosofia y empezado á ilustrar[11] la fisica[12] con las luces de la experiencia;[13] Bacon, cuyos vastos conocimientos[14] han publicado,[15] y cuyas obras han traducido[16] y analizado[17] los filósofos modernos,[18] no era verdaderamente tal como han querido pintárnosle algunas veces. Se sabe hoy cuanto[19] habian ellos desfigurado[20] sus sentimientos.[21] El autor del *Cristianismo*[22] *de Bacon* pu-

blicado pocos años ha, le ha vengado[23] de la alteracion de sus obras. La vida de Bacon, los fragmentos[24] que ha dado del ilustre canciller,[25] las notas[26] y reflexiones[27] con que ha acompañado[28] sus extractos,[29] muestran hasta que punto[30] se habia alterado[31] su método[32] y obscurecido[33] su doctrina.[34] Bacon creia que la revelacion[35] sola nos ha ilustrado sobre el verdadero orígen del mundo y del hombre. Tenia las ideas[36] mas nobles de la divinidad,[37] profesaba[38] un gran respeto[39] á los libros santos, y la observacion[40] de la naturaleza era para él un nuevo motivo[41] de admirar y bendecir[42] al autor benéfico de todas las cosas.

1, *Lea*, may read, (subj. pres. of *leer*.) 2, *Detencion*, (detension) deliberation. 3, *Siguiente*, following. 4, *Consagrar*, to consecrate. 5, *Unicamente*, solely. 6, *Guia*, guide. 7, *Ilustrado*, enlightened. 8, *Estudio*, study. 9, *Legislador*, legislator. 10, *Penetrado*, penetrated. 11, *Ilustrar*, to enlighten. 12, *Fisica*, physics. 13, *Experiencia*, experience. 14, *Conocimiento*, knowledge. 15, *Publicado*, published. 16, *Traducido*, translated. 17, *Analizado*, analyzed. 18, *Moderno*, modern. 19, *Cuanto*, how much. 20, *Desfigurado* (disfigured) misrepresented. 21, *Sentimiento*, sentiment. 22, *Cristianismo*, christianity. 23, *Vengado*, avenged. 24, *Fragmento*, fragment. 25, *Canciller*, chancellor. 26, *Nota*, note. 27, *Reflexion*, reflection. 28, *Acompañado*, accompanied. 29, *Extracto*, extract. 30, *Punto*, point (*hasta que punto*, how far.) 31, *Alterado*, altered. 32, *Método*, method. 33, *Obscurcido*, obscured. 34, *Doctrina*, doctrine. 35, *Revelacion*, revelation. 36, *Idea*, idea. 37, *Divinidad*, divinity. 38, *Profesar*, to profess. 39, *Respeto*, respect. 40, *Observacion*, observation. 41, *Motivo*, motive. 42, *Bendecir*, to bless.

---

84. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA CUARTA.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF DAR, TO GIVE.

Yo dé,	*tú des,*	*él dé*	*nosotros demos, vosotros deis,*	*ellos den.*
I may give,	thou mayest give,	he may give,	we may give,	you may give, they may give.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF IR, TO GO.

Yo vaya,	*tú vayas,*	*él vaya,*	*nosotros vayamos, vosotros vayais,*	*ellos vayan.*
I may go,	thou mayest go,	he may go,	we may go,	you may go, they may go.

RULE II. Impersonal verbs and impersonal phrases, such as *es*, with an adjective, when they are followed by *que* and a verb not affirming a thing positively, govern that verb in the subjunctive.

It is of much importance that you give him money.	*Importa* mucho que le *dé* V dinero.

I must (or *it is necessary* that I) give it to him.	*Es menester* que yo se le *dé*.
It is suitable that we give them money.	*Es conveniente* que les *demos* dinero.
It is impossible that they give it to them.	*Es imposible* que ellos se le *den*.
I must (or it is necessary that I) go home.	*Es menester* que yo *vaya* á mi casa.
It may be that he is going.	*Puede ser* que él *vaya*.
It will be *necessary* that they go to school.	Será *necesario* que vayan á la escuela.
Necessary. It may be, perhaps.	Necesario, or menester. Puede ser.
Suitable. It imports, is important.	Cenveniente. Importa.
Good morning, sir.	*Buenos dias*, caballero.

REMARK 1. In salutations *dia, tarde*, and *noche* are always plural.

Good evening. Good night.	*Buenas tardes. Buenas noches.*
At your service.	Para servir á V.
How are you? or, how do you do?	¿Como está V.?
A *family. Except.*	Una *familia. Excepto.*
The family is well except my brother.	La familia está buena excepto mi hermano.
To weep. To laugh. To laugh at.	*Llorar. Reir. Reirse de.*

Yo rio,	*tú ries,*	*él rie,*	*nosotros reimos,*	*vosotros reis,*	*ellos rien.*
I laugh,	thou laughest,	he laughs,	we laugh,	you laugh.	they laugh.

Common. Equal.	*Comun. Igual.*
The *air. Beauty.*	El *aire.* La *hermosura.*
The air is common to all.	El aire es comun á todos.
My sisters are equal in beauty.	Mis hermanas son iguales en hermosura.
Do you not know that he is a philosopher?	¿Ignora V. que sea filósofo?
A *fever. Since.*	Una *calentura. Desde.*
Since when, how long? Since yesterday.	¿Desde cuando? Desde ayer.
How long have you been here?	¿Desde cuando está V. aquí?
I have been here since Sunday.	Estoy aquí desde el domingo.
To stand up. He cannot stand up.	Estar en pié. No puede estar en pié.

Good morning, miss. Good morning, sir. How do you do? I am very well, at your service. How is your family? All are well except my father, who is unwell. What is the matter with him? He has a fever, and headache. How long has your father been sick? Since last week, when (*que*) he went to the country, and when he returned to the city it was necessary to carry him to his bed, because

he could not stand up. Is your neighbor learned? My neighbor is honest, but I doubt his being learned. Is not his brother rich? His brother is very proud, but I know not that he is rich. You are without a cloak; do you not feel cold? Yes, sir; I always feel the cold in winter. Yesterday I asked your brother for his knife, and he refused it to me; does he often refuse it to you? He always refuses it to me.

Must we not give something to that poor man? We must give him some money. Do you believe that your rich neighbor gives him money? No, sir; I doubt his giving him a glass of water. Do you wish me to go to the theatre to-night? No, I wish you to go to the church, and the children to go also. At what hour must we go? It is necessary for you to go at seven. Do you not speak to your neighbor? No, sir; he is not honest (*hombre de bien*), and I never speak to him, nor bid him (*le doy*) good morning. What flowers have you in your garden? I have all those which you have in yours, except pinks. Have you heard of the two philosophers, Democrates and Heraclitus? Yes, sir; the former regretted and wept at the follies (*locuras*) of men, and the other laughed at them. Which of the two was the more wise? It is not good either to weep or to laugh always at the follies of men. Are not the best things the most common? Yes, sir; light, air, and water, are the best things, and they are also the most common. Which of those two young ladies is the more beautiful? I cannot say, because I think that they are equal in beauty.

Where dost thou wish me to go? It is important for thee to go to school, and for thy brothers to go also. Is it necessary for us to go every day? You must go every day except Saturday and Sunday. Why must we go to school? You must go in order to learn English, French, and Spanish. Is it not suitable that my cousin go also? It is impossible for him to go, because he has much work to do. Must we give the master his money to-day? No, I have no money now; but perhaps I may give it to him to-morrow. Must we give the poor boy anything? It is necessary for you to give him bread, and your friends to give him money.

Descartes, honra[1] de Francia, no nos ha dejado en duda[2] sus sentimientos religiosos.[3] En su metafísica[4] probó[5] la existencia[6] de Dios, la distincion[7] del cuerpo y del alma. Las verdades de la fé[8] (se lee sobre este asunto[9] en la enciclopedia,[10] artículo[11] *cartesianismo*[12]) siempre fueron las primeras en su creencia,[13] siempre conservó el fondo[14] de piedad[15] que le habian inspirado sus maestros en la Flecha.[16] Jamas pareció filósofo mas respetuoso[17] que él hácia la divinidad. Siempre habló de Dios con sabiduria, siempre de un modo noble y elevado. Estaba en la continua aprehension[18] de no decir ni escribir cosa indigna de la religion,[19] y nada igualaba[20] su delicadeza[21] en este punto. Sus cartas particularmente[22] respiran[23] una moral[24] elevada, y una filosofía religiosa, que muestran un alma recta é ilustrada con las luces de la fé.

1, *Honra*, honor. 2, *Duda*, doubt. 3, *Religioso*, religious. 4, *Metafísica*, metaphysics. 5, *Probar*, to prove. 6, *Existencia*, existence. 7, *Distincion*, distinction. 8, *Fé*, faith. 9, *Asunto*, subject. 10, *Enciclopedia*, encyclopedia. 11, *Artículo*, article. 12, *Cartesianismo*, cartesianism. 13, *Creencia*, belief. 14, *Fondo*, foundation. 15, *Piedad*, piety. 16, *Flecha*, (a college at Paris.) 17, *Respetuoso*, respectful. 18, *Aprehension*, (apprehension) guard. 19, *Religion*, religion. 20, *Igualar*, to equal. 21, *Delicadeza*, delicacy. 22, *Particularmente*, particularly. 23, *Respirar*, to breathe. 24, *Moral*, morality. 25, *Recto*, just.

---

85. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA QUINTA.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

The subjunctive mood, used according to the two rules already given, expresses the meaning of the verb not as a fact, but as a mere conception of the mind.* So also in the following:

RULE III. The relatives *que, quien,* and *cuyo,* when they refer merely to what is general and suppositious, take the following verb in the subjunctive; but when they refer to what is definite and known, they take it in the indicative.

I will buy a house which is large. Compraré una casa *que sea* grande.

---

* To say: You give him money, *V. le da dinero*, is to state a fact, that money is actually given. But, to say: He wishes you to give him money, *él quiere que V. le dé dinero*, (according to Rule I. Les. 83,) or, You must give him money, *es menester que V. le dé dinero*, (according to Rule II. Les 84,) is to represent the giving of money, not as a fact, but only as a desire or obligation. In the first phrase, therefore, the indicative mood is used; in the two last, the subjunctive.

I wish an employment which is agreeable.	Quiero un empleo *que sea* agradable.
I will marry a woman whose soul is endowed with sensibility.	Me casaré con una mujer cuya alma *sea* sensible.

These phrases imply that the particular house, the precise kind of occupation, and the individual woman, are not yet determined on; but are referred to as mere desires or intentions of the mind. When the particular objects are known, and spoken of as facts, the indicative is used; thus:

I shall buy the house which is large.	Compraré la casa que *es* grande.
I have an employment which is agreeable.	Tengo un empleo que *es* agradable.
I am going to marry a woman whose soul is endowed with sensibility.	Voy á casarme con una mujer cuya alma *es* sensible.

REMARK 1. The relative also, preceded by *él, lo, todo, cuanto*, when used vaguely, governs the subjunctive.

I will buy of those horses that which is the best.	Compraré de esos caballos *el que sea* mejor.
I will buy the one which is the best.	Compraré el que es mejor.

In this latter phrase the particular horse is designated, in the former he is not. So in the first phrase below *lo que* is used vaguely, in the second definitely.

He will tell you what is the truth.	El le dirá á V. lo que sea la verdad.
What he tells you is the truth.	Lo que él le dice á V. es la verdad.
He marries his cousin.	El se casa con su prima.
An *employment*. *Endowed with sensibility.*	Un *empleo*. *Sensible.*

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT OF SABER, TO KNOW.

Yo sepa,	*tú sepas*,	*él sepa*.
I may know,	thou mayest know,	he may know,
nosotros sepamos,	*vosotros sepáis*,	*ellos sepan*.
we may know,	you may know,	they may know.

Do you wish us to know more than our cousins?	¿Quiere V. que sepamos mas que nuestros primos?
I wish you to know as much as they.	Quiero que VV. sepan tanto como ellos.
Must I know my lesson at eleven?	¿Es menester que yo sepa mi leccion á las once?
Thou must know it at ten.	Es menester que la sepas á las diez.
I wish for a master who knows French.	Quiero un maestro que sepa el frances.
The *military*. *Certain.*	Los *militares*. *Cierto.*
An *entertainment*, *party*. The *birth*.	Un *convite*, *tertulia*. El *nacimiento*.
The *birth-day*.	El *dia de nacimiento*, *el cumpleaños*.
He answers yes. He answers no.	Responde que sí. Responde que no.

REMARK 2. Politeness often requires the epithets *el señor*, *la señora*, *la señorita*, etc., before persons, in Spanish.

Where is your father?	¿ Donde está el señor padre de V.?
Is your mother well?	¿ Está buena la señora madre de V.?
Fireworks. *Sure.*	*Fuegos artificiales.* *Seguro.*
Together. We will go together.	*Junto.* Iremos juntos.
Pleasure. The *company.*	El *placer.* La *compañia.*
How long have you had the fever?	¿ Desde cuando tiene V. la calentura?
I have had it since last week.	La tengo desde la semana pasada.
The military give an entertainment to-night.	Los militares dan un convite esta noche.
Perhaps I shall be there.	Puede ser que yo esté allá.
The *hotel.* The *Saint Charles hotel.*	La *posada.* La *posada de San Carlos.*
Dear. Dear sister.	*Querido.* Querida hermana.

When does your nephew marry the daughter of the rich Mr. C.? He marries her the twentieth of next month. Has he a good employment? He is seeking one which may be more agreeable than the one which he has had. Will he marry a lady who is amiable? He will marry one who is amiable and endowed with sensibility. Do you wish for a master who knows Spanish? I wish for one who knows Spanish and French. Which of my books do you wish for? I wish for that which is the largest. Do you wish me to go to see the fireworks to-night? I wish you to go, and your children to go also. Can you not come to the entertainment to-night? No, sir; it is necessary for us to go to the country this afternoon. At what hour must you go home? We must go at ten.

Good morning, dear Emily (*Emilia*); are you well as ever (*siempre*)? Yes, dear cousin, thank God (*gracias á Dios*), our family is well, no body has had even a slight (*ni una pequena*) fever. My uncle, can you lend me your carriage? I wish my cousin to go this afternoon to the country. Dear nephew, thou knowest that all which I have is at thy service. Where are you going? I am going to the party which the sailors give to the son of general B. Where do the sailors give the party? They give it in the hotel which is in front of the theatre. It is the best hotel in this city. An Irishman went to see a professor (*profesor*) of music (*de música*), and asked him what was the price (*precio*) of his lessons. The professor answered, Six dollars for the first month, and three for the second. Then, said the Irishman, I will come the second month.

Where is your sister? She is in her room dressing to go to the ball to-night. Where is the ball? At the St. Charles hotel. Who gives the ball? Do you not know, that almost every year, on Washington's birth-day, the military give a ball and entertainment? Yes, miss, but I did not remember that to-day was the birth-day of Washington. And do not you, miss, go to the ball also? No, sir; I prefer going to the theatre. There is no theatre to-night, because there is a ball. Are you certain that there is no theatre? I am very certain, because I went to ask if there was no theatre, and they answered me no; but, I am sure that to-morrow there will be no ball, but there will be a theatre, and fireworks in Lafayette square. If you are not engaged (*comprometido*) with other young ladies, I wish you to be here to-morrow, and if there is a theatre, or fireworks, we will go together. I shall have much pleasure in seeing myself honored (*honrado*) by the company of a young lady so amiable.

Newton, este hombre inmortal, este prodigio de la Inglaterra, este físico[1] profundo, este genio[2] verdaderamente inventor,[3] que ha hecho dar tantos pasos[4] á la ciencia,[5] y que juntaba[6] al talento[7] de comprender los pormenores,[8] el arte mas admirable para unir[9] los hechos particulares[10] por los resultados[11] generales. Newton encontraba en los fenómenos[12] que eran el objeto de sus investigaciones nuevos motivos de admirar el poder infinitamente fecundo[13] del soberano Ser.[14] Descubriendo[15] nuevas leyes[16] en este universo,[17] tomaba de ellas ocasion[18] para rendir[19] homenaje[20] á la simplicidad[21] de los medios[22] por los que Dios gobernaba[23] esta máquina[24] tan complicada[25] en la apariencia.[26] Se sabe que mutilaciones[27] se han hecho en su *óptica*[28] por unas gentes que veian con dolor el que este hombre, que habia iluminado[29] una materia[30] tan delicada[31] y tan poco profundizada[32] hasta entónces, no viese ménos claro en la causa[33] de tantas maravillas. *El estaba persuadido*[34] *de la revelacion*, dice Fontenelle en su *elogio de Newton* (y Fontenelle es tanto mas digno de crédito[35] sobre este punto, cuanto no hizo la misma justicia[36] á Leibnitz, como vamos á ver), *y entre los libros de toda especie, que sin cesar*[37] *tenia entre las manos, el que mas continuamente leia era la Biblia.*[38]

1, *Físico*, natural philosopher. 2, *Genio*, genius. 3, *Inventor*, (inventor) inventive. 4, *Paso*, step. 5, *Ciencia*, science. 6, *Juntar*, to join. 7, *Talento*, talent. 8, *Pormenor*, detail. 9, *Unir*, to unite. 10, *Hecho particular*, particular fact. 11, *Resultado*, result. 12, *Fenómeno*, phenomenon. 13, *Fecundo*, productive. 14, *Soberano Ser*, Supreme Being. 15, *Descubriendo*, discovering. 16, *Ley*, law. 17, *Universo*, universe. 18, *Ocasion*, occasion. 19, *Ren-*

dir, to render. 20, *Homenaje*, homage. 21, *Simplicidad*, simplicity. 22, *Medios*, means. 23, *Gobernar*, to govern. 24, *Máquina*, machine. 25, *Complicada*, complicated. 26, *Apariencia*, appearance. 27, *Mutilacion*, mutilation. 28, *Optica*, optics. 29, *Iluminado*, illuminated. 30, *Materia*, matter. 31, *Delicado*, delicate. 32, *Profundizado*, fathomed. 33, *Causa*, cause. 34, *Persuadido*, convinced. 35, *Crédito*, credit. 36, *Justicia*, justice. 37, *Cesar*, to cease. 38, *Biblia*, bible

---

86. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA SEXTA.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT of all Spanish verbs (except those already given) is formed from the first person singular of the indicative present, by changing,

In the first conjugation o final into	E,	ES,	E,	EMOS,	EIS,	EN.
In the second and third, into	A,	AS.	A,	AMOS,	AIS,	AN.

INF.	IND. PRES.	SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.
LLAMAR,	*Llamo*,	*Llame, llames, llame, llamemos, llaméis, llamen*,
VENDER,	*Vendo*,	*Venda, vendas, venda, vendamos, vendáis, vendan.*
ESCRIBIR,	*Escribo*,	*Escriba, escribas, escriba, escribamos, escribáis, escriban.*

REMARK 1. In the first conjugation, however, *co* is changed into *que*, *ques*, etc., and *go* into *gue*, *gues*, etc.

BUSCAR,	*Busco*,	*Busque, busques, busque, busquemos, busquéis, busquen.*
LLEGAR,	*Llego*,	*Llegue, llegues, llegue, lleguemos, lleguéis, lleguen.*

REMARK 2. When the penult of the infinitive has a single vowel, and it is changed to two vowels in the first person of the indicative, the first and second person plural of the subjunctive, take the single vowel of the infinitive.

PODER,	*Puedo*,	*Pueda, puedas, pueda, podamos, podáis, puedan.*
CERRAR,	*Cierro*,	*Cierre, cierres, cierre, cerremos, cerréis, cierren.*

REMARK 3. In the third conjugation, however, if the two vowels *ie*, or *ue*, precede the last syllable of the first person indicative present the first and second person plural of the subjunctive retain the former of these two vowels

PREFERIR,	*Prefiero*,	*Prefiera, prefieras, prefiera, prefiramos. prefiráis, prefieran.*
DORMIR,	*Duermo*,	*Duerma, duermas, duerma, durmamos, durmáis, duerman.*

The exceptions (all of which have been previously given) are these:

INF.	SUBJ. PRES.	INF.	SUBJ. PRES.	INF.	SUBJ. PRES.
SER,	*sea*, Les. 83.	DAR,	*dé*, Les. 84.	SABER,	*sepa*, Les. 85.
ESTAR,	*esté*, Les. 83.	IR,	*vaya*, Les. 84.	PLACER,	has *plegue*, impers.

Erguir, to erect, has *irgamos*, *irgais*, in the first and second persons plural.

To arrive. He arrived yesterday.	*Llegar.* Llegó ayer.
I wish you to call the servant.	Quiero que V. llame al criado.
He doubts my selling the horse.	Duda que yo venda el caballo.

The master has ordered thee to write a letter.	El maestro ha ordenado que escribas una carta.
We must look for our books.	Es necesario que busquemos nuestros libros.
I hope they may arrive to-day.	Espero que lleguen hoy.
Do you know a man who is able to speak six languages?	¿ Conoce V. á un hombre que pueda hablar seis lenguas?
We wish the servants to shut the windows.	Queremos que los criados cierren las ventanas.
Have you a servant who sleeps less than seven hours a day?	¿ Tiene V. un criado que duerma menos de siete horas por dia?
I have one who sleeps less than six.	Tengo uno que duerme ménos de seis.
A *language*, *tongue*. *Modern*.	Una *lengua*. *Moderno*.
He studies his lesson again.	El vuelve á estudiar su leccion.

REMARK 4. *Volver*, followed by the infinitive, denotes repetition, or doing again.

I will read that book again.	Volveré á leer ese libro.
To appear. *It appears*.	*Parecer*. *Parece*.
To rejoice. I rejoice much.	*Alegrarse* (*de*). Me alegro mucho.
I rejoice to see thee again.	Me alegro de volver á verte.
Novelty. Without mishap.	*La novedad*. Sin novedad.
The *sea*. The *land*.	La *mar*. La *tierra*.
By sea. *By land*.	*Por mar*. *Por tierra*.
A *country house*. *To forget*.	Una *casa de campo*. *Olvidar*.
I have forgotten your *name*.	Yo he olvidado su *nombre* de V.
My name is John. The *name*.	Mi nombre es Juan. El *nombre*.
To esteem. I esteem him much.	*Estimar*. Le estimo mucho.
My *opinion*. *With respect to*.	Mi *parecer*. *Respecto á*.

Dear Michael (*Miguel*), I have the greatest pleasure in seeing you again. I also rejoice my dear John (*Juanito*) to have met with you without mishap. When did you come? I came last week. Did you come by sea, or by land? I came by land. Did you not think of passing all the summer at the north? Yes; but as in the place where I was, there are no good hotels, nor theatre, nor any amusements (*diversiones*), I prefer rather to be here than there. When shall we have the pleasure of your going to pass a week with us in our country house? Now it is impossible, because we are in winter, and as my family know that I feel the cold so much, they are not willing that I should go out of the city. I hope that in a few days we may have the pleasure of your keeping us (*de que V. nos haga*)

company. With the pleasure that I had from seeing you, I had forgotten to say that I have a letter for you from a lady whom you esteem much. I know already from whom it is. I desire to read it; have you it here? No, I have it in my trunk; but if you wish me to give it to your brother, he will give it to you. Where did you speak with that lady? I spoke with her at the ball which the merchants gave to the American consul (*cónsul*).

Is not your neighbor's dog bad? He is very bad; he is always biting the feet and legs of those who pass. Does it not give you a desire (*gana*) to laugh, when you hear that man speak English? Always when (*que*) I hear him speak, I laugh. And does he not laugh when he hears you speak Spanish? He laughs at me, and I laugh at him, we are equal. Do you know that Mr. D. is going to marry? Whom? The daughter of a lawyer; and his brother is going to marry also, in the winter. Do you wish me to give you my opinion respecting the voice of Mrs. B.? It appears to me that it is not so sweet as that of Jenny Lind. I am going to buy a store, and I wish you to give me your opinion. How do you wish me to give you my opinion on a thing that I do not understand? When will your friends arrive from the country? My cousin arrived last night, and his sister will arrive to-day at two. What do you study? I study modern languages. Is it necessary that a learned man know the ancient languages? It is necessary that he know the ancient and the modern.

Habiendo vivido un jóven algun tiempo en compañia de los dervises,[1] y tomando su carácter,[2] volvió á casa de su padre, hombre sabio y virtuoso. Sucedió[3] que una noche estando acostado[4] en un mismo cuarto, y en medio de toda su familia, él no cerraba los ojos, repasando[5] el Coran;[6] del cual leia en alta voz algunos passages. La lectura[7] despertó á su padre, y notado[8] esto por el jóven le dijo: ¡Vuestros hijos están sepultados en un profundo sueño sin pensar en Dios! Hijo mio, respondió el padre, vale mas[9] dormir que velar[10] para notar las faltas de tus hermanos.

¿Que se necesita[11] para vestirse? Vestidos. ¿Y para cubrirse la cabeza que se ha menester? Un sombrero. ¿Y para el cuello? Una corbata. ¿Y para las piernas? Medias. ¿Y para los piés? Zapatos. ¿Que es lo què se necesita para atar[12] los zapatos? Cordones[13] ó cintas. ¿Y para peinarse?[14] Un peine. ¿Que es necesario para ver? Ojos. ¿Para oir? Oidos.[15] ¿Y para oler?[16] La

nariz. ¿Para correr? Los piés. ¿Para tomar alguna cosa? Las manos. ¿Para apagar[17] la sed? El agua. ¿Para rebanar el pan? Un cuchillo. ¿Para comprar alguna cosa? El dinero.

1, *Dervises*, dervises. 2, *Carácter*, character. 3, *Suceder*, to happen. 4, *Estando acostado*, having lain down. 5, *Repasar*, to pass over again. 6, *Coran*, coran. 7, *Lectura*, reading. 8, *Notado*, observed. 9, *Vale mas*, it is better. 10, *Velar*, to watch. 11, *Necesitarse*, to be necessary. 12, *Atar*, to tie. 13, *Cordon*, string. 14, *Peinar*, to comb. 15, *Oido*, ear. 16, *Oler*, to smell. 17, *Apagar*, to quench. 18, *Rebanar*, to cut in slices.

---

87. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

RULE IV. When the words *solo, ninguno, pocos, cualquiera, quienquiera, nadie*, and others implying comparison, are followed by a relative, the subsequent verb seldom affirms a thing positively, and is accordingly almost always in the subjunctive mood.

He is the only man who can help us.	Es el *solo* hombre *que puede* ayudarnos.
He finds no servant who is willing to come.	No encuentra *ningun* criado *que quiera* venir.
There are few who are contented.	Hay *pocos que estén* contentos.
Whatever may be his intention it can never be good.	*Cualquiera que sea* su intencion nunca podrá ser buena.
Whoever associates with him will weary of him.	*Quienquiera que* le *trate* se cansará de él.
No one who sees Charles can be ignorant that he is your son.	*Nadie que vea* á Carlos puede ignorar que es su hijo de V.

REMARK 1. Superlatives with a relative may take the following verb in the subjunctive or the indicative.

He is the wisest man that I know.	Es el hombre mas sabio que conozco, (or conozca.)
It is the best wine that I have drank.	Es el mejor vino que haya (or he) bebido.

RULE V. Verbs which come after the following conjunctions, as they do not commonly affirm a thing positively, are generally put in the subjunctive.

A fin que,	in order that.	*Hasta que,*	*until.*
A ménos que,	*unless.*	*Léjos de que,*	*for from.*
A no ser que,	*unless.*	*No por que,*	not that.
Antes que,	*before.*	¡ Ojalá !	*would to God, or, O that!*
Aunque,	*though.*	*Por poco que,*	*however little.*
Aun cuando,	*although.*	*Por mucho que,* / *Por mas que,*	*however, whatever.*
Bien que,	*though.*	*Por temor de no,*	*lest.*
Caso que, / *En caso que,*	in case that, if.	*Para que,*	*in order that.*
Con tal que, / *Como quiera que,*	provided that.	*Sea que,*	*whether.*
Dado que, / *Dado caso que,*	grant that.	*Siempre que,*	*whenever.*
		Supuesto que,	*suppose that.*

However rich he may be, he is unhappy.	Por mas rico que él sea, es infeliz.
I instruct him in order that he may be learned.	Le enseño *á fin que sea* docto.
I will go home before he comes.	Yo iré á mi casa *antes que* él *venga.*
I give him money that he may buy books.	Le doy dinero *para que* él *compre* libros.
I will see him though he is sick.	Le veré *aunque está* enfermo.
I will see him though he be sick.	Le veré *aunque esté* enfermo.

In the former of these two phrases the sickness is known and spoken of as an act, in the latter it is spoken of merely as a supposition.

REMARK 2. The verb following *cuando* is in the subjunctive when it has a future sense, and has with it also a verb in a future sense expressed or understood.

When will you speak with my father?	¿ Cuando hablará V. con mi padre ?
When I shall see him (I will speak with him).	*Cuando* le *vea*, (hablaré con él.)
When will you go to see him ?	¿ Cuando irá V. á verle ?
When I know that he is sick.	*Cuando sepa* que *esté* enfermo.
Will you stay here until I return ?	¿ Quiere V. estarse aquí *hasta que* yo *vuelva* ?
I shall go out before you return.	Yo saldré *ántes que* V. *vuelva.*
Unless he comes I shall not go.	*A ménos que* V. *venga*, yo no iré.
Provided he have money he will be contented.	*Con tal que tenga* dinero estará contento.
Although he be poor, he will have friends.	*Aun cuando sea* pobre, tendrá amigos.
When will you buy a house?	¿ Cuando comprará V. una casa ?
When I have money.	*Cuando* yo *tenga* dinero.
In case that you need me to-morrow I will be here.	*En caso que* V. me necesite mañana, estaré aquí.
Unless you call him, he will not come.	A ménos que V. le llame él no vendrá.
O that he may come !	¡ Ojalá que él venga !

When shall we fish and hunt? When we live in the country. Do you like fruit (*frutas*)? I like it much, and I desire that there may be much (*muchas*) every year. Has the merchant sold his cotton? He has sold it for cash. Are you acquainted with my brother-in-law? No, sir; but when I go to Boston, I will become acquainted with him. Is this wine good? When I drink it I will give you my opinion. Does your spouse like pine-apples? She likes them, but I fear her eating them. Will it rain to-morrow? It will not rain; but, I doubt its being good weather. Do you believe what that stranger says? No, because I doubt his speaking the truth (*la verdad*).

Why do you not come to see me as frequently as before? Do you not know that I have bought a house in the country, and that for (*desde*) the year past we have lived in it? I did not know it; but although you live there you ought not to forget your friends. I do not forget them, but I have no carriage nor horse to (*para*) go to see them. You ought to buy a carriage for your family. As we come to the city only once a year it is not necessary for me to buy it.

How much do you think (to pay) of paying for the piano that you wish to buy? Two hundred dollars. You cannot buy it so cheap unless you buy it in New York. I will buy one which has been used. Though it has been used, if it is good, you cannot buy it for that price (*precio*) here. They say that Miss N. plays very well on the piano; have you heard her? I have heard her, and it appears to me that far from playing well, she plays badly. She knows music very well, and I believe that she ought to play well. Though a person know music well, it is no proof (*prueba*) that he plays well. If you like, we will go to hear her, in order that you may be undeceived (*se desengañe*). She is visiting (*anda visitando*) her friends, and will not be home until it is the hour of dining (*comer*). Are you not going to hear the speech (*discurso*) of Mr. B. to-night? If he makes it in the theatre I shall go.

Charles Fifth, who spoke fluently several European (*Europeo*) languages, said that it was necessary to speak Spanish to the gods, Italian to the ladies (*damas*), French to our friends, German to soldiers, English to geese, Hungarian (*húngaro*) to horses, Bohemian

(*bohemiano*) with the devil (*diablo*). An Irishman who had a looking-glass in his hand, shut his eyes and placed it before his face; another asked him why he did that. Certainly, replied he, it is to see how I am when I sleep.

Voltaire en la *Historia de Carlos XII.* pretende[1] que Leibnitz pensaba y hablaba libremente, y que habia inspirado sus sentimientos líbres á mas de un príncipe. Todo prueba, al contrario,[2] que Leibnitz fué eminentemente[3] religioso. Su metafísica está de tal suerte[4] refundida[5] en su religion que es imposible separarlas. No deja pasar ocasion alguna de prestar homenaje al cristianismo.[6] Pero el pasaje[7] de sus pensamientos[8] que merece nuestra atencion,[9] es aquel en que manifiesta[10] sus temores sobre las consecuencias de las malas doctrinas que veia esparcirse[11] contra la religion. Creia que estas opiniones perniciosas,[12] introduciéndose en los libros á la moda[13] disponian todas las cosas á la revolucion[14] general de que la Europa estaba amenazada, y veia con dolor apagarse[15] los sentimientos de un alma honrada[16] con los de la religion. Tales eran las religiosas alarmas[17] de este gran filósofo. ¿Que debe decirse despues de esto de los que han querido arrebatar[18] al cristianismo un hombre tan cristiano, tan firme en su creencia, tan prudente y moderado en sus opiniones? No es una cosa singular[19] el que en nuestro siglo se hayan complacido[20] en desnaturalizar[21] la doctrina de los grandes hombres del precedente.[22]

1, *Pretender*, to pretend. 2, *Al contrario*, on the contrary. 3, *Eminentemente*, eminently. 4, *De tal suerte*, in such a way. 5, *Refundido*, cast. 6, *Cristianismo*, christianism. 7, *Pasaje*, passage. 8, *Pensamiento*, thought. 9, *Atencion*, attention. 10, *Manifestar*, to manifest. 11, *Esparcirse*, to spread. 12, *Pernicioso*, pernicious. 13, *A la moda*, in fashion, 14, *Revolucion*, revolution. 15, *Apagarse*, to become extinguished. 16, *Honrado*, honorable. 17, *Alarma*, apprehension. 18, *Arrebatar*, to take away. 19, *Singular*, singular. 20, *Complacerse*, to take pleasure in. 21, *Desnaturalizar*, (to disfranchise) to misrepresent. 22, *Precedente*, preceding.

---

88. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA OCTAVA.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

RULE VI. All verbs used interrogatively or negatively take the dependent verb in the subjunctive, when the speaker disbelieves, or is doubtful of what it expresses.

Do you believe that my friend is sick?	¿ Cree V. que mi amigo *esté* enfermo?
Is it not time for him to come?	¿ No es tiempo que él *venga?*
It is not certain that he will do that.	No es cierto que él *haga* eso.
I do not know that he is rich.	No sé que él *sea* rico.

The distinctive character of the subjunctive is seen in the following phrases.

Do you not believe that the child is sick?	¿ No cree V. que el niño *está* enfermo?
Do you not believe that the child is sick?	¿ No cree V. que el niño *esté* enfermo?

The former of these phrases implies that the speaker firmly believes that the child is sick; the latter, that he doubts and inquires. So in the following, the distinction is readily seen.

I do not doubt that he is here.	No dudo que él *está* aquí.
It is not possible that he is here.	No es posible que él *esté* aquí.
He behaves in such a manner as to be loved.	Se porta de manera que *es* amado.
He wishes to behave in such a manner as to be loved.	Quiere portarse de manera que *sea* amado.
He does not believe that there is a God.	No cree que *hay* un Dios.
He does not believe that there are ghosts.	No cree que *haya* aparecidos.*
It is a week since I have seen him.	Hace una semana que no le veo.

REMARK. In sentences like this last, where *que* is equivalent to *since*, *no* is to be used before the following verb, when the sentence can be made negative in English.

It is a year since I have drank wine.	Hace un año que no bebo vino.
It is two hours since I breakfasted.	Hace dos horas que almorzé. †
To behave. In such a manner that.	*Portarse. De manera que.*
Tranquil. He lives tranquil.	*Tranquilo.* El vive tranquilo.
Whoever. Whatever.	*Quienquiera. Cualquiera.*
Whatever thing. Whatever things.	Cualquiera cosa. Cualesquiera cosas.
A *ghost* *To visit.*	Un *aparecido.* *Visitar.*
Do you often visit your neighbors?	¿ Visita V. frecuentemente á sus vecinos?
To hire. The *hire.*	*Alquilar.* El *alquilar.*
To be contented. I am contented.	*Contentarse.* Yo me contento.
A *debt.* He has paid his debts.	Una *deuda.* El ha pagado sus deudas.
It is a month since I have seen you.	Hay un mes que no veo á V.
Whatever fortune he may have, he will be just.	Cualquiera fortuna que él tenga, será justo.

* In all these sentences the learner will observe that where the speaker is positive that what the verb affirms is a fact, he uses the indicative; where he doubts, the subjunctive.

† We can say in English, it is a year that I have not drank wine; but we cannot say, it is two hours that I have not breakfasted; hence, *no* is used in the former sentence, but not in the latter.

Of whomsoever you speak, speak justly.	De quienquiera que V. hable, hable justamente.
Provided he be well he will be contented.	Con tal que esté bueno estará contento.
To fail. Money will not fail you.	*Faltar.* No le faltará á V. dinero.
The *case*, *fact.* A *steam-boat.*	El *caso.* Un *vapor.*
To hope, *to expect.* I expect my friends.	*Esperar.* Espero á mis amigos.
To load. The *hay.*	*Cargar.* El *heno.*
Potatoes. Indian corn.	*Papas. Maíz.*
However poor he may be, he is my friend.	Por mas pobre que él sea, es mi amigo.
They load the steam-boat with hay, potatoes, and Indian corn.	Cargan el vapor de heno, papas, y maíz.
Labor. The labor is finished.	*Trabajo.* El trabajo se acaba.
Frankly. He speaks frankly.	Con franqueza. Habla con franqueza.
A *flatterer.* She has many flatterers.	Un *adulador.* Ella tiene muchos aduladores.
To drown. To be drowned.	*Ahogar. Ahogarse.*
I fear you may be drowned.	Temo que V. se ahogue.
Grant that he do not come, I will go.	Dado caso que él no venga, yo iré.
Whether it be cold or warm.	Sea que haga frio ó calor.

Does that poor man behave in such a way that he has friends? He behaves in such a way that he has many friends. When will you live tranquil? When I pay my debts. That man is good, has he not many friends? Yes, sir; whoever is good will have many friends. Is it not necessary for us always to tell the truth? Yes, sir; whoever may be our enemy, we ought always to tell the truth. Is not Miss B. agreeable? She is very agreeable, for however plain she may be, she is still (*con todo*) very amiable. Does your cousin learn his lessons? Yes, sir; however lazy he may be, he learns his lessons well. Has your friend sold his crop for cash? He has not sold it, and I fear his not selling it, except on credit. Does your sister visit Mrs. T.? She visits many ladies, but I doubt her visiting her. Are you contented with what you have? It is necessary that I content myself. When will you live in the city? When I hire a house. Does your father owe much money? I doubt his owing a dollar to any one.

Good morning, my friend; are you well? it appears to me that it

is a year since I have seen you. Thank God, I am very well. I live now in the country. How will you come to the city when you have something to do? I have a neighbor who has a carriage, and when it is necessary for me to come, I hire it of him (*se lo*). How much do you pay him for the hire? He contents himself with whatever I give him.

As you like oysters do you wish that we go to take some in the bay? As I do not know how to swim, I dare not (*temo*) enter the water for fear of being drowned. Grant that you do not know how to swim, you cannot drown in three feet of water. And if there are no oysters, what shall we do? We will bathe. I always fear to enter into the water whether there be little or much. Does that lazy scholar learn much? No, sir; whatever master he may have, he will never learn his lessons. When will the carpenter finish his labor? Provided he be industrious, he will finish it this week. When do you expect the steam-boat? I expect it this morning, loaded with cotton. Do you say that the poor man has money? I do not say that he has money, for he is very poor. Do you believe that money fails that stranger? I do not believe that money fails him, for he is very rich. Do you say that the merchant expects a steam-boat loaded with Indian corn? I do not doubt that he expects one soon.

Bacon, Descartes, Newton y Leibnitz fueron cristianos; profesaron y amaron la religion; la fé que los animó no deslució[1] en ellos el ingenio. Estos hombres tan superiores á sus contemporáneos[2] no creyeron abatirse[3] creyendo como el vulgo. Tuvieron á honra inclinar la cerviz[4] al yugo[5] del cristianismo, y marchar[6] humildemente[7] por la senda[8] de la revelacion, los mismos que habian abierto tantos nuevos caminos en la carrera[9] de las ciencias. ¿Que nombres opondremos[10] á los de estos? Que espíritus[11] fuertes lucharán[12] contra estos sublimes[13] y dóciles[14] ingenios? Y que será si á tan grandes autoridades se juntan,[15] como ya hemos observado,[16] tantos otros recomendables[17] escritos[18] del mismo tiempo, y particularmente[19] los que ilustraron el reinado[20] de Luis XIV.?

Nada abrevia[21] tanto la vida, y gasta[22] la salud,[23] como el inmoderado[24] uso[25] de los placeres y el regalo.[26] Esto hizo decir á los antiguos que el verdadero medio[27] para vivir sano y largo tiempo, y ser fuerte y robusto, es vivir con régimen,[28] con exacta[29] templanza,[30] apartado[31] de los deleites,[32] ejercitar[33] el cuerpo con moderado trabajo, y tener en todo una vida frugal.[34]

1, ***Deslucir***, to tarnish. 2, ***Contemporáneo***, contemporary. 3, ***Abatirse***, to

humble themselves. 4, *Cerviz*, neck. 5, *Yugo*, yoke. 6, *Marchar*, to go. 7, *Humildemente*, humbly. 8, *Senda*, path. 9, *Carrera*, career. 10, *Oponer*, to oppose. 11, *Espíritu*, spirit. 12, *Luchar*, to struggle. 13, *Sublime*, sublime. 14, *Dócil*, docile. 15, *Juntar*, to join. 16, *Observado*, observed. 17, *Recomendable*, commendable. 18, *Escritos*, writings. 19, *Particularmente*, particularly. 20, *Reinado*, reign. 21, *Abreviar*, to shorten. 22, *Gastar*, to consume. 23, *Salud*, health. 24, *Inmoderato*, immoderate. 25, *Uso*, use. 26, *Regalo*, luxury. 27, *Medio*, means. 28, *Régimen*, self-control. 29, *Exacto*, exact. 30, *Templanza*, temperance. 31, *Apartado*, separated. 32, *Deleite*, pleasure. 33, *Ejercitar*, to exercise. 34, *Frugal*, frugal.

---

89. LECCION OCTOGÉSIMA NONA.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

RULE. The imperative mood in Spanish, has the first person plural, and the third person singular and plural, the same as the subjunctive present. The second person singular is the same as the third person singular of the indicative present, and the second person plural is the same as the infinitive, changing *r* final to *d*; thus,

	IND. PR. 3 S.	SUB. PR. 3 S.	SUB. PR. S. pl.	INF.	SUB. PR. 3 pl.
DAR, to give,	*da*,	*dé*,	*demos*,	*dar*,	*den*.
PRESTAR, to lend,	*presta*,	*preste*,	*prestemos*,	*prestar*,	*presten*.
BEBER, to drink,	*bebe*,	*beba*,	*bebamos*,	*beber*,	*beban*.
ESCRIBIR, to write,	*escribe*,	*escriba*,	*escribamos*,	*escribir*,	*escriban*.

These four verbs, according to the above rule, make the imperative thus:

Da,	dé,	demos,	dad,	den.
Give thou,	*let him give*,	*let us give*,	*give ye*,	*let them give.*
Presta,	preste,	prestemos,	prestad,	presten.
Lend thou,	*let him lend*,	*let us lend*,	*lend ye*,	*let them lend.*
Bebe,	beba,	bebamos,	bebed,	beban.
Drink thou,	*let him drink*,	*let us drink*,	*drink ye*,	*let them drink.*
Escribe,	escriba,	escribamos,	escribid,	escriban.
Write thou,	*let him write*,	*let us write*,	*write ye*,	*let them write.*

In the first person plural, however, *ir*, to go, has *vamos*; and in the second person singular,

Decir, has *di*, say thou.	*Hacer*, *haz*, do thou.	*Ir*, *ve*, go thou.
Poner, " *pon*, put thou.	*Salir*, *sal*, go thou out.	*Venir*, *ven*, come thou.
Tener, " *ten*, have thou	*Ser*, *sé*,* be thou.	

* Compounds, let it be remembered, follow the form of their primitives.

Be thou tranquil. *Let us be* tranquil.	*Está* (tú) tranquilo. *Estemos* tranquilos.
Come here. *Go* there.	*Venga* V. aquí. *Vayan* VV. allá.
Give me the book. Give it to me.	*Déme* el libro. *Démele.*

REMARK 1. The imperative mood, when affirmative, like the infinitive and present participle, takes the objective pronouns after it and united to it as part of the same word, and an accent is placed on the vowel where the stress of voice was before adding the pronoun.

Let us lend him some money.	Prestémosle dinero.
Lend it to him.	Préstesele.
Let him drink the wine.	Beba él el vino.
Let him drink it.	Bébale él.
Let them drink it.	Bébanle ellos.
Write thy letter. Write it.	Escribe tu carta. Escríbela.
Write it to me. Write it to him.	Escríbemela. Escríbesela.
Be good. Let us be good.	Sea V. bueno. Seamos buenos.
Let him come. Let them come.	Venga él. Vengan ellos.
To sit down.	*Sentarse*, (varied as *cerrar*, Les. 38.)
Sit down. To fill.	*Siéntese. Llenar.*
A *misfortune. To relate.*	*Infortunio. Contar*, (as *mover*, Les. 37.)
Let him relate his misfortunes.	Cuente él sus infortunios.
Relate them to us. A *hole.*	Cuéntenoslos. Un *oyo.*
Counsel. Give him advice.	*Consejo.* Déle consejo.
To keep guard. Keep the money.	*Guardar.* Guarde el dinero.
A *towel.* Bring me the towel.	Una *toalla.* Traígame la toalla.
To cook. They cook the vegetables.	*Cocer.* Cuecen los vegetales.

Cuezo,	*cueces,*	*cuece,*	*cocemos,*	*coceis,*	*cuecen.*
I cook,	thou cookest,	he cooks,	we cook,	you cook,	they cook.

A thousand thanks. Happy.	*Mil gracias. Dichoso.*
To divine, guess. Enigma.	*Adivinar. Enigma.*
Unfortunate. Adieu.	*Desgraciado. A Dios.*
Can you guess this enigma?	¿Puede V. adivinar este enigma?
God bless you. To bet.	*Vaya con Dios. Apostar*, (as *mover.*)
He bets a hundred dollars.	Apuesta cien pesos.

REMARK 2. The imperative used negatively may be regarded as the subjunctive present.

Do not give it to me.	No me le dé V.
Do not lend it to him.	No se le preste.
Do not say it.	No lo digas.
Let us not write to him.	No le escribamos á él.

Dear Emanuel (*Manuel*), how have you been since you saw us? I have not been well, because a poor man can never be so. Enter, take a chair and sit down, and relate to us your misfortunes. All

my misfortunes are, that I can never have a shilling. Take my advice, and you will have money. Give it to me, and I will take it. Be not lazy. Labor, and although you may not have money to keep, (there) will not fail you what is necessary (*lo necesario*) to live. The fact is I do not find where to labor. Be in the morning early at (*en*) the wharf; and on a steam-boat which I expect, loaded with cotton, hay, flour, potatoes, and Indian corn, I will give you labor. I will do what you tell me; but, when that labor is finished, what shall I do? Go to see your friends, speak to them frankly, and they will procure (*proporcionarán*) you where to labor. What do you say? Friends! when one is poor he has them not; but, have money, and you will have many flatterers. For the crown (*colmo*) of my misfortunes, sir; I have not to-day even (*ni aun*) a little salt to cook some potatoes, which is what I have eaten for more than a week. Do not grieve (*se aflija*) for that. Take this dollar,—go to the market,—buy a hen, eggs, rice, onions, butter, salt, and some vegetables, and make a good soup. I give you a thousand thanks. God make you and your family as happy as I am unfortunate. Adieu, sir; until to-morrow. God bless you, Emanuel, and do not forget my advice.

Give me thy book. Lend me your knife. Let us drink the sweet wine. Tell me those words. Let us eat these apples. Bring me the towel. Bring it to me. Let him bring it to me. Carry it to him. Carry it to them. Let them bring it to me. Carry it to her. Do not give him the sweet wine. Do not give it to him. Let us not give it to her. Let us not give it to them.

I bet that you do not guess the enigma which I am going to tell. Tell it. Weigh this box, fill it, and after filling it, it will weigh less. With what will you fill it? I can not guess. Do you give it up? (do you give yourself for conquered (*vencido*)? Yes, I give it up (I give myself for conquered). Fill it with holes, and the more (*cuanto mas*) holes it has, the less (*tanto menos*) it will weigh.

Are you acquainted with Mr. B.? Yes, sir; and I know no one who is more learned than his son; there are few persons who are more honorable (*honrado*) than they. Is not the son of your neighbor vicious (*vicioso*)? Yes, sir; he is idle (*ocioso*), and there are very few men who can be idle and innocent (*inocente*) at the same time.

¿ Cual es de todas las cosas del mundo, la mas larga y la mas corta, la mas pronta y la mas lenta, la mas indivisible[1] y la mas extensa,[2] la mas despreciada[3] y la mas llorada,[4] sin la que nada puede hacerse: que devora lo que es pequeño, y vivifica lo que es grande? *El tiempo;* porque nada hay mas largo, puesto[5] que es la medida[6] de la eternidad; nada mas corto, puesto que para todos nuestros proyectos nos falta;[7] nada mas tardo para él que espera; nada mas rápido para él que goza,[8] extiéndese hasta el infinito[9] en grande, y divídese hasta el infinito en pequeño; todos hombres lo desprecian[10] y todos lloran[11] su perdida,[12] sin él nada se hace; él sepulta[13] en el olvido[14] lo que es indigno de la posteridad,[15] é inmortaliza[16] las cosas grandes.

Al principio de una batalla dada por el famoso Gonzalo[17] de Córdoba,[18] á los Franceses en 1503, se voló[19] el almacen de pólvora[20] de los Españoles. Como esta casualidad[21] podia tener funestas[22] resultas,[23] la presencia[24] de ánimo de Gonzalo sacó[25] de ella las mayores ventajas. Animo,[26] dice á sus soldados, la victoria es nuestra, el cielo anuncia por esta estrepitosa[27] señal,[28] que no necesitamos ya de artilleria.[29] Este breve[30] discurso[31] fortaleció[32] de tal manera á la tropa,[33] que consiguieron[34] una completa[35] victoria.

1, ***Indivisible***, indivisible. 2, ***Extenso***, extensive. 3, ***Despreciado***, despised. 4, ***Llorado***, lamented. 5, ***Puesto***, because. 6, ***Medida***, measure. 7, ***Faltar***, to fail. 8, ***Gozar***, to enjoy. 9, ***Infinito***, infinite. 10, ***Despreciar***, to despise. 11, ***Llorar***, to weep. 12, ***Pérdida***, loss. 13, ***Sepultar***, to bury. 14, ***Olvido***, oblivion. 15, ***Posteridad***, posterity. 16, ***Inmortalizar***, to immortalize. 17, ***Gonzalo***, Gonsalvo. 18, ***Córdoba***, Cordova. 19, ***Volarse***, to blow up. 20, ***Pólvora***, gunpowder. 21, ***Casualidad***, accident. 22, ***Funesto***, mournful. 23, ***Resulta***, result. 24, ***Presencia***, presence. 25, ***Sacar***, to draw. 26, ***Animo***, courage. 27, ***Estrepitoso***, noisy. 28, ***Señal***, token. 29, ***Artillería***, artillery. 30, ***Breve***, brief. 31, ***Discurso***, speech. 32, ***Fortalecer***, to fortify. 33, ***Tropa***, troop. 34, ***Conseguir***, to obtain. 35, ***Completo***, complete.

---

90. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA

PERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

RULE I. The perfect of the subjunctive is formed by annexing the past participle to the present subjunctive of the auxiliary; thus,

THE PERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE OF SER AND ESTAR; is

Yo haya sido or *estado*, I may have been,	*Nosotros hayamos,*	We may have been.
Tú hayas sido or *estado*, thou mayest have been,	*Vosotros hayais,*	You may have been.
El haya sido or *estado*, he may have been,	*Ellos hayan,*	They may have been.

sido or *estado.*

So *llamar*, to call, and *tener* to have, make the perfect subjunctive as follows.

Yo haya llamado,	I may have called,	*Nosotros hayamos,*	We may have called.
Tú hayas llamado,	thou mayest have called,	*Vosotros hayais,*	You may have called.
El haya llamado,	he may have called,	*Ellos hayan,*	They may have called
Yo haya tenido,	I may have had,	*Nosotros hayamos,*	We may have had.
Tú hayas tenido,	thou mayest have had,	*Vosotros hayais,*	You may have had.
El haya tenido,	he may have had,	*Ellos hayan,*	They may have had.

llamado. *tenido.*

I fear that he has not been well.	Temo que él no *haya estado* bueno.
He doubts our having been to school.	El duda que *hayamos estado* en la escuela.

RULE II. When the time of the governing clause is present or future, the present subjunctive is used to denote a time which is present or future to it, and the perfect to denote a time which is past.

I doubt whether he is coming here.	Dudo que él *venga* aquí.
I shall doubt his coming here.	Dudaré que él *venga* aquí.
I doubt whether he has come.	Dudo que él *haya venido.*
I shall doubt his having come.	Dudaré que el *haya venido.**
I shall not see him though he come.	No le veré aunque *venga.*
I shall not see him though he may have come.	No le veré aunque *haya venido.*
Provided he be industrious reward him.	Con tal que él *sea* industrioso recompénsele V.
Provided he has been industrious reward him.	Con tal que él *haya sido* industrioso recompénsele V.
Do you say that he is happy?	¿ Dice V. que él *sea* dichoso ?
Do you say that he has been happy?	¿ Dice V. que él *haya sido* dichoso ?
He does not say that we are unfortunate.	El no dice que nosotros *seamos* desgraciados.
He does not say that we have been unfortunate.	El no dice que nosotros *hayamos sido* desgraciados.
To *recompense, reward.* *To awake.*	*Recompensar.* *Despertar,* (varied as *cerrar,* Les. 38.)
I awoke at five this morning.	Desperté á las cinco esta mañana.
An *orphan.* The *asylum.*	Un *huérfano.* El *asilo.*
There are a hundred orphans in that asylum.	Hay cien huérfanos en ese asilo.
Adversity, mishap. A *fish-hook.*	*Contratiempo.* Un *anzuelo.*

* In all four of these phrases the first verb is present or future; while in the first two, the second verb denotes a time present or future to it, and is, therefore, in the present subjunctive; in the last two, it denotes a time past to it, and is in the perfect subjunctive.

Good evening, William.	*Buenas tardes, Guillermo.*
A *musketo.* *Still, quiet.*	Un *mosquito.* *Parado, quieto.*
To invite. He invites us.	*Convidar.* El nos convida.
To supplicate, request. An *instrument.*	*Suplicar.* Un *instrumento.*
A *violin.* A *flute.*	Un *violin.* Una *flauta.*
To dance. *After.*	*Bailar.* *Desde que.*
I play on the violin, he plays on the flute, and they dance.	Yo toco el violin, él toca la flauta, y ellos bailan.
Besides. *Virtuous.*	*A mas de.* *Virtuoso.*
Besides being learned he is virtuous.	A mas de ser docto es virtuoso.
Then, in that case. Then you speak French.	*Entónces.* Entónces V. habla el Frances.

Good morning, Lewis. Good morning, William. How have you passed the night? Very well, after I lay down, I did not awake until this morning. Where were you on Saturday? I went to fish at the bay with the orphans of the asylum; and never in my life have I suffered so much. It appears that all the mishaps came together. When we arrived it began to rain; we lost the fish-hooks, and there were so many musketoes, that it was not possible to be quiet nor seated. It was necessary to be always walking. In what way do you think of passing the day to-morrow? I am going to tell you. Miss T. has invited several friends of hers to pass the day at her country-house. She has invited me also, and at the same time has requested (*suplicado*) that I should bring a friend who plays some instrument; I will carry my violin, you will carry your flute, she will sing, and the other young ladies will dance, and in this way we will pass the day, playing, singing, and dancing. Oh! it already seems to me that we are there. I desire that it may not rain, and that we may have no mishap.

Have you sold your cotton of this year? Not yet. When will you sell it? I shall sell it next week. You have better luck (*mas fortuna*) than we. We are never able to sell our crop, but after others have sold theirs. Have you already dined? I have no apetite, for since I breakfasted I have been eating fruit. Will you do us the favor (*el favor*) of staying to dine with us? I cannot stay to-day. Will you take a glass of beer? I never take beer, I will

rather (*mas bien*) take a glass of wine, if you give it to me. I will give you one on condition (*con la condicion*) that in drinking it you tell me (*me ha de decir*) frankly, if you have drunk other wine better. When I drink it, I will give you my opinion with respect to its quality (*cualidad.*)

Whoever has spoken a single (*sola*) time with Mr. C. will know that besides being wise he is virtuous; are you acquainted with him? I am acquainted with him, but I do not remember where I became acquainted with him. Perhaps you have known him in Washington. I have never been in that place. Then (*entónces*) I do not doubt that you have been acquainted with him in this city. Certainly (*ciertamente*), now I remember. At what o'clock does the steam-boat depart (*sale*) for New York? At half-past two. Do you believe that it will be late to carry letters after we have dined? I believe so; it is already more than two, from here to the wharf, it is (*hay*) little less than a mile. A Russian (*ruso*) countryman who had never seen asses (*burros,*) seeing some in France, said; "Good heavens (*Dios mio!*) what large hares there are in this country.

La mañana del 23 de Junio de 1845 amaneció[1] clara[2] y serena.[3] Mansas y tranquilas corrian las aguas del Potomac, y el vapor Jorge Washington se separaba[4] lentamente[5] del extremo del ferro-carril[6] de Petersburg. La vista del rio era pintoresca[7] y variada.[8] Por do quiera[9] veíanse[10] cruzar[11] las pequeñas embarcaciones[12] de los pescadores, y sobre ambas riberas[13] se divisaban[14] los extensos saladeros[15] donde centenares[16] de hombres se ocupaban en sus faenas,[17] preparándose para embarrillar[18] la pesca de sus compañeros.

Mas todo esto no era suficiente[19] para distraerme,[20] por un minuto entero de la idea principal que ocupaba mi mente.[21] Desde mis primeros años habia leido la vida do Jorge Washington, y ya que[22] no podia conocerle, al ménos ansiaba[23] ver el lugar donde él habia vivido, y donde reposaban sus restos mortales. Impaciente,[24] dirigia[25] á cada instante mi anteojo de larga vista[26] hácia la márgen izquierda del rio, buscando ansiosamente[27] un objeto que debia distinguirse[28] á algunas leguas de distancia.[29] Mis ojos buscaban á Mount Vernon, el punto donde vivió, y donde yace[30] sepultado el hombre mas digno de admiracion que ha producido la América.

Tal era mi impaciencia,[31] que á cada instante preguntaba á un anciano residente[32] sobre el márgen del rio que navegábamos,[33] si tardaria[34] mucho en verse. Con algun desconsuelo[35] supe que debiamos[36] aun tardar algunas horas.

1, *Amanecer*, to dawn. 2, *Claro*, clear. 3, *Sereno*, serene. 4, *Separarse*,

(to separate itself) to depart. 5, *Lentamente*, slowly. 6, *Ferro-carril*, railroad. 7, *Pintoresco*, picturesque. 8, *Variado*, varied. 9, *Por do quiera*, everywhere. 10, *Verse*, to be seen. 11, *Cruzar*, to cross. 12, *Embarcacion*, boat. 13, *Ribera*, bank. 14, *Divisarse*, to be seen. 15, *Saladero*, salting-place. 16, *Centenares*, hundreds. 17, *Faena*, work. 18, *Embarrillar*, to barrel. 19, *Suficiente*, sufficient. 20, *Distraerme*, to draw off my attention. 21, *Mente*, mind. 22, *Ya que*, (since that) as. 23, *Ansiar*, to be anxious. 24, *Impaciente*, impatient. 25, *Dirigir*, to direct. 26, *Anteojo de larga vista*, telescope. 27, *Ansiosamente*, anxiously. 28, *Distinguirse*, to be distinguished. 29, *Distancia*, distance. 30, *Yacer*, to lie. 31, *Impaciencia*, impatience. 32, *Residente*, resident. 33, *Navegar*, to navigate. 34, *Tardaria*, (imperfect subj.) (*it would delay*,) it would be long before it would be seen. 35, *Desconsuelo*, chagrin. 36, *Debemos aun tardar*, we were still to wait.

---

91. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA PRIMA.

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT.

THE IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE has three forms, the first ending in *ra*, the second in *ria*, and the third in *se*. The *first* and *third* are formed from the third person plural of the past definite, by changing RON final for the first form into

	RA,	RAS,	RA,	RAMOS,	RAIS,	RAN.
and for the third form, into	SE,	SES,	SE,	SEMOS,	SEIS,	SEN.

The *second* is formed from the first person singular of the future by changing *é* final into

IA,	IAS,	IA,	IAMOS,	IAIS,	IAN.

Thus, *haber*, to have, past definite third person plural *hubieron*, future first person singular *habré*, changing *ron*, and *é* final as above, makes

1.	*Hubiera*, I should have,	*hubieras*, thou shouldst have,	*hubiera*, he should have,
	hubiéramos, we should have,	*hubiérais*, you should have,	*hubieran*, they should have.
2	*Habria*, I would have,	*habrias*, thou wouldst have,	*habria*, he would have,
	habriamos, we would have,	*habriais*, you would have,	*habrian*, they would have.
3.	*Hubiese*, I should have,	*hubieses*, thou shouldst have,	*hubiese*, he should have,
	hubiésemos, we should have,	*hubiéseis*, you should have,	*hubiesen*, they should have.

So *ser*, to be, from *fueron* and *seré*, makes this tense as follows,

1.	2.	3.	1.	2	3.
Yo fuera,	*seria*,	*fuese*.	*Nosotros fuéramos*,	*seriamos*,	*fuésemos*.
Tú fueras,	*serias*,	*fueses*.	*Vosotros fuerais*,	*seriais*,	*fueseis*.
El fuera,	*seria*,	*fuese*.	*Ellos fueran*,	*serian*,	*fuesen*.

Estar, to be, from *estuvieron* and *estaré* makes

1.	2.	3.	1.	2	3.
Yo estuviera,	*estaria,*	*estuviese.*	*Nosotros estuviéramos*	*estariamos,*	*estuviésemos.*
Tú estuvieras,	*estarias,*	*estuvieses.*	*Vosotros estuvierais,*	*estariais,*	*estuvieseis.*
El estuviera,	*estaria,*	*estuviese.*	*Ellos estuvieran,*	*estarian,*	*estuviesen.*

Ir, to go, from *fueron* and *iré*, makes

1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
Yo fuera.	*iria,*	*fuese.*	*Nosotros fuéramos,*	*iriamos,*	*fuésemos.*
Tú fueras,	*irias,*	*fueses*	*Vosotros fuerais,*	*iriais,*	*fueseis.*
El fuera,	*iria,*	*fuese.*	*Ellos fueran,*	*irian,*	*fuesen.*

Prestar, to lend, from *prestaron* and *prestaré*, makes

1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
Yo prestara,	*prestaria,*	*prestase.*	*Nosotros prestáramos,*	*prestariamos,*	*prestásemos.*
Tú prestaras,	*prestarias,*	*prestases.*	*Vosotros prestarais,*	*prestariais,*	*prestaseis.*
El prestara,	*prestaria,*	*prestase.*	*Ellos prestaran,*	*prestarian,*	*prestasen.*

RULE. When the time of the governing clause is past, the first or third form of this tense is used; as the present subjunctive is used when the time of the governing clause is present; that is, to denote a time which is either present or future to it.

Do you doubt that he is sick? Do you doubt that he will be sick?	¿ Duda V. que él esté enfermo?
Did you doubt that he was sick? Did you doubt that he would be sick?	¿ *Dudaba* V. que él *estuviera* (or *estuviese*) enfermo? *
He wishes his son to be learned.	El quiere que su hijo sea docto.
He wished his son to be learned.	El *queria* que su hijo *fuera* or *fuese* docto.*
Did your father approve of your going to the theatre?	¿ *Aprobaba* su padre de VV. que *fueran* (or *fuesen*) al teatro?
He approved of our going to the theatre, but he did not approve of our lending our money.	*Aprobaba* que *fuéramos* (or *fuésemos*) al teatro, pero no *aprobaba* que *prestáramos* (or *prestásemos*) nuestro dinero.
When you learned Spanish was it necessary for you to study much?	¿ Cuando aprendian VV. español *era* menester que *estudiaran* mucho?
It was necessary for us to study very much.	*Era* menester que *estudiásemos* muchísimo.
One's own. One's own house.	*Propio.* Casa propia.
To deceive. To be deceived.	*Engañar. Engañarse.*

* In these sentences, as also in those that follow, we perceive that when the governing verb is past, the dependent verb is subjunctive imperfect to denote a time present or future to it.

Did you think that he was deceived?	¿ *Pensaba* V. que él se *engañara?*
I did not think that he was deceived.	Yo no *pensaba* que se *engañase.*
I did not believe that you were more than thirty years old.	Yo no creia que V. *tuviese* mas de treinta años.
Native. His native language.	*Nativo.* Su lengua nativa.
A *colonel.* *Artillery.*	Un *coronel.* *Artilleria.*
Memory. To know by heart.	*Memoria.* *Saber de memoria.*
He has told me to learn it by heart.	El me ha dicho que lo aprendiera de memoria.
With fluency. He speaks English fluently.	*Con fluidez.* El habla ingles con fluidez.
Fine looking. *Undoubtedly.*	*Galan.* *Sin duda.*
Talent, talents. *Doubt.*	*Talento.* *Duda.*

Have you received a letter from your father? I received one this morning. What has he written you? He has written me to study much, and to learn the ancient and modern languages. What has the master told you? He told us to learn our lessons well, and to write our exercises (*ejercicios*). Did he say that we should learn these exercises? He said that we should write them and know them by heart. What did your neighbor wish this morning? He wished me to lend him some money. Did you lend him some? No, sir; I was afraid that he would not pay it to me. What did the master command the servants to do? He commanded John to take care of his horse, and William to go to the store. Did your father approve of your playing all the morning? No, sir; he wished us to go to school and learn our lessons.

Who is that gentleman? He is a French gentleman. I took (*tenia*) him for a Spaniard (*por español*). You were deceived. Where does he live? He lives in Canal street. Has he a house of his own? No; he lives in a hired (*alquilado*) room, in the house of Mr B. How old is he? About (*como*) thirty years. I did not believe him to be so old (*de tanta edad*). He seems (*parece*) a youth of twenty years. Is he married? No; he is a bachelor. Are his father and mother still living? His father is living, but his mother died three years ago. Has he brothers? He has two brothers and one sister. Is his sister married? No; but she is going to marry. To (*con*) whom? To Mr. N., a colonel of artillery. Have you known him

long? About four years. Where did you know him? I knew him in Havana, in the house of the marquis (*marques*) of C. Has he lived many years in Cuba? More than ten years. Then he ought to speak Spanish. He speaks Spanish and English with as much fluency as his native language. He appears to me very fine looking. Undoubtedly, he is very fine looking; and besides that, he has much talent.

What was it necessary for you to do when you went to school? It was necessary for me to go to bed at nine, and to rise at five, to study all day, and to learn many lessons by heart. An Englishman, on his first visit to France, met (*encontró*) in the streets of Calais, a little child that spoke the French language fluently: "Good heavens!" exclaimed he, "is it possible, that even the little children here speak French fluently!"

El sol iba inclinándose pausadamente,[1] hácia el ocaso,[2] cuando el anciano[3] me advirtió[4] que podria distinguir[5] los árboles que cubren al Mount Vernon. Desde este momento no separé de allí mi vista, y cuando la proximidad[6] me permitió[7] distinguir aquel lugar sin necesidad del anteojo,[8] lo contemplé[9] extaciado,[10] sumido[11] en un estraño estupor.[12] De pronto[13] se fijaron[14] mis ojos sobre las elevadas copas[15] de las verdes árboles, y me parecia distinguir, entre sus ramas, delineada[16] la figura de Washington, con los brazos cruzados y la cabeza descubierta.[17] La semejanza[18] de esta idea con una representacion de Napoleon en Santa Elena,[19] me causó algun disgusto,[20] y bajé[21] la vista hácia la habitacion[22] que se distinguia[23] al traves de[24] los árboles. "Allí!" exclamé,[25] allí vivió ese hombre que dió ser á esta nacion: allí yacen sepultados tambien sus restos mortales!

Al dia siguiente me hallaba al lado de un sepulcro humilde de ladrillos. Una verja[26] de madera,[27] medio derribada[28] circundaba[29] aquella tumba[30] sencilla.[31] Todo en derredor[32] respiraba tristeza[33] y desconsuelo, pero el aire me parecia animado por un eco[34] débil que murmuraba[35] en tonos[36] apagados: "¡Este es el último recinto[37] del inmortal Washington!"

1, ***Pausadamente***, slowly. 2, ***Ocaso***, west. 3, ***Anciano***, old man. 4, ***Advertir***, to notify. 5, ***Distinguir***, to distinguish. 6, ***Proximidad***, proximity. 7, ***Permitir***, to permit. 8, ***Anteojo***, spy-glass. 9, ***Contemplar***, to contemplate. 10, ***Extaciado***, in ecstacy. 11, ***Sumido***, sunk. 12, ***Estupor***, (stupor) admiration. 13, ***De pronto***, quickly. 14, ***Fijar***, to fix. 15, ***Copa***, canopy. 16, ***Delineada***, delineated. 17, ***Descubierto***, uncovered. 18, ***Semejanza***, resemblance. 19, ***Santa Elena***, Saint Helena. 20, ***Disgusto***, displeasure. 21, ***Bajar***, (to lower) turn. 22, ***Habitacion***, dwelling. 23, ***Distinguirse***, to be distinguished. 24, ***Al traves de***, across. 25, ***Exclamar***, to exclaim. 26,

Verja, railing. 27, *Madera*, wood. 28, *Derribar*, to throw down. 29, *Circundar*, to surround. 30, *Tumba*, tomb. 31, *Sencillo*, simple. 32, *En derredor*, around. 33, *Tristeza*, sadness. 34, *Eco*, echo. 35, *Murmurar*, to murmur. 36, *Tono*, tone. 37, *Recinto*, precinct.

---

92. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA SEGUNDA.

SUBJUNCTIVE IMPERFECT.

An *education*. *To converse, associate with.*	Una *educacion*. *Tratar.*
Brilliant. *Instructed.*	*Brillante*. *Instruido.*
Mathematician. *To draw.*	*Matemático*. *Dibujar.*
Perfectly. She draws perfectly.	*Perfectamente*. Ella dibuja perfectamente.
Sociable. A *portrait*.	*Sociable*. Un *retrato*.
Quality. *To be on friendly terms.*	*Cualidad*. *Tener amistad.*
To introduce. *To be obliged.*	*Presentar*. *Agradecer*, (as *conocer*, Les. 39.)
I will be obliged to you for it.	Yo se lo agradeceré á V.

REMARK 1. *Mismo* is added to nouns and pronouns in Spanish, like *self* in English.

I myself, thou thyself, he himself.	*Yo mismo, tú mismo, él mismo.*

REMARK 2. The personal pronoun in English repeated at the end of the clause with *self* is expressed in Spanish by *mismo* only, after the pronoun.

Who has done that?	¿ Quien ha hecho aquello?
I have done it *myself*.	Yo *mismo* lo he hecho.
She has done it *herself*.	Ella *misma* lo ha hecho.
They have done it *themselves*.	Ellos *mismos* lo han hecho.
He sends it *himself*. *Certainly.*	Lo manda él *mismo*. *Ciertamente.*
To go for. *To come for.*	*Ir á buscar*. *Venir á buscar.*
He has gone for his hat.	El ha ido á buscar su sombrero.
I have come for money.	Yo he venido á buscar dinero.
The servants have gone for water.	Los criados han ido á buscar agua.
I wish you to go for a physician.	Quiero que V. vaya á buscar un médico.
To rob, steal. *To set sail.*	*Robar*. *Hacerse á la vela.*
The *schooner* has set sail.	La *goleta* se ha hecho á la vela.
A *drawer*. *Bureau-drawer.*	Una *gaveta*. La *gaveta de una cómoda.*
A *vessel*. A *steam-vessel.*	Un *buque*. Un *buque de vapor.*
To take care of. He takes care of the sick.	*Cuidar*. El cuida los enfermos.

A *brig*. A brig of war.	Un *bergantin*. Un bergantin de guerra.
How do you like this city?	*¿ Que tal* le gusta á V. esta ciudad?
A *difficulty*. A *grammar*.	Una *dificultad*. Una *gramática*.
There are many difficulties in this grammar.	Hay muchas dificultades en esta gramática.
A *rule*. An *example*.	Una *regla*. Un *ejemplo*.
Clear. *Dialogue*.	*Claro*. *Diálogo*.
Familiar. A familiar dialogue.	*Familiar*. Un diálogo familiar.

Has the Spaniard a good education? Yes, sir; he has had a brilliant education; he is very much instructed in ancient and modern history, is a good mathematician, plays several instruments, draws perfectly, and is so sociable, that all who converse with him once, desire his company. You make me so excellent a portrait of his qualities that I desire to be on friendly terms with him. If you desire it, we will go to-morrow to visit him, and I will introduce you to him. I shall be much obliged to you for it. What did your father desire for you when you were young? He desired that I should have much talent, and a brilliant education, that I should be a good mathematician, that I should draw perfectly, and that I should speak several modern languages fluently.

To whomsoever you have lent my inkstand, tell him to send it to me, or to bring it himself. I myself have been twice for it, and he is not willing to give it to me. Perhaps he has broken it. And who has taken the gold pen that was in the bureau-drawer? I fear that the boys who were here this morning have stolen it (from it.) You must not permit any person whatever to enter into my room, when I am not in it, although it may be a person whom you know well.

Dear Margaret (*Margarita*), I rejoice much to (*de*) see you as well and as pretty as ever. And I also rejoice to see you, as good-looking, and in as good humor as is your custom (*acostumbra*). When did you arrive here? I arrived here four days ago. Did you come in the steam-boat California? No, sir; my father permitted neither my brother nor me to come in a steam-vessel, but to come in a Spanish brig of war. And how do you like Havana (*la Habana*) and its inhabitants (*habitantes*)? I like them much. Are there

many difficulties in this grammar? No, sir; because the rules and the examples are clear, and the dialogues are easy and familiar.

Do you wish your son to learn Spanish? I did wish him to learn it, but now he has not time. Do you approve of my going to the theatre? I approve of your going there to-night; but, I do not approve of your having gone every night the week past. Is it necessary for us to take care of that poor man? It was necessary for us to take care of him last night, because he was sick, but now he is well. Has that lazy scholar learned his lesson? No, sir; it is impossible for him to have learned it, because he has not studied it. Is it important for you to go to the city to-day? No, sir; but it was important for me to go to the country yesterday.

Acababan de rescatar[1] algunos esclavos[2] cristianos en Argel.[3] En el momento que estaban para partir, arribó[4] un corsario[5] al puerto con una presa[6] Sueca.[7] Entre el número de prisioneros[8] se hallaba[9] el padre de uno de los cautivos[10] rescatados,[11] se conocieron y voláron[12] el uno á los brazos del otro bañados[13] los ojos en lágrimas. El jóven compadecido[14] de la desgracia de su padre, que ya era viejo, y á quien la esclavitud seguramente[15] abreviaria los dias, rogó á los Argelinos[16] que le permitiesen tomar el lugar de su padre. "Yo soy mas robusto,", añadió,[17] "y mas propio para los trabajos que se exigen[18] de los esclavos." Consintieron[19] en ello. Pero habiendo sabido el Bey esta buena accion, no quiso que este hijo generoso[20] quedase[21] entre cadenas, y ordenó[22] que se le diese libertad, y le enviasen con su padre.

Un oráculo[23] mandó á Alejandro[24] el Grande que sacrificase lo primero que encontrase al salir[25] de la ciudad; y lo primero que encontró fué un pobre hombre montado[26] en su burro.[27] Mandó Alejandro detenerle. Preguntó el buen hombre, ¿por que causa, le detenian? Instruyéronle del oráculo. "Entónces, señor," dijo el paisano, "no soy yo á quien se busca, sinó mi burro." Esta injeniosa[28] reflexion le valió[29] la vida, y sacrificaron el asno.

Viajaban juntos por casualidad un marinero y un comerciante. Este preguntó á aquel. ¿Donde murió tu padre? En el mar, respondió. ¿Y tu abuelo y bisabuelo?[30] En el mar, tambien. Y sabiendo esto, ¿es posible que tengas valor para embarcarte?[31] Calló el marinero, y satisfizo al mercader diciéndole que no tenia otro modo de vivir. Pasado un rato[32] preguntó el marinero al comerciante: "¿Ha muerto tu padre? Si. ¿Y donde falleció?[33] En su cama. ¿Y tu abuelo? Tambien en su cama. Y, ¿es posible, Señor, que con ese desengaño[34] tengas aliento[35] para ir á la cama? La muerte es inevitable[36] y cierta en todas partes.

1, *Rescatar*, to ransom, (*acababan de rescatar*, they had just ransomed.) 2,

Esclavo, slave. 3, *Argel*, Algiers. 4, *Arribar*, to put into. 5, *Corsario*, corsair. 6, *Presa*, prize. 7, *Sueco*, Swedish. 8, *Prisionero*, prisoner. 9, *Se hallaba*, was. 10, *Cautivo*, captive. 11, *Rescatado*, ransomed. 12, *Volar*, to fly. 13, *Bañado*, bathed. 14, *Compadecido*, touched with compassion. 15, *Seguramente*, surely. 16, *Argelino*, Algerine. 17, *Añadir*, to add. 18, *Exigir*, to demand. 19, *Consentir*, to consent. 20, *Generoso*, generous. 21, *Quedar*, to remain. 22, *Ordenar*, to order. 23, *Oráculo*, oracle. 24, *Alejandro*, Alexander. 25, *Al salir*, on going out. 26, *Montado*, mounted. 27, *Burro*, ass. 28, *Injenioso*, ingenious. 29, *Valer*, to save. 30, *Bisabuelo*, great-grandfather. 31, *Embarcarse*, to embark. 32, *Rato*, a season. 33, *Fallecer*, to die. 34, *Desengaño*, warning. 35, *Aliento*, spirit. 36, *Inevitable*, inevitable.

---

93. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA TERCIA.

CONDITIONAL.

The first and second forms of the imperfect subjunctive, (those in *ra* and *ria*), are also used in conditional phrases, corresponding to the verb with *should* or *would* in English, and are therefore, sometimes called IMPERFECT CONDITIONALS. These forms are generally preceded or followed in English by *if* with a verb in the imperfect tense, as: *If* I *had* books I *would read*. Si yo *tuviera* or *tuviese* libros *leeria*; or, I *would read if* I *had* books, Yo *leeria* si *tuviese* or *tuviera* libros. In sentences of this kind, the verb accompanying the conjunction *si*, in Spanish is of the first (*ra*) or the third (*se*) form of this tense; and the one expressed by *should* or *would*, as said above, of the first or second.

To travel.	*To go away.*	*Viajar.*	*Irse.*		
If I had money I would travel.	Si yo	tuviera,[1] or tuviese,[2]	dinero	viajaria,[2] or viajara.[1]	
I would travel if I had money.	Yo	viajara,[1] or viajaria,[2]	si	tuviera,[1] or tuviese,[2]	dinero.
If he studied much, he would learn.	Si el	estudiara,[1] or estudiase,[2]	mucho	aprendiera,[1] or aprenderia.[2]	
He would learn if he studied much.	El	aprenderia,[1] or aprendiera,[2]	si	estudiara,[1] or estudiase,[2]	mucho.
If they had bread they would eat.	Si ellos	tuvieran,[1] or tuviesen,[2]	pan	comieran,[1] or comerian.[2]	
They would eat if they had bread.	Ellos	comieran, or comerian,	si	tuviesen, or tuvieran,	pan.

These examples show that either clause may be placed first, and that the verb accompanying the conjunction may be either of the first or third form, and the other of the first or second. Either of the above sentences, therefore, may be expressed in four different ways. It will be understood that all phrases of this kind may be varied in the same manner, although for brevity but one form will hereafter be given.

Charitable. The *entrance, admission.* *Caritativo.* La *entrada.*

If they were rich they would be charitable. *Si fueran*[1] ricos *serian*[2] caritativos.

Would you drink if you had wine?	¿ *Beberian*[2] VV. *si tuviesen*[3] vino
We would drink if we had water.	*Beberíamos*[2] *si tuviésemos*[3] agua.
If he was rich he would marry.	*Si* él *fuera*[1] rico *se casaria.*[2]
If they saw it they would buy it.	Si ellos lo *viesen*[3] lo *comprarian.*[2]

REMARK 1. Several other expressions in English are equivalent to the imperfect as used above. In the last phrase, for instance, we might say, *if they should see it, if they could see it, did they see it, were they to see it, etc.* These are of course to be translated into Spanish in the same way as the imperfect.

If he should come they would go away.	Si él *viniese*[3] ellos se *irian.*[2]
If he were here he would go with us.	Si él *estuviera*[1] aquí *iria*[2] con nosotros.
Had I money I would buy it.	Si yo *tuviese*[3] dinero lo *compraria.*[2]

REMARK 2. Other conjunctions implying a condition, such as *aunque, bien que, dado que,* are used with this tense like *si.*

Although he were sick he would come.	*Aun cuando estuviera*[1] enfermo *vendria.*[2]
Though he might be poor he would be happy.	*Aunque* él *fuese*[3] pobre *seria*[2] feliz.
Granting that he should study he would not learn.	*Dado que* él *estudiara*[1] no *aprenderia.*[2]

REMARK 3. The first and second forms of this tense are also sometimes used without the conjunction and its accompanying verb, leaving the phrase as it were unfinished.

He would wish to be rich.*	El querria ser rico.
Which of these would you prefer?	¿ Cual de estos preferiria V.?
I should desire to be wise.	Yo desearia ser sabio.

REMARK 4. After relatives of exclamation the first form is preferred to the second.

Who would believe that?	¿ Quien creyera eso?
Who would be such a philosopher?	¿ Quien fuera tan filósofo?

REMARK 5. We have seen in the preceding lesson that the imperfect of the subjunctive is used when the tense of the governing clause is past. It is also used after the conditional. i. e., the first and third forms of this tense are used after the second, as after clauses of past time.

He would wish his son to study.	El *querria*[2] que su hijo *estudiase.*[3]
I should approve of your traveling.	Yo *aprobaria*[2] que V. *viajase.*[3]
He would fear that we should be sick.	El *temeria*[2] que *estuviéramos*[1] enfermos.
We should regret your going away.	Nosotros *sentiríamos*[2] que VV. se fuesen.[3]
Would you be willing to pay my admission to the theatre?	¿ Querria V. pagar mi entrada en el teatro?
A *miser*. That miser is very rich.	Un *avaro*. Ese avaro es muy rico.
Separation. To establish.	*Separacion. Establecer,* (as *conocer,* Les. 39.)
An *instructor*. A *profession*.	Un *instructor*. Una *profesion*.
Similar. Conversation. A *favor*.	*Semejante. Conversacion.* Un *favor*.

* These sentences might be completed thus, *He would wish to be rich* (*if he could*); *which of these would you prefer if you could choose? etc.*, making conditional sentences of complete form.

To converse. To take an airing.	*Conversar. Pasearse.*
I take a ride in a carriage.	Yo me paseo en carruaje.
I take a walk.	Yo me paseo á pié.
He takes a ride on horseback.	El se pasea á caballo.

Æmilius (*Emilio*), do you wish that we go to the theatre to-night? I would go if I had money to pay the admission; but I have not a shilling. And if I should lend you money to pay it would you go? I would go, if after the theatre we should go to the ball. If Miss D. and Miss P. should be at the ball, with which of the two would you wish to dance? I should wish to dance with both. Would you drink a glass of beer now? If I had it I would drink it; but, I would eat nothing, however hungry (*por mucha hambre que*) I might be. If we were as rich as the miser who died last night, what should we do with so much money? We would do many things. We would be charitable to (*con*) the poor; we would clothe them; we would give them food (*que comer*); we would take care of them when they should be sick; and we would be a father for the orphans. There is much dust in the street; would you not rejoice if it should rain? I should rejoice that it should rain, although there were no dust, because I should gather many flowers in my garden.

Your father and your mother would regret much that you should separate yourselves from them, would they not (*no es así*)? It is very natural that parents and children should feel much the separation. Would you not rejoice that they should come to establish themselves in Cuba? I should rejoice much, for I like Havana and its inhabitants; but, I should like them more if I knew how to speak Spanish. If you would promise to study, I myself would give you lessons, and in less than six months you would learn it. I should be very happy, if I had an instructor like you; but, the difficulty would be to find a good grammar. Which appears to you the best? If my profession were to teach the Spanish language, I would use no other grammar than that of Mr. P. His rules are only the necessary ones, his examples very clear, and his dialogues are the most familiar, and those used in conversation; so that (*de suerte que*) learning them by heart, in a little time you would be a little Spanish lady (*Españolita*). Ah, if you should instruct me, with what could I pay you a

similar favor? Margaret, the pleasure which it would afford (*proporcionaria*) me to converse with you, would be for me the greatest pay (*paga*) that you could give me.

If you had money where would you establish yourself? I would establish myself in Havana, because the island is beautiful, and the inhabitants sociable and well instructed. Would the colonel be happy if he were rich? No, sir; although he might be rich he would be unhappy, and although that captain of artillery might be poor, he would be happy. Would you wish to be in the country next month? I would wish to be there now. What would you do in the country? I would take a ride on horseback every morning, and a ride in a carriage every evening. Would you not sometimes take a walk? No, sir; I never take a walk in the country. Who would go to pass the summer in that place!

Todo en derredor respiraba tristeza y desconsuelo, pero el aire me parecia animado por un eco débil que murmuraba en tonos apagados: "¡Este es el último recinto del inmortal Washington!" Y en efecto,[1] allí, junto[2] á mis plantas,[3] bajo[4] aquel monton[5] de ladrillos colocados sin artificio, destituidos[6] de lujosos[7] mármoles y doradas inscripciones,[8]—allí yacia lo que quedaba en la tierra del héroe ilustre. Pero su memoria vive y vivirá por largos siglos. Allí, al lado de su sepulcro, hay mil nombres de distinguidos[9] viajeros que han ido á pagar el último tributo,[10] á consagrar al pié de su propia tumba un pensamiento, y á dedicarle[11] un recuerdo[12] de admiracion.

Por un instante me habia olvidado que existia, y al volver[13] en mí, sentí que la fresca brisa[14] bañaba suavemente mi encendida[15] frente, y una lágrima[16] de pesar[17] y de veneracion[18] se habia desprendido[19] de mis ojos, cayendo sobre la humilde tumba de Jorge Washington.

Un hombre discreto preguntando á su hijo de donde venia pues era tan tarde, respondió: "Padre, yo vengo de ver á uno de mis amigos," le respondió el padre sorprendido;[20] ¡Tú tienes pues tantos amigos! Oh! como has hecho, siendo tan jóven para alcanzar muchos, pues que yo en mas de sesenta años no he podido encontrar uno."

1, *En efecto*, in fact. 2, *Junto*, near. 3, *Planta*, foot. 4, *Bajo*, under. 5, *Monton*, pile. 6, *Destituido*, destitute. 7, *Lujoso*, luxurious. 8, *Inscripcion*, inscription. 9, *Distinguido*, distinguished. 10, *Tributo*, tribute. 11, *Dedicar*, to dedicate. 12, *Recuerdo*, memento. 13, *Al volver*, on returning. 14, *Brisa*, breeze. 15, *Encendido*, inflamed. 16, *Lágrima*, tear. 17, *Pesar*, sorrow. 18, *Veneracion*, veneration. 19, *Desprendido*, separated. 20, *Sorprendido*, surprised.

94. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA CUARTA.

SUBJUNCTIVE PLUPERFECT.

RULE I. THE PLUPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE is formed by adding the past participle to the imperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary; thus,

I should or would have lent.	Yo *hubiera*, *habria*, *hubiese*,	*prestado.*
Thou shouldst or wouldst have lent.	Tú *hubieras*, *habrias*, *hubieses*,	
He should or would have lent.	El *hubiera*, *habria*, *hubiese*,	
We should or would have lent.	Nosotros *hubiéramos*, *habriamos*, *hubiésemos*,	*prestado.*
You should or would have lent.	Vosotros *hubierais*, *habriais*, *hubieseis*,	
They should or would have lent.	Ellos *hubieran*, *habrian*, *hubiesen*,	

REMARK 1. The first and third forms of this tense are used like those of the imperfect subjunctive, with only this difference, that they denote a time past to the governing clause, as those of the imperfect denote one present or future to it.

Did you doubt that he was (or would be) sick?	¿Dudaba V. que él { *estuviera*,[1] or *estuviese*,[2] }	enfermo?
Did you doubt that he had been sick?	¿Dudaba V. que él { *hubiera*,[1] or *hubiese*,[2] }	*estado* enfermo?

Here *had been sick* is translated by the pluperfect, because it denotes a time past (anterior) to that of the governing verb *did doubt*. So in the following the governed denote a time anterior to the governing verbs.

He feared that we had not come.	El temia que nosotros no { *hubiéramos*,[1] or *hubiésemos*,[2] }	*venido.*
I did not believe that they had done it.	Yo no creia que ellos lo { *hubiesen*,[2] or *hubieran*,[1] }	*hecho.*
Did you think that he had gone away?	¿Pensaban VV. que el se { *hubiera*,[1] or *hubiese*,[2] }	*ido?*
I did not think that he had come.	Yo no pensaba que él { *hubiera*,[1] or *hubiese*,[2] }	*venido.*

REMARK 3. The first and second conditional forms of this tense also, are used in *conditional sentences* like these of the imperfect conditional, with only this difference, that the pluperfect conditional denotes past time; while the imperfect condition denotes that which is present or future.

If I had had money I *should have travelled.**	Sí yo { hubiera,[1] or hubiese,[2] }	tenido dinero { *habria*,[2] or hubiera,[1] }	*viajado.*

* Here the conditional denotes *past time*, and is translated by the pluperfect. *If I had money I would travel.* Here it denotes future time and would be translated by the imperfect.

He *would have learned* if he had studied.	El { *hubiera*,[1] or *habria*,[2] } { *apren-dido* si } { hubiera,[1] or hubiese,[3] } *estudiado*.
Which of these *would you have preferred?*	¿ Cual de estos, { *hubiera*,[1] or *habria*,[2] } preferido V.?
Who *would have believed* that?	¿ Quien, { *hubiera*,[1] or *habria*,[2] } *creido* eso?
Oh that he were here!	¡ Ojalá que estuviera aquí !
Oh that he *had been here!*	¡ Ojalá que *hubiera estado* aquí !
I *should have approved* of your having traveled.	Yo hubiera aprobado que VV. hubiesen viajado.
The *truth*. He has told the truth.	La *verdad*. El ha dicho la verdad.
To inform. He will inform me.	*Informar*. El me informará.
The *story* (of a building). In the first story.	El *piso*. En el primer piso.
To go up, to mount. A *washstand*.	*Subir*. Un *lavamanos*.
I will go up to my room.	Subiré á mi cuarto.
A *curtain*. *Damask*.	Una *cortina*. *Damasco*.
Damask curtains. *To carpet*.	Cortinas de damasco. *Alfombrar*.
The floor is carpeted.	El suelo está alfombrado.
A *stove*. *Mahogany*.	Una *estufa*. *Caoba*.
To look, to open towards. A *musketo-bar*.	*Dar*. Un *mosquiteró*.
The door looks into the street, and that window looks to the north.	La puerta da á la calle, y esa ventana da al norte.
A *pillow*. A *sheet*.	Una *almohada*. Una *sábana*.
A *blanket*. A *coverlet*.	Una *frazada*. Una *colcha*.
Sensitive to cold. *Ready*.	*Friolento*. *Listo*.
To reside. He resides in this city.	*Residir*. El reside en esta ciudad.
Confused. The *mail*.	*Confuso*. El *correo*.
He has written by the mail.	El ha escrito por el correo.

What would you wish that the servant had bought? I should wish that he had bought a stove and some coal, for I am very sensitive to cold. What was it necessary that he should have put upon your bed? It was necessary that he should have put on it two pillows, two sheets, two blankets, and a coverlet. If you had given him money; would all have been ready? No; if I had given him money, he would have bought various things for himself.

My lady, they have told me that you have rooms to rent (*de alquiler*), is it so? Yes, sir; how do you wish it, with furniture or without furniture? I wish it with furniture. I have one in the first

story, and another in the second. Do me the favor to show them to me. Enter, and let us go up to the first story. You see that it is well furnished, (*amueblado.*) It has a good bed, a very handsome bureau, a washstand, a sofa, and six new chairs, damask curtains in the windows, the floor carpeted, and a stove sufficiently large. All the furniture is of mahogany, except the washstand. Let me see that of the second story. Sir, it is not worth the trouble (*pena*) of seeing it, for besides being very small, it is very warm. How much is the rent of the room in the first story? Twenty dollars a (*al*) month; but if you take it for a year (*por año*) I will give it to you for eighteen. It appears to me very dear. No, sir; it is very cheap, because this is the best place in the city. It is very cool; for besides having the door very wide, it has two windows, one which looks into the street, and another which looks into the garden. If you give me in the yard a place to put the coal for the stove, I will take it for a year. I will give you a little room behind the stable. Well, I take it from to-day. Have (*haya*) it swept, and put on the bed a musketo-bar, a feather-bed, two pillows, two sheets, a blanket, and a coverlet; for I am very sensitive to cold. All shall be ready by to-night.

When you went to school, should you have learned Spanish if you had had a good instructor? I should not have learned Spanish, but I should have learned French. What would you have done last summer if you had had money? I would have traveled in Europe, and I would have bought many things. Did your father approve of your having bought a horse? He approved of it because it was necessary that I should have one. A person asked an Irishman, his friend, whether his sister, who resided in the United States, had a son or a daughter. Telling you the truth, replied the Irishman confused, I do not know yet whether I am an uncle or an aunt; but by the first mail, I will write to my sister, begging her (*suplicándole*) to inform me as soon as possible.

Los siete sabios de Grecia fueron, segun[1] la mejor autoridad, Táles Milesio,[2] Solon, Anacársis, Bias, Chilon, Pítaco,[3] y Cleóbulo.[4] Su historia es muy interesante.[5]

Tales, por sobrenombre[6] Milesio (ó porque nació en Mileto, ó porque se estableció allí) fué él que enseñó á los Griegos la geometría[7] y la astronomía; les explicó[8] la formacion[9] del trueno,[10] y otros meteoros,[11] observó[12] los solsticios,[13] los equinoccios,[14] y perfeccionó[15] la navegacion,[16] descubriendo el curso[17] de la osa[18] menor al rededor del polo;[19] conoció y predijo[20] los eclipses[21] de sol y luna. Decia que nada habia tan fuerte como la necesidad, pues todo cede[22] á ella; nada tan rápido[23] como el pensamiento que corre inmensos espacios; nada mas pronto que la luz; y nada mas difícil que conocerse á sí mismo.

Anacársis, de nacion Escita,[24] fué tanta la sabiduría[25] con que habló en las conferencias[26] que tuvo con Solon en Aténas,[27] que aunque Escita, mereció ser colocado entre los sabios de Grecia. Hablando del gobierno[28] de Aténas, en que el senado[29] no podia establecer ley alguna sin que fuese ratificada[30] por el pueblo, dijo: Que en Aténas proponian[31] los sabios y decidian[32] los necios.[33] Decia tambien: Que la viña[34] daba tres frutos, el deleite, la embriaguez,[35] y el arrepentimiento.[36]

1, *Segun*, according to. 2, *Milesio*, the Miletian. 3, *Pítaco*, Pittacus. 4, *Cleóbulo*, Cleobulus. 5, *Interesánte*, interesting. 6, *Sobrenombre*, surname. 7, *Geometría*, geometry. 8, *Explicar*, to explain. 9, *Formacion*, formation. 10, *Trueno*, thunder. 11, *Meteoro*, meteor. 12, *Observar*, to observe. 16, *Solsticio*, solstice. 14, *Equinoccio*, equinox. 15, *Perfeccionar*, to perfect. 16, *Navegácion*, navigation. 17, *Curso*, course. 18, *Osa*, Ursa. 19, *Polo*, pole. 20, *Predecir*, to foretell. 21, *Eclipse*, eclipse. 22, *Ceder*, to submit. 23, *Rápido*, rapid. 24, *Escita*, Scythian. 25, *Sabiduría*, wisdom. 26, *Conferencia*, conference. 27, *Aténas*, Athens. 28, *Gobierno*, government. 29, *Senado*, senate. 30, *Ratificar*, to ratify. 31, *Proponer*, to propose. 32, *Decidir*, to decide. 33, *Necio*, ignorant. 34, *Viña*, vine. 35, *Embriaguez*, intoxication. 36, *Arrepentimiento*, repentance.

---

95. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA QUINTA.

TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

The learner has seen in the five preceding lessons, that the various tenses of the subjunctive, thus far given are used according to the following general

RULE. When the time of the governing clause is present or future, the present of the subjunctive is used to denote a time which is present or future to it, and the perfect to denote a time which is past; but when the time of the govern-

ing clause is past or conditional, the imperfect is used to denote a time which is present or future to it, and the pluperfect to denote a time which is past.

And of the forms of the imperfect and pluperfect, the learner has seen that the *first* and *third* are used after verbs and phrases of past time, and in conditional sentences in the clause which contains the conjunction, while the first and second forms are used in the other clause; thus,

I doubt whether he { is coming, or / will come. }	Yo dudo que él venga.
I shall doubt whether he { is coming, or / will come. }	Yo dudaré que él venga.
I { doubt, or / shall doubt } whether he has come.	Yo { dudo, or / dudaré } que él haya venido.
I doubted whether he { came, or / would come, }	Yo dudaba que él { viniera, or / viniese,
I doubted whether he had come.	Yo dudaba que él { hubiera, or / hubiese, } venido.
If he came I would go.	Si él { viniera, or / viniese, } yo { iria, or / fuera.
If he had come I should have gone.	Sí él { hubiera, or / hubiese, } venido yo { hubiera, or / habria, } ido.

REMARK 1. The present subjunctive is used also after the past indefinite, when it is preceded by a conjunction, and denotes what may now be taking place.

I have written him in order that he may come.	Yo le he escrito á fin de que venga.
God has given us many good things in order that we may be happy.	Dios nos ha dado muchas cosas buenas para que seamos dichosos.

REMARK 2. After the present, the imperfect subjunctive is used instead of the present, and the pluperfect, instead of the perfect when followed by a conditional clause.

Do you believe that they would deny it to me if I requested them?	¿Cree V. que me lo negasen si les suplicara?
Do you believe that they would have denied it to me if I had requested them?	¿Cree V. que me lo hubiesen negado, si les hubiera suplicado?

REMARK 3. The employment of the perfect subjunctive is allowed also after the past indefinite.

Has there ever been a man who has labored more?	¿Ha habido jamas un hombre que haya trabajado mas?
To presume, to undertake. I will undertake.	*Atreverse.* Yo me atreveré.

A *sentence*. The *verb*.	Una *sentencia*. El *verbo*.
I have learned many sentences.	He aprendido muchas sentencias.
Regular. *Irregular*.	*Regular*. *Irregular*.
The irregular verbs.	Los verbos irregulares.
The *subjunctive*. *To compose*.	El *subjuntivo*. *Componer* (as *poner*, Les. 46.)
The *person*. *Singular*.	La *persona*. *Singular*.
Compose a sentence with a regular verb in the first person singular.	Compon una sentencia con un verbo regular en el primera persona singular.
Auxiliary. The auxiliary verb.	*Auxiliar*. El verbo auxiliar.
Correct. *Plural*.	*Correcto*. *Plural*.
Imperfect. The imperfect tense.	*Imperfecto*. El tiempo imperfecto.
Perfect. *To reward*.	*Perfecto*. *Premiar*.
Soldiers, I will reward you.	Soldados, os premiaré (See Rem. 2, Les. 34.) p. 70.
Pluperfect. The *prison*.	*Pluscuamperfecto*. La *cárcel*.
The *future*. *Indicative*.	El *futuro*. *Indicativo*.
To place. He has placed it here.	*Colocar*. El lo ha colocado aquí.

Do you believe that my brother is sick? I do not believe that he is sick. Do you believe that he has been sick? I do not believe that he has been sick. Did you believe that he was sick? I did not believe that he was sick. Did you believe that he had been sick? I did not believe that he had been sick. If he were sick would you go to see him? I would go. If he had been sick, would you have gone to see him? I would have gone. Do they fear that we lose our money? Do they fear that we have lost it? Did they fear that we should lose it? Did they fear that we had lost it? If we had lost our money, would you have lent us some more? If you had lost yours, we should have lent you some more.

Have you learned all the irregular verbs of the Spanish language? I have learned them all, and I would undertake to compose any kind of sentence whatever that you should ask me. Let us see (*vamos á ver*) in the subjunctive. Compose a sentence with the auxiliary verb *ser*, in the first person singular of the present subjunctive. *When I am a man I will be a lawyer*. Is it correct, father? Yes; very correct. Compose another in the first person plural of the same tense, with the verb *estar*. *When we are at the bay, we will bathe*. Very well; compose another with the irregular verb *ir*, in the third person

singular of the imperfect. *My sister would go to the ball, if they had invited her.* Compose another with the verb *morir*, in the second person singular of the same tense. *Thou wouldst die if thou shouldst eat that fruit.* Compose another with the verb *vencer*, in the second person plural of the perfect. *Soldiers, when you have conquered, I will reward you.* Compose another with the verb *dormir*, in the third person plural of the pluperfect. *The robbers would have slept in the prison, if they had caught them.* Compose another with the verb *barrer*, in the first person singular of the future. *I will sweep my room if you lend me a broom.* I have caught you now; you have written that verb in the future of the indicative, and not in that of the subjunctive. My father, I do not know that there is any other future than that of the indicative. Perhaps the author of the grammar has forgotten it, or has placed it in the lessons that you have not yet learned. Let us see if we find it; yes, here is a lesson on (*en*) the future of the subjunctive.

Solon fué natural de Aténas; desde jóven tuvo suma[1] inclinacion[2] al estudio de la moral[3] y de la política,[4] y encontró en ellos tantos hechizos[5] que le hicieron disgustar[6] de los placeres de la juventud. Pensando solo[7] en el triste estado de su patria determinó socorrerla en cuanto[8] pudiese. Su dulzura[9] y vivacidad[10] unidas á sus gracias naturales le adquirieron[11] la benevolencia de su pueblo; al cual dió unas leyes muy sabias; pero su pueblo ingrato[12] no queria obedecerlas.[13] Por tanto,[14] Solon, dejando á Pisistrato en el trono, se ausentó[15] de su turbulenta[16] patria por diez años. En este tiempo fué, cuando, preguntado por Creso[17] que cual era en su parecer, el hombre mas feliz, respondió un Telo,[18] ciudadano de Aténas, á quien su mucha virtud y el amor[19] á su patria le proporcionaron[20] una feliz muerte, despues de haber vencido á los enemigos de su patria. Y admirando Creso como anteponia Tele á él cuyos tesoros[21] y grandezas veia, le respondió: Le tengo, príncipe, por mas feliz, pues, en mi opinion, no es verdadera felicidad la que está sujeta á la volubilidad[22] de los tiempos, ni puede tampoco[23] ninguno llamarse verdaderamente feliz antes de su muerte.

Bias ciudadano de Priene[24] era sumamente[25] desinteresado,[26] y de un talento casi sin igual. Refieren[27] de él que precisados[28] sus conciudadanos[29] á huir, lo hizo tambien, pero sin cuidar de llevar consigo cosa alguna; algunos amigos se mostraron admirados,[30] y él les dió aquella respuesta que luego se ha hecho tan célebre: *Todo lo llevo conmigo.* Hablando de la amistad decia: *Que debemos tratar á los amigos como si alguna vez hubiesen de ser enemigos.*

1, *Suma*, greatest. 2, *Inclinacion*, inclination. 3, *Moral*, morals. 4, *Polí-*

tica, politics. 5, *Hechizo*, entertainment. 6, *Disgustar*, to dislike. 7, *Solo*, only. 8, *En cuanto*, as far as. 9, *Dulzura*, pleasing manner. 10, *Vivacidad*, vivacity. 11, *Adquirir*, to acquire. 12, *Ingrato*, ungrateful. 13, *Obedecer*, to obey. 14, *Por tanto*, for that cause. 15, *Ausentarse*, to absent one's self. 16, *Turbulento*, disorderly. 17, *Creso*, Cresus. 18, *Telo*, Tellus. 19, *Amor*, love. 20, *Proporcionar*, to procure. 21, *Tesoro*, treasure. 22, *Volubilidad*, inconstancy. 23, *Tampoco*, neither. 24, *Priene*, Priene. 25, *Sumamente*, in the highest degree. 26, *Desinteresado*, disinterested. 27, *Referir*, to relate. 28, *Precisado*, compelled. 29, *Conciudadano*, fellow-citizen. 30, *Admirado*, inclined to wonder.

---

96. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA SEXTA.

SUBJUNCTIVE FUTURE.

The FUTURE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE may be formed from the third person plural of the past definite by changing *ron* final into

RE, RES, RE, REMOS, REIS, REN.

HABER, to have, past definite third person plural HUBIERON, makes

Yo hubiere,	*tú hubieres,*	*él hubiere,*
I shall have,	thou wilt have,	he will have,
nosotros hubiéremos,	*vosotros hubiereis,*	*ellos hubieren.*
we shall have,	you will have,	they will have.

SER, to be, past definite third person plural FUERON, makes

Yo fuere,	*tú fueres,*	*él fuere,*
I shall be,	thou wilt be,	he will be,
nosotros fuéremos,	*vosotros fuereis,*	*ellos fueren.*
we shall be,	you will be,	they will be.

ESTAR, to be, past definite third person plural ESTUVIERON, makes

Yo estuviere,	*tú estuvieres,*	*él estuviere,*
I shall be,	thou wilt be,	he will be,
nosotros estuviéremos,	*vosotros estuviereis,*	*ellos estuvieren.*
we shall be,	you will be,	they will be.

TENER, to have, past definite third person plural TUVIERON, makes

Tuviere, tuvieres, tuviere, tuviéremos, tuviereis, tuvieren.

COMPRAR, to buy, past definite third person plural COMPRARON, makes

Comprare, comprares, comprare, compráremos, compráreis, compraren.

REMARK 1. This tense is used in conditional phrases with *if* to denote a future time

If I have money I will travel.	Si yo tuviere dinero viajaré.
I will travel if I have money.	Yo viajaré si tuviere dinero.
If he studies he will learn.	Si él estudiare aprenderá.
We will drink if we have good wine.	Beberemos si tuviéremos buen vino.

If they see my horse they will buy him. Si vieren mi caballo le comprarán.

REMARK 2. This tense is used also with *cuando* and relatives of a vague sense, when future time is expressed.

When I have books I will read.	Cuando yo tuviere libros leeré.
He will go away when they come.	El se irá cuando ellos vinieren.
When we have good water we will drink.	Cuando tuviéremos buena agua beberemos.
They will buy what they find.	Ellos comprarán lo que encontraren.
I will reward him who shall be most industrious.	Premiaré al que fuere mas industrioso.

All the examples under this last remark, instead of the future, would admit of the present subjunctive, as seen Les. 85, Rem. 1, and Les. 87, Rem. 2. Thus, *Cuando yo* TENGA *libros leeré. El se irá cuando ellos* VENGAN. *Cuando* TENGAMOS *buena agua beberemos. Ellos comprarán lo que* ENCUENTREN, etc.

FUTURE PERFECT.

THE FUTURE PERFECT of the subjunctive is formed by annexing the past participle to the future subjunctive of the auxiliary. It is used instead of the future subjunctive, when *have* is expressed in English with future time.

If I have finished my work I will go with you.	Si yo *hubiere acabado* mi trabajo iré con V.
When you have read that book will you lend it to me?	¿ Cuando V. *hubiere leido* ese libro me le prestará?
I will lend it to you when my brothers have read it.	Se le prestaré cuando mis hermanos le *hubieren leido.*
When I have dined I will go out.	Cuando yo *hubiere comido* saldré.
Perchance. By chance.	*Acaso. Por casualidad.*
If perchance you see my brother give him this letter.	Si acaso V. viere á mi hermano déle esta carta.
To treat, present. I will present you one.	*Regalar.* Le regalaré uno á V.
A *madman. Singing.*	Un *loco. Canto.*
The *difference. It is so.*	La *diferencia. Así es.*
To borrow. He borrows my books.	*Pedir prestado.* Pide prestado mis libros.
Bankruptcy. To become bankrupt.	*Bancarrota. Hacer bancarrota.*
A pair. A pair of gloves.	Un *par.* Un par de guantes.
To become rich. As soon as.	*Enriquecer. Ló mas pronto que.*
They become rich in this way.	Enriquecen de este modo.
The *manner. To be accustomed.*	La *manera. Acostumbrar.*
He is accustomed to live in that manner.	El acostumbra vivir de esa manera.
Mistaken. You are mistaken.	*Equivocado.* V. está equivocado.

John, go to the city this evening, and if you should see Mr. B., tell him that I wish to see him to-morrow; but, if he should not

have returned from the country, give this letter to his wife. I will go at five if I shall have finished my work. When will your cousins come here? They will come next week, and if they should have money, they would buy your handsome horses. What does the master say? He says that he will give a new book next month to him who shall speak Spanish the best.

Anthony (*Antonio*), if perchance you go to the book-store of Mr. D., ask him if he has the grammar of Mr. P., and if he have it, buy it and bring it to me as soon as you can. If I have time I will go. Where are you going now? I am going a hunting. If by chance you kill any rabbit, bring it to me. In the place where I am going there are no rabbits; but if there were (*los*) and I should kill them, they will be for me, and not for you. If you should not be willing to present me one, I will give you what you shall ask me for it. Will you be in the city to-morrow to hear Miss B. sing? If we should be there, and should have money to pay the admission, my wife and I shall go. They say that Miss B. sings better than Miss T., have you heard them? Those who say that Miss B. sings better than Miss T. are mad persons, who do not know what they say; but those who shall hear them both sing, and know what singing is, will see the difference between the one and the other.

Do you not know that Mr. D. has bought a very handsome house? With what money might he buy (*compraria*) it? He had the half, and the other half he borrowed. Well, but he has bought the furniture on credit, with what will he pay for it? He will borrow more money to pay for it, and if not, he will become bankrupt. That is the way in which many become rich; but I do not wish to become rich in this manner, for although I should not have a pair of shoes to put on, I would never borrow in order to buy them. Are you accustomed to borrow? I borrow sometimes, but it is when I know that I can pay. We all borrow when we need anything. Whoever (*él que*) may tell me that there is a man who has not borrowed I will tell him he is mistaken.

If you go to my uncle's to-day, tell him that I will come to see him to-morrow. I shall go there soon. When will you go home? I shall go at two o'clock. If perchance you meet John, tell him to

come here this evening. What do you wish me to do? If you see Charles tell him to study much in order to speak Spanish soon.

Chilon fué Lacedemonio.[1] Era uno de los éforos[2] de su patria, hombre muy profundo, y observador[3] de los preceptos[4] de Licurgo.[5] Decia, *que la verdadera sabiduria consistia en saber sufrir las injurias, guardar un secreto, y hacer buen uso del tiempo, que el mayor cuidado de un hombre habia de ser*[6] *que la lengua no antecediese*[7] *á la reflexion; que la piedra de toque*[8] *prueba el oro, y el oro prueba á los hombres.* Algunos autores le atribuyen[9] estas dos bellas máximas,[10] *no desear nada con demasia;*[11] *y procurar*[12] *conocerse á sí mismo.*

Pittaco fué natural de Mitilene. Su talento militar, y su instruccion[13] en la política, le alcanzaron el poder absoluto[14] de su patria, despues de haber depuesto[15] al tirano Melancro.[16] Tuvo el poder supremo por espacio de diez años, finalizados[17] los cuales volvió al pueblo la soberanía.[18] Queriendo sus conciudadanos recompensar sus beneficios, le ofrecieron gran porcion de tierras; pero tal era su desinteres[19] que no quiso admitir[20] mas que el espacio que cogiera una flecha que disparó[21] él mismo; diciendo á sus conciudadanos: *Que la patria valia mas que todo; y que mas gloria alcanzaria su desinteres que los mas grandes tesoros.* Entre otras máximas célebres dijo esta bastante notable[22] sobre el secreto:[23] *El que se vanagloria*[24] *de un asunto, ántes de ver el efecto, si por casualidad falla,*[25] *se hace ridículo,*[26] *y disminuye*[27] *la gloria del suceso,*[28] *aun cuando salga*[29] *con el intento.*

1, *Lacedemonio*, Lacedemonian. 2, *Eforo*, ephorus. 3, *Observador*, observer. 4, *Precepto*, precept. 5, *Licurgo*, Lycurgus. 6, *Habia de ser*, must be. 7, *Anteceder*, to precede. 8, *Piedra de toque*, touchstone. 9, *Atribuir*, to attribute. 10, *Máxima*, maxim. 11, *Demasia*, excess. 12, *Procurar*, to strive. 13, *Instruccion*, instruction. 14, *Absoluto*, absolute. 15, *Depuesto*, deposed. 16, *Melancro*, Melancras. 17, *Finalizado*, finished. 18, *Soberanía*, sovereignty. 19, *Desinteres*, disinterestedness. 20, *Admitir*, to receive. 21, *Disparar*, to shoot. 22, *Notable*, notable. 23, *Secreto*, (secret) secrecy. 24, *Vanagloriarse*, (to be vainglorious) to boast. 25, *Falla*, it fails. 26, *Ridículo*, ridiculous. 27, *Disminuir*, to diminish. 28, *Suceso*, success. 29, *Salir*, to succeed (in his purpose).

---

97. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

Joyful. To turn over (a vessel).	*Alegre. Volcarse.*
I have passed a joyful day.	He pasado un dia alegre.

The boat turned over.	El bote se viró (or se volcó.)
To drown. To be drowned.	*Ahogar. Ahogarse.*
Perhaps. Perhaps you will be drowned.	*Quizá.* Quizá se ahogará V.
To occur. The *middle.*	*Acontecer.* El *medio.*
Do you know what occurred yesterday?	¿Sabe V. lo que aconteció ayer?
In the middle of the street.	En el medio de la calle.
To succeed, to happen. A *mishap.*	*Suceder.* Una *desgracia.*
A mishap has befallen us.	Nos has sucedido una desgracia.
A *tube.* A *double-barreled gun.*	Un *cañon.* Un *fusil de dos cañones.*
Within. Within the month.	*Dentro.* Dentro del mes.
A *witty saying. To sustain, to maintain.*	Un *chiste. Sostener,* (varied as *tener.*)
He relates witty sayings.	El cuenta chistes.
He maintains a conversation.	El sostiene una conversacion.
At least. To surprise.	*A lo ménos. Sorprender.*
He wishes to surprise him.	El quiere sorprenderle.
At least I have learned the verbs.	A lo ménos he aprendido los verbos.
Celebrated, praised. Every body.	*Celebrado. Todo el mundo.*
A *reply. Acute.*	Una *réplica. Agudo.*
An acute reply. *Most excellent.*	Una réplica aguda. *Excelentísimo.*
Your *excellency. Temperate.*	Su *excelencia. Templado.*
He is very temperate.	El es muy templado.
To keep, to retain. To return.	*Quedarse con. Devolver,* (varied as *mover,* Les. 37.)
Does he return what he borrows?	¿Devuelve él lo que pide prestado?
No, sir; he has borrowed my book and has kept it.	No, señor; me ha pedido prestado el libro y se ha quedado con él.
A *bishop. By swimming.*	Un *obispo. A nado.*

Charles, if you had come this morning, you would have gone with us to the other side of the river, and would have passed a very joyful day. I did not believe that you would have gone to-day; if I had known it, I would have come. And how did you pass the river? First, we thought of passing it by swimming; but, when we arrived at the wharf, we saw that the river was very wide; and, had it not been for a fisherman, who promised to pass us over for four shillings, every one would have returned home. How many boys were there? We were more than thirty. Then the boat ought to be very large. If it had been large there would not have happened to us what did happen. What occurred to you? some mishap? When we were in

the middle of the river, the boat turned over, and if we had not known how to swim, we should have been drowned. Now I rejoice that I did not go with you, for I do not know how to swim, and if I had gone, perhaps I should have been drowned.

Dear father, when you have money, I wish you to buy me a double-barreled gun, like that (*como el*) which my uncle bought for my cousin. As soon as thou knowest how to speak Spanish like thy cousin, thou shalt have all that thou desirest. But, sir; you told me last year, that when you should have money you would buy it for me. It is true (*verdad*) that I said so (*lo*) to thee, believing that within one year, thou and thy brother would know how to speak Spanish. We should speak it now if we had a good master; but he whom we have is a Frenchman, who with difficulty (*apénas*) speaks a few (*algunas*) words of Spanish, and gives us only the lessons of the grammar. That is to say (*es decir*), that if you had a master who conversed with you, and who related to you witty sayings, to-day you would be able to maintain a conversation in Spanish. I believe so; but for my part, I am satisfied that I have not lost a moment; for, although I can not converse like my cousin, at least I can talk some; I have learned by heart many sentences, and all the regular and irregular verbs of the Spanish language.

Lorenzo, there comes our neighbor; will you bet that he comes to borrow something? I never bet; but that man is always borrowing; and the worst is, that he never returns nor pays what he borrows. It is so; when I lived in the country he borrowed my gun every day; and as I came to live in the city, he kept it. Do you believe that your cousin is coming here to-day? Yes, sir; although he may have little time he will come. Would you learn Spanish if you had a good master? I would have learned it when I went to school, but now I have not the time. Does your father approve of your having learned French? Yes; and he wishes me to learn German also. Did you think that I should write my exercises to-day? I thought that you had written them yesterday.

A bishop wishing to surprise one day a child of ten years, who was praised by every body for his replies and acute answers, said to him: "Little friend, I will give you an apple, if you will tell me

where is God." "Most excellent sir," replied the child, "I will give your excellency two, if you will tell me where he is not."

Un labrador dijo un dia á un hijo suyo llamado Santiaguito,[1] vé á casa de tu tio Andres[2], á saber de mi parte como está. Distaba su casa de la de Santiago como una legua, pero este que era muy obediente[3], se puso en camino con un poco de pan, un pedacito[4] de carne, y dos manzanas, que le dió su madre para que se desayunase. No bien[5] habia andado un cuarto[6] de legua, cuando se encontró con un perro, que por su extrema flaqueza[7] manifestaba bien el mucho tiempo que hacia que no habia comido. El niño, que estaba dotado[8] de un corazon[9] muy tierno, le dió la mitad del pan y de la carne que llevaba. El pobre animalito se arrojó á este regalo con ansia,[10] y despues de haberle comido, siguió[11] al muchacho, como manifestando que le tomaba desde entónces[12] por su señor,[13] y el niño no cabia en sí de alegría,[14] porque, es preciso[15] observar, que el que hace bien á otro, experimenta[16] el placer mas puro que se puede imaginar.[17]

Despues de haber cumplido con su comision,[18] el niño Santiago se volvió[19] á su casa, llevando consigo[20] el perro, que le acompañaba á todas horas. Un dia en que Santiago se paseaba por la ribera[21] de un rio, junto con su perro, encontró otros niños de su edad, y triscando[22] con ellos cayó en el agua. Este accidente[23] llenó de confusion á sus compañeros, los cuales sin atreverse[24] á socorrerle, echaron[25] á correr.

Santiago procuraba[26] luchar contra la corriente, que comenzaba á arrastrarle;[27] pero faltándole[28] las fuerzas y la esperanza, se creyó perdido. A los gritos acudió[29] su perro, y luego que le vió se arrojó al agua, le hizo presa[30] en el vestido, y le sacó á la orilla, manifestándole con sus caricias[31] el gozo[32] que tenia por haberle librado del peligro.[33] El padre de Santiago cuando lo supo, dió mil gracias al cielo, porque conservando la vida á su hijo, le hacia ver que los beneficios[34] nunca dejan de ser recompensados, y que debemos manifestar siempre nuestro agradecimiento[35] á los que nos hacen algun bien.

1, *Santiago*, James. *Santiaguito*, (little James) Jimmy. 2, *Andres*, Andrew. 3, *Obediente*, obedient. 4, *Pedacito*, little piece. 5, *No bien*, hardly (as soon as). 6, *Cuarto*, quarter. 7, *Flaqueza*, leanness. 8, *Dotado*, endowed. 9, *Corazon*, heart. 10, *Ansia*, greediness. 11, *Seguir*, to follow. 12, *Desde entónces*, from that time. 13, *Señor*, master. 14, *Alegria*, joy, the child did not contain himself for joy. 15, *Preciso*, necessary. 16, *Experimentar*, to experience. 17, *Imaginarse*, to be imagined. 18, *Cumplido*, etc., executed his commission. 19, *Volverse*, to return. 20, *Consigo*, with him. 21, *Ribera*, bank. 22, *Triscando*, frolicking. 23, *Accidente*, accident. 24, *Atreverse*, to venture. 25, *Echar*, to cast, (immediately began to run.) 26, *Procurar*, to endeavor. 27, *Arrastrar*, to sweep away. 28, *Faltando*, failing. 29, *Acudir*, to run to. 30, *Hacer presa*, to seize. 31, *Caricias*, caresses. 32, *Gozo*, joy. 33, *Peligro*, danger. 34, *Beneficio*, benefit. 35, *Agradecimiento*, gratitude.

98. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA OCTAVA.

PASSIVE VOICE.

The Passive voice is formed, in Spanish, by adding the past participle to the various tenses of the auxiliary verb *ser*, the participle agreeing with the subject of the verb (according to Rule, Les. 55.) w. 151.

I am loved, thou art loved.	*Yo soy amado* or *a*, *tú eres amado* or *a*,
He is loved, we are loved.	*El es amado*, *nosotros somos amados as*,
You are loved, they are loved.	*Vosotros sois amados as*, *ellos son amados.*
I have been paid by him.	Yo *he sido pagado* por él.
They will be paid by me.	Ellos *serán pagados* por mí.
She is loved by him.	Ella *es amada* por (or de) él.

After passive verbs expressing a mental action, *by* may be rendered by *de*.

He has been loved by his friends.	El ha sido amado de (or por) sus amigos.
To praise. To punish.	*Alabar. Castigar.*
By whom is the bad boy punished?	¿Por quien es castigado el mal muchacho?
He is punished by his father.	Es castigado por su padre.
Will his brothers be praised?	¿Serán alabados sus hermanos?
They will be praised by the master.	Serán alabados por el maestro.
The *season. To dare, to venture.*	La *estacion. Atreverse.*
The seasons are equal.	Las estaciones son iguales.
I do not separate from my friend.	No me separo de mi amigo.
The *summer. To weary. To become weary.*	El *estio*, (*verano.*) *Cansar. Cansarse.*
To separate. An *annoyance.*	*Separar.* Una *mortificacion.*
The winter affords me many annoyances.	El invierno me proporciona muchas mortificaciones.
The *rain. To cause.*	La *lluvia. Causar.*
A *loss. Immense.*	Una *pérdida. Inmenso.*
The rain has caused immense losses.	La lluvia ha causado inmensas pérdidas.
An *inundation. To impede, prevent.*	Una *inundacion. Impedir*, (as *pedir*, Les. 58.)
Business. The mud.	*Negocio.* El *lodo.*
The rain prevents us from going to our business.	La lluvia nos impide ir á nuestros negocios.
The streets become full of mud.	Las calles se llenan de lodo.
A *thunderbolt.*	Un *rayo.*

Thunderbolts fall often.	Los rayos caen frecuentemente.
To destroy. A *building.*	*Destruir.* Un *edificio.*
Those buildings are destroyed.	Esos edificios son destruidos.
The *thunder.* The *lightning.*	El *trueno.* El *relámpago.*
To hide one's self. A *stature.* A *fathom.*	*Ocultarse.* Una *estatura.* Una *braza.*
Usually. A *disease.*	*Ordinariamente.* Una *enfermedad.*
To diminish, shorten. A *variety.*	*Disminuirse.* Una *diversidad.*
The *world.* Three fathoms under ground.	El *mundo.* Tres brazas bajo la tierra.
I see the lightning, and hear the thunder.	Veo el relámpago, y oigo el trueno.
The days begin to shorten.	Los dias comienzan á disminuirse.
There is a great variety of diseases in the world.	Hay gran diversidad de enfermedades en el mundo.

REMARK. Mr. before the christian (baptismal) name is translated by *Don*, and Miss or Mrs. by *Doña*, which are never used in the plural.

Mr. Albert Brown, and his cousin, Miss Emily Jones were at the ball.	El señor Don Alberto Brown, y su prima, Doña Emilia Jones estaban en el baile.
Messrs. Peter and John Pineda.	Los señores Don Pedro y Don Juan Pineda.

By whom is that young lady loved? She is loved by her friends. Are all young ladies loved? They are all loved if they are amiable. Has that building been destroyed by thunder? No, sir; it has been destroyed by fire. Will good scholars be praised? Yes, good scholars will be praised, and bad ones will be punished. By whom will they be punished? They will be punished by their master. Are not the days longer than the nights in summer? Yes, sir; and the nights are longer than the days in winter. The days are equal to the nights in spring, the twentieth of March; and in autumn, the twentieth of September. Has this book been translated into English? It has been translated into English and French.

I am glad that I have passed the winter, because for me it is the season the most disagreeable. I am always sick, I lose my appetite and sleep, and do not venture to separate from the fire a moment. For me, all seasons are equal, the spring pleases me as much as the summer, or the autumn, but the winter pleases me the most. Is it possible that you like the winter; the days being so short that you

hardly rise when it is night (*de noche*), and there does not remain to you time to do what you have to do (*que hacer*); besides that, the nights are so long, that you become weary of being in bed without sleeping, and can not rise for the cold which there is (*hace*). Every season, my friend, affords to man its pleasures, and its annoyances. Let us begin with (*por*) the spring, and you will see that that season, (being) so necessary for the rain, without which we can not exist, causes us many times immense losses, by the inundations of the rivers, prevents us from going out into the street to do our business, the streets become full of mud, and many times thunderbolts fall and destroy the most beautiful buildings; and, there are persons, who when they hear thunder, and see lightning, wish to hide themselves seven fathoms under ground.

The summer, which usually causes diseases, by the heat, affords us the pleasure of walking morning and evening in (*por*) the country, and that of bathing, and what is better, that of gathering (*coger*) our crops. The autumn, which is the season in which the days shorten, affords us the pleasure of eating a variety of fruits, and in this way, each season has (*de*) good and (*de*) evil, the same, as all things in (*de*) this world.

Is it not usually very hot in this climate in summer? It is very hot in summer, and very cold in winter. Does the summer cause more diseases than the winter? No, sir; the winter causes as many as the summer. If it were cold would you venture to bathe? Yes, sir; I always bathe every morniug. Will you see bishop T. if you go to the city? No, sir; he is a madman, and I shall not go to see him. Is there much difference between the singing of Mrs. L. and Mrs. H.? Yes, sir; Mrs. L. sings much better than Mrs. H. Has the nephew of bishop P. much talent? Yes; he is praised by every body for his acute replies. Where are you going to-day? I am going a hunting. If perchance you kill some rabbits, will you present me one? If I kill one, I will send it to you as quick as possible. Are you acquainted with that gentleman and lady? Yes, sir; it is my friend, Mr. George Adams, and his sister, Mrs. Caroline (*Carolina*) Adams. Who is that young lady? It is Miss Julia Toby, the daughter of Mr. Frances (*Francisco*) Toby.

* *Cleóbulo* nació en la isla de Rodas;[1] era de la familia de los Heraclidas,[2] que reinaban sobre la mayor parte de los estados de Grecia. No se sabe[3] cosa particular[4] de su vida, sinó que era muy diestro[5] en proponer enigmas, ciencia muy estimada en la antigüedad. Para descubrir[6] el año propuso á sus discípulos el siguiente enigma: *Un padre que tenia doce hijos, cada uno de los cuales tenia sesenta hijos, de los cuales la mitad vestian de negro, y los otros de blanco.*

Plutarco refiere que en una conversacion, que dice tuvieron los siete sabios, se propuso[7] esta pregunta: *¿ Cual es el gobierno popular mas perfecto?* A ella respondió Thales Milesio: "Aquel en el cual los habitantes ni son muy ricos ni muy pobres." Solon dijo: "Aquel en el cual la injuria hecha á un particular[8] interesa[9] á todos los ciudadanos." Anacársis: "Aquel en donde la virtud es honrada, y detestado[10] el vicio."[11] Bias: "Aquel en donde la ley ocupa el lugar de la tiranía."[12] Chilon: "Aquel en el cual las leyes son escuchadas y tienen crédito, pero no los oradores." Pitaco: "Aquel en el cual no se conceden[13] las dignidades sinó á los hombres de bien,[14] y jamas á los malos." Cleóbulo: "Aquel en donde los ciudadanos temen mas el vituperio[15] que la ley."

Aconsejaban[16] al santo arzobispo[17] de Valencia, Tomas[18] Garcia de Villanueva, que añadiese[19] algunas piezas[20] á su palacio: A la verdad, observó él, ese consejo es peor que él que dió el diablo[21] á Jesucristo,[22] pues él le persuadia[23] á que convirtiese[24] las piedras en pan, con que hubiera podido socorrer á los pobres; pero vosotros quereis que yo convierta en piedras el pan de los necesitados.[25]

1, *Rodas*, Rhodes. 2, *Heraclidas*, Heraclidae. 3, *Saberse*, to be known. 4, *Particular*, particular. 5, *Diestro*, skilful. 6, *Descubrir*, to denote. 7, *Proponerse*, to be proposed. 8, *Particular*, private individual. 9, *Interesar*, to interest. 10, *Detestado*, abhorred. 11, *Vicio*, vice. 12, *Tirania*, arbitrary rule. 13, *Concederse*, to be granted. 14, *Hombres de bien*, good men. 15, *Vituperio*, infamy. 16, *Aconsejar*, to advise. 17, *Arzobispo*, archbishop. 18, *Tomas*, Thomas. 19, *Añadir*, to add. 20, *Pieza*, room. 21, *Diablo*, devil. 22, *Jesucristo*, Jesus Christ. 23, *Persuadir*, to exhort. 24, *Convertir*, to change. 25, *Necesitado*, necessitous.

---

99. LECCION NONAGÉSIMA NONA.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

REMARK 1. The pupil has already seen, Les. 83, Rem. 1, that when one verb depends upon another, the infinitive is commonly preferred to the subjunctive; if there be no change of subject. Thus:

He desires that I may be rich.	El desea que yo *sea* rico, (change of s.)
He desires that he may be rich.	El desea *ser* rico, (no change of s.)
I am afraid of your losing your money.	Temo que V. *pierda* su dinero, (ch. of s.)
I am afraid of losing my money.	Temo *perder* mi dinero, (no ch. of s.)

REMARK 2. When, of two verbs connected by *and*, the second denotes the object or consequence of the first, the second is generally in the infinitive in Spanish, though not in English. Thus:

Come and sweep my room.	Venga á *barrer* mi cuarto.
I *will go and buy* some wine.	Yo iré á *comprar* vino.
He *will come* and *do* my work.	El *vendrá á hacer* mi trabajo.
I *will go and see* your brother.	Yo *iré á ver* al hermano de V.

REMARK 3. When the infinitive in an unlimited sense is the subject of a verb, it takes the definite article.

Studying is very useful.	El estudiar es muy útil.
To forgive is generous.	El perdonar es generoso.
A *country-seat*. *Before*.	Una *quinta*. *Delante*.
The *painting*, *picture*. *Amused*.	La *pintura*. *Divertido*.
That country seat is beautiful.	Aquella quinta es hermosa.
We have been well amused.	Hemos estado bien divertidos.
The *affability*. The *abundance*.	La *afabilidad*. La *abundancia*.
A *desire*. A *desire to please*.	Un *deseo*. Un *deseo de complacer*.
She has much affability and a desire to please.	Ella tiene mucha afabilidad y deseo de complacer.
A *jessamine*.	Un *jazmin*.
The *white lilly*. A *sun-flower*.	La *azucena*. Un *girasol*.
There are pinks and jessamines before the house, and behind it are white lilies and sun-flowers.	Hay claveles y jazmines delante de la casa, y detras hay azucenas y girasoles.
The *gardener*. What are they called?	El *jardinero*. ¿Como se llaman?
Fruit-bearing. Fruit trees.	*Frutal*. Arboles frutales.
A *grove*, *shaded walk*. An *orange-tree*.	Una *alameda*. Un *naranjo*.
An *apple-tree*. A *pear-tree*.	Un *manzano*. Un *peral*.
A *peach-tree*. A *fig-tree*.	Un *duraznero*. Una *higuera*.
A *lemon-tree*. A *pine-apple orchard*.	Un *limonero*. Un *piñal*.
The gardener has in his grove of fruit trees, orange-trees, apple-trees, pear-trees, peach-trees, fig-trees, and lemon-trees.	El jardinero tiene en su alameda, naranjos, manzanos, perales, duraznos, higueras y limoneros.
An *odor*. *To try*, *to taste*.	Un *olor*. *Probar*, (as *mover*, Les. 37.)
A *pear*. A *fig*.	Una *pera*. Un *higo*.
I have tasted the pears and the figs.	Yo he probado las peras y los higos.
Never in my life.	*En mi vida*.

REMARK 4. In this last phrase *nunca* is commonly left understood in Spanish.

Never in my life have I felt the cold more.	En mi vida he sentido mas el frio.

The odor of that pine-apple orchard is very agreeable.	El olor de aquel piñal es muy agradable.

REMARK 2. *¿No es verdad?* may be annexed to any form of affirmation, and renders it interrogative.

You tasted the fruit, did you not?	V. probó la fruta; ¿no es verdad?
Your brother is here; is he not?	El hermano de V. está aquí; ¿no es verdad?
They will go away to-morrow; will they not?	Ellos se irán mañana; ¿no es verdad?

Do you wish your father to buy the country-seat of Mr. Charles Norton? No, sir; I prefer that he live in the city. Are there many flowers in the garden before your house? Yes, sir; there is a great abundance of roses and of white lilies, but there are no pinks nor jessamines. Do you approve of your son's going to the theatre every night? I do not approve of his going often, and I am ignorant that he has been (there) this winter. What o'clock is it? It is half past nine; it is time for us to go home. Is it important for you to be at home early? Yes, sir; it is necessary for me to go to the ball with my sister at ten. How long have you been here? I have been here since ten minutes after six. How long have you studied Spanish? I have studied it these two months. Can you find me a teacher who is learned? (see Les. 85, Rule III.) Yes, sir; I know one who is very learned. Can you buy me a house which is large and beautiful? Yes, sir; my neighbor wishes to sell one which is large and beautiful. Have you a good servant? No, I can find no one who can do what I wish (see Les. 87, Rule IV). Have you orange-trees and lemon-trees in your yard? No, sir; but we have many apple-trees, pear-trees, and fig-trees.

Have you been to see the country-seat which Mrs. D. bought? Not yet, but I have been told that it is the picture of a delicious garden. Certainly, it is necessary for you to go and see it. I have passed a week in it, and never in my life have I been so amused, because besides the affability of all the family, and their (*el*) desire to please, the abundance of fruit and flowers is so great that a boat could be loaded. The garden is before the house; in it you might find roses, pinks, jessamines, white lilies, sunflowers, and many other flowers, which

[illegible] the names of *lemon* or *lemons*). Behind [illegible] walk of fig-trees, where there are [illegible] fig-trees, and lemon- [illegible] was a pine-apple orchard, [illegible] that they filled the air [illegible] *perfume* some, did you [illegible] and apples, which were the [illegible] the pears, the peaches, and the [illegible] great! I believe that next [illegible]

[illegible] see him when I see Les. [illegible] will you see the gardener? [illegible] when you are in the [illegible] garden. That servant is [illegible] is? He thinks [illegible] learned his lesson, but [illegible] studious? I believe [illegible] roads in the country? [illegible] Les. 88. Rem. [illegible] an hour since I [illegible] your brother! [illegible] give this book to my [illegible] is mine? No, sir; he [illegible] that he has some yet. [illegible] that he has learned [illegible]

[illegible] *memoria* le [illegible] *memorable*, por la re- [illegible] *primera* [illegible] *memoria* Wash-

[illegible] *guerreros*, [illegible] *ambiciosos* [illegible] *héroe* [illegible] *Norte* [illegible] *navegantes*

hoy. Nació Washington, y con su nacimiento dió Dios á los oprimidos[17] súbditos[18] de la Gran Bretaña[19] un hermano que les indicase[20] el medio[21] de quebrantar[22] las fuertes cadenas de bárbara opresion.[23] Nació Washington, y ocultándose para siempre el sol sangriento[24] de la esclavitud,[25] apareció[26] dulce y apacible la brillante aurora[27] de gloriosa[28] libertad.

Washington, que desde la edad de veinte años manifestaba ya su firmeza y lealtad;[29] Washington, que durante su vida no cesó de afanarse[30] por lograr[31] la felicidad eterna de su amada pátria, murió hace ya medio siglo; pero no ha muerto, ni morirá jamas, en la memoria de sus hijos y de sus hermanos. En cada corazon amante[32] de la verdadera libertad tiene erijido un altar[33] donde se venerará[34] el nombre glorioso de Jorge Washington.

1, *El dia de hoy*, this day. 2, *Deberán*, must. 3, *Borrarse*, to be effaced. 4, *Norte Americano*, North American. 5, *Memorable*, memorable. 6, *Recuerdos*, remembrances. 7, *Ventura*, good fortune. 8, *Regocijo*, rejoicing. 9, *Evanecerse*, to vanish. 10, *Cruel*, cruel. 11, *Ensalzar*, to extol. 12, *Orgulloso*, proud. 13, *Ambicioso*, ambitious. 14, *Bendicion*, benediction. 15, *Aniversario*, anniversary. 16, *Recordar*, to commemorate. 17, *Oprimir*, to oppress. 18, *Súbdito*, subject. 19, *Gran Bretaña*, Great Britain. 20, *Indicar*, to point out. 21, *Medio*, means. 22, *Quebrantar*, to break. 23, *Opresion*, oppression. 24, *Sangriento*, bloody. 25, *Esclavitud*, slavery. 26, *Aparecer*, to appear. 27, *Aurora*, dawn. 28, *Glorioso*, glorious. 29, *Lealtad*, loyalty. 30, *Afanarse*, to toil. 31, *Lograr*, to gain. 32, *Amante*, loving. 33, *Altar*, altar. 34, *Venerarse*, to be venerated.

---

100. LECCION CENTÉSIMA.

PROPER NAMES

Latin and Greek proper names which in English end in *a*, *al*, *as*, *es*, or *is*, and the names of places ending in *a*, are generally the same in Spanish. A double consonant in English, however, becomes single in Spanish; and *ph* is changed into *f*; *ae*, *oe*, into *e*; *th* into *t*; *y* into *i*; *ch* before *e* or *i* into *qu*, and before *a*, *o*, *u*, into *c*; and those beginning with *S* followed by a consonant generally prefix an *E* in Spanish; as *Diana*, *Juvenal*, *Bias*, *Socrates*, *Anacársis*, *Asia*.

Dolabella. Philadelphia.	*Dolabela. Filadelfia.*
Æneas. Thales.	*Enéas. Tales.*
Pythagoras. Achilles.	*Pitágoras. Aquíles.*
Achates. Sparta.	*Acátes. Esparta.*

Those terminating in *o* commonly add *n*, and *us* final is changed to *o*; *ander* to *andro*, and *burg*, in the names of places, to *burgo*; as,

Pluto. Bacchus.	*Pluton. Baco.*

Lysander. *Hamburg.*	*Lisandro.* *Hamburgo.*
To rot. A *kid.*	*Podrir.* Un *chivo.*
Yo pudro, I rot,	*tú pudres,* thou rottest,	*él pudre,* he rots,	*nosotros podrimos,* we rot,	*vosotros podris,* you rot,	*ellos pudren,* they rot.
The figs rot on the ground.	Los higos se pudren en el suelo.
A *fowl*, *bird.* Domestic fowls.	Un *ave.* Aves domésticas.
A *hen-yard.* A *pigeon-house.*	Un *gallinero.* Un *palomar.*
There are many hens in that hen-yard.	Hay muchas gallinas en aquel gallinero.
A pigeon-house with many pigeons.	Un palomar con muchas palomas.
A *duck.* A *Guinea-hen.*	Un *pato.* Una *gallina de Guinea.*
I buy kids, ducks, and Guinea hens.	Yo compro chivos, patos, y gallinas de Guinea.
A *pigeon.* A *vegetable garden.*	Una *paloma.* Una *huerta.*
A *cart.* A *radish.*	Un *carro.* Un *rábano.*
A *cucumber.* An *egg-plant.*	Un *pepino.* Una *berengena.*
Tomato. *Beans.*	*Tomate.* *Frijoles.*
There are radishes, cucumbers and egg-plants in the garden.	Hay rábanos, pepinos, y berengenas en la huerta.
They have loaded a cart with tomatoes and beans.	Han cargado un carro de tomates y frijoles.
Hunting. *Fishing.*	La *caza.* La *pesca.*
There is hunting and fishing in the country.	Hay caza y pesca en el campo.
A *quail.* He shoots at quails.	Una *codorniz.* El tira á codornices.
A *brook.* A *dozen.*	Un *arroyo.* Una *docena.*
To wither. A *cocoa-nut.*	*Marchitar.* Un *coco.*
There is a brook in the midst of the city, where I caught with a net six dozen fish.	Hay un arroyo en el medio de la ciudad, donde pesqué con una red seis docenas de pescados.
The jessamines are withered.	Los jazmines están marchitos.
Delirium. An *interval.*	El *delirio.* Un *intérvalo.*
The *pulse.* *Suddenly.*	El *pulso.* *Repentinamente.*
In an interval of delirium he suddenly feels his pulse.	En un intérvalo de delirio él repentinamente se toma el pulso.
To bleed. They have bled him.	*Sangrar.* Le han sangrado.

Was Bacchus the son of Jupiter? He was the son of Jupiter and Semele, the daughter of Cadmus, king of Athens. Was Theseus an Athenian (*Ateniense*)? He was the son of Ægæus, king of the Athenians. Pluto was the third son of Saturnus. Æolus was the son of Jupiter, and king of the winds.

What does Mrs. D. do with all the fruit which she has in the garden of her country seat? I asked her, and she said that some she sold, others she gave away, some the family ate, and others rotted on the ground. If I were she, I would not let them rot; I would sooner (*primero*) give them to the pigs. I did not see any pigs there, but cows, sheep, kids, oxen, and horses. Are there no domestic fowls? She has a hen-yard, with more than five hundred hens, a pigeon-house, with more than two hundred pair of pigeons, and the yard was every day full of turkeys, ducks, geese, and Guinea hens. There is also a handsome vegetable garden, whence she sends to the market, every morning, a cart loaded with cabbages, turnips, radishes, cucumbers, egg-plants, lettuce, tomatoes, and beans of all kinds.

If there were hunting and fishing, I would go and pass a month there, because the lady has invited me many times. There is so much hunting that you would become weary of shooting at partridges, quails, rabbits, squirrels, and ducks. Is there a river there? There is no river, but there is a brook which passes through the middle of the yard, where in less than thirty minutes, you can catch with a hook two or three dozen fish. Did you pass (*pasaba*) the time hunting and fishing? Yes; I always went a hunting, but I never went to fish, because I do not like to fish with a hook. Was there no net? At (*en*) the country seat there was none, but a neighbor had one, I applied to borrow it of him (*se la pedí prestado*) one day, and he refused (*negó*) it to me. Why did you not bring me some flowers and fruits from there? I brought you a nosegay and some oranges, but as I was one week in the house of Mr. B. before coming to the city, the flowers of the nosegay lost their odor, because they withered, and the oranges rotted; but I bring you a cocoa-nut. Do you like cocoa-nuts? I like them very well, but if I should eat much I should be (*me pondria*) sick.

Which of these pears would you prefer? I should prefer this, because it is the riper. Is not Mr. Charles Brown rich? He is rich, but who would be (*parecerse*) like him? Never in my life have I seen such a miser (Les. 99, Rem. 4). Is your brother here? Yes, sir; did you think that he had gone away? I thought that he had gone away, and that you had gone away also. If we had had our money

we should have gone away yesterday. Will you go up to my room? Yes, sir; have you hired a room in the second story? It is in the third story, and if I had money I would buy furniture, a good stove, a mahogany wash-stand, some damask curtains, and I would carpet the floor.

The famous physician Chirac, being sick of the disease with which he died, after some days of delirium, in a short interval, suddenly felt his pulse, and said, "I have been called very late; have they bled him?" "No," answered they to him. "Then," said he, "he is a dead man," and he said the truth.

Hércules sufrió toda su vida los efectos del rencor[1] de Juno, que con la esperanza[2] de hacerle morir impelió[3] á Euristeo[4] á que le obligase[5] á acometer[6] las doce difíciles y peligrosas[7] empresas conocidas bajo el nombre de *trabajos de Hércules.*

El primero fué matar al leon Nemeo[8] de la floresta[9] llamada Nemea, que tenia devastado[10] todo aquel país. Hércules le atacó,[11] y le forzó[12] á meterse[13] huyendo en una caverna, en donde no pudiendo escaparse,[14] le pudo cojer por el cuello y ahogarle.[15] Luego le quitó la piel,[16] que llevó siempre encima[17] como trofeo[18] de su primera victoria.

Habia una serpiente en la laguna Lernea, llamada comunmente Hidra, aun mas espantosa[19] que el leon Nemeo, con siete cabezas, á la cual, cuando se la cortaba una, le renacian[20] en el mismo paraje[21] otras muchas, pero Hércules de un solo golpé de su clava[22] las cortó todas.

Cogió y presentó[23] vivo á Euristeo un terrible[24] jabalí[25] que tenia asolada[26] la Arcadia, y que se guarecia[27] en el monte Erimanto.[28]

Le perseguia[29] durante un año, hasta que consiguió[30] traspasarlo[31] con sus flechas, una cierva[32] que tenia los piés de cobre y los cuernos[33] de oro, tambien muy dañosa[34] á los campos de Arcadia vecinos del monte Menalo.[35]

1, *Rencor*, long continued hatred. 2, *Esperanza*, hope. 3, *Impeler*, to impel. 4, *Euristeo*, Euristheus. 5, *Obligar*, to oblige. 6, *Acometer*, to undertake. 7, *Peligroso*, dangerous. 8, *Nemeo*, Nermean. 9, *Floresta*, forest. 10, *Devastado*, devastated. 11, *Atacar*, to attack. 12, *Forzar*, to force. 13, *Meterse*, to betake himself. 14, *Escaparse*, to escape. 15, *Ahogar*, to strangle. 16, *Piel*, skin. 17, *Encima*, on him. 18, *Trofeo*, trophy. 19, *Espantoso*, terrific. 20, *Renacer*, to grow again. 21, *Paraje*, place. 22, *Clava*, club. 23, *Presentar*, to present. 24, *Terrible*, terrible. 25, *Jabalí*, wild boar. 26, *Asolado*, desolated. 27, *Guarecerse*, to take refuge. 28, *Erimanto*, Erimanthus. 29, *Perseguir*, to pursue. 30, *Conseguir*, to succeed. 31, *Traspasar*, to transfix. 32, *Cierva*, deer. 33, *Cuerno*, horn. 34, *Dañoso*, hurtful. 35, *Menalo*, Menalus.

101. LECCION CENTÉSIMA PRIMERA.

MEASURES, ETC.

To send for. To go for.	*Mandar á buscar Ir á buscar.*
He sends for wine. He goes for wine.	El manda á buscar vino. El va á buscar vino.
He has gone for his book.	El ha ido á buscar su libro.
I have sent for the mason.	He mandado á buscar al albañil.
We will send for the physician.	Mandaremos á buscar al médico.
They have gone for him.	Han ido á buscarle.
A *building-lot. To build.*	Un *solar. Fabricar.*
Wood, timber. Exposed.	*Madera. Espuesto.*
The *plan.* A *yard.*	El plano. Una *vara.*
He has bought a building lot, and he wishes to build a wooden house.	El ha comprado un solar, y quiere fabricar una casa de madera.
To surround. A *gallery.*	*Rodear.* Una *galería.*
Surrounded with galleries.	Rodeado de galerías.
Depth. Thickness.	*Fondo. Espesura.*

REMARK 1. To express dimensions, where the English use *to be* with an adjective, the Spanish generally use *tener* with *de* and a noun.

How high is that wall?	¿ Cuanto *tiene de alto* esa pared?
It is four yards high.	Tiene cuatro varas de alto.
It is two feet thick.	Tiene dos piés de espesura.
It is twenty feet wide.	Tiene veinte piés de *ancho.*
The lot is twenty yards deep.	El solar tiene veinte varas de fondo.
The *parlor. A square. Square.*	La *sala.* Un *cuadro. En cuadro.*
Ground. The *computation.*	*Terreno.* La *cuenta.*
To occupy. In that case.	*Ocupar. En ese caso.*
The parlor is twenty feet long.	La sala tiene veinte piés *de largo.*
The house occupies much ground.	La casa ocupa mucho terreno.
I shall be exposed to be burnt.	Seré espuesto á quemarme.
To diminish. To enlarge.	*Disminuir. Aumentar.*
The *kitchen. Sufficient.*	La *cocina. Suficiente.*
Inconvenient. A *well.*	*Inconveniente.* Un *pozo.*
Depth. To measure.	*Profundidad. Medir,* (as *pedir,* Les. 58.)
The *materials.* Make the computation.	Los *materiales.* Haga la cuenta.
In that case, I will diminish the parlor and enlarge the kitchen.	En ese caso, yo disminuiré la sala y aumentaré la cocina.

The *length*. The *breadth*. The *heighth*.	El *largo*. El *ancho*. El *alto*.
To dig. To get dug.	*Cavar*. Hacer cavar.
There is ground sufficient to build a large house.	Hay terreno suficiente para fabricar una casa grande.
Have you measured the depth of that well?	¿Ha medido V. la profundidad de ese pozo?
It is twenty-five feet deep.	Tiene veinte y cinco piés de profundidad.
This kitchen is not convenient, it is twenty feet long, but it is only ten wide.	Esta cocina no es conveniente, tiene veinte piés de largo, pero no tiene sino diez de ancho.
There are the materials here for building a wooden house, which may be forty feet long, thirty feet wide, and thirty-five feet high.	Hay aquí los materiales para fabricar una casa de madera, que tenga cuarenta piés de largo, treinta piés de ancho, y treinta y cinco piés de alto.
He has got a well dug.	El ha hecho cavar un pozo.

Some one knocks at the door, go and see who it is. Sir, it is the mason whom you sent for. Tell him to enter and sit down. Enter, master, and sit down. Is the owner (*amo*) at home? Yes, sir; there he comes. Good morning, Mr. Diego, I have sent for you, because I have bought a building lot, and I wish to build a house such as (*como*) I may tell you. Of what do you wish it, of brick or of wood? Of brick, in order (*por*) to be less exposed to be burnt. Tell me how you wish it, in order to make the plan before beginning it. The building lot is fifteen yards in (*de*) front, and seventy deep. I wish the house to be surrounded by galleries two yards and a half wide; the walls must (*han de*) be two feet thick, and six yards high; the parlor should be six yards wide, and eight long. On each side of the parlor I wish two rooms, four yards square, and the wall which divides them to be only half a yard thick. Sir, it is impossible that the rooms can be four yards square, because there is not so much ground. I am going to make you the computation.

The building lot, as (*segun*) you say, is fifteen yards in front. You wish the two galleries to occupy five yards, the breadth of the parlor six, the walls of the sides one yard and a foot, already there are twelve yards and one foot, for (*á*) fifteen yards it wants (*van*) two yards and two feet, which is solely (*unicamente*) the breadth which

the rooms will be able to have; and then they would be so narrow, that hardly a bed could be contained in each one of them. Now (*ya*) I think that they will be very narrow; but in that case, I will diminish the parlor, and will enlarge half a yard the rooms. That is another thing. We will make the parlor (of) five yards and a half wide, and the rooms (of) three yards and one foot wide. Where do you wish the kitchen and the stable? At (*en*) the bottom of the yard. And where (*por donde*) will the carriage enter? Do you not see that the yard looks to the other street? On one side we will make a gate with the height and breadth sufficient, so that (*para que*) a carriage may be able to enter. The yard is sufficiently long, and it appears to me there is no inconvenience in (*para*) building two or three little rooms to put (*donde poner*) wood, coal, and other things (in). How does it seem to you? They appear to me as necessary as a well.

Before beginning to build, I wish to get a well dug in the middle of the yard. At what depth do you believe that we shall find water? Let us measure the depth which the neighbor's has, and a little more or less we shall be able to know. It is already the hour of dining, if you like you will dine with me; and if not, go home, make the plan, and bring it to me to-morrow, with the computation of the materials which are necessary to begin to build. I thank you. Adieu until to-morrow.

What would you wish the servant to put on your bed? I should wish for a feather bed, a pillow, two sheets, two blankets, and two coverlets, for I am very sensitive to cold. Do you believe that your friend is coming? I believe that he has come. Did you believe yesterday that he would come? I believed that he had come yesterday. When will he go away? If his brother should come, he will go away to-morrow. I come to borrow your gun, will you lend it to me? I would lend it to you if I had it, but my cousin borrowed it last week and has kept it.

Hércules ojeó[1] y echó[2] para siempre del pais de Arcadia unos pájaros[3] de tamaño y fuerzas extraordinarias,[4] que habitaban en las orillas del lago de Estinfalia,[5] y que devoraban á todos los pasageros.[6]

Aun se adquirió mas gloria con la derrota[7] de las Amazonas, á quienes acometió[8] junto al rio Termodonte.[9] Estas mujeres, que habitaban la Escitia, criaban[10] á sus hijas en el ejercicio[11] de las armas, y estropeaban[12] ó mataban á los hijos varones.[13]

Libró[14] la tierra de los crueles tiranos: el primero, llamado Diomédes, rey de Tracia, que hacia devorar por caballos furiosos[15] á los estranjeros[16] que llegaban á sus estados; el segundo, Busiris, hijo de Neptuno y de Libia, que sacrificaba á Júpiter todos los estranjeros, é iba á hacer lo mismo con Hércules.

Gerion, rey de España, que era igual en crueldad[17] á estos tiranos, hacia alimentar[18] con carne humana unos bueyes que tenia, y que hacia guardar por un perro con tres cabezas, y por un dragon[19] con siete: pero Hércules no solo mató á estos mónstruos, sinó tambien al mismo Gerion, que dicen tenia tres cuerpos, bien sea[20] porque era dueño de las tres Islas Baleares, ó bien porque eran tres hermanos de un mismo nombre, y tan unidos[21] que parecian no formar mas que un solo hombre.

Acreditó[22] su fuerza y destreza[23] limpiando[24] las caballerizas de Augias, rey de Elida,[25] cuya pudredumbre[26] infestaba[27] toda la Grecia, domando[28] un toro feroz que Neptuno, en un acceso[29] de cólera,[30] produjo[31] para arruinar[32] la Grecia; sosteniendo el cielo con sus hombros, en lugar de Atlante, miéntras este cogia las manzanas de oro del jardin de las Hespírides.

1, *Ojear*, to rouse (game.) 2, *Echar*, to drive away. 3, *Pájaro*, bird. 4, *Extraordinario*, extraordinary. 5, *Estinfalia*, Stymphalia. 6, *Pasagero*, traveler. 7, *Derrota*, rout. 8, *Acometer*, to attack. 9, *Termodonte*, Thermodon. 10, *Creer*, to train. 11, *Ejercicio*, exercise. 12, *Estropear*, to maim. 13, *Varon*, male. 14, *Librar*, to free. 15, *Furioso*, furious. 16, *Estranjero*, stranger. 17, *Crueldad*, cruelty. 18, *Alimentar*, to feed. 19, *Dragon*, dragon. 20, *Bien sea*, it may be. 21, *Unido*, united. 22, *Acreditar*, to prove. 23, *Destreza*, dexterity. 24, *Limpiar*, to clean. 25, *Elida*, Elis. 26, *Pudredumbre*, putrefaction. 27, *Infestar*, to infest. 28, *Domar*, to subdue. 29, *Acceso*, access. 30, *Cólera*, anger. 31, *Producir*, to produce. 32, *Arruinar*, to destroy. 33, *Atlante*, atlas.

---

102. LECCION CENTÉSIMA Y SEGUNDA.

MISCELLANEOUS EXERCISES.

The *building*. *To be born*.	La *fábrica*. *Nacer*, (varied as *conocer*, Les. 39.)
I was born the sixth of July, eighteen hundred and ten.	Yo nací el seis de Julio de mil ochocientos y diez.

A *catarrh*, *cold*.	Una *fluxion*.
To oblige. *To be necessary*.	*Obligar*. *Necesitarse*.
The cold obliges him to keep his bed.	La fluxion le obliga á guardar cama.
The *roof*. The *importance*.	El *techo*. La *importancia*.
Lime. *Sand*.	*Cal*. *Arena*.
Mortar. A *slate*.	*Mezcla*. Una *pizarra*.
Many barrels of lime and sand are necessary for mortar.	Muchos barriles de cal y de arena se necesitan para mezcla.
The roof is covered with slate.	El techo es cubierto de pizarras.
To contract for. A *lock*.	*Contratar*. Una *cerradura*.
A *blacksmith*. *To paint*.	Un *herrero*. *Pintar*.
We will contract for locks and nails with a blacksmith.	Contrataremos cerraduras y clavos con un herrero.
I will get my house painted.	Haré pintar mi casa.
An *account*. A *laborer*.	Una *cuenta*. Un *peon*.
The laborers are on my account.	Los peones son de mi cuenta.
Taste, *liking*. To my liking.	*Gusto*. A mi gusto.
A *contract*. A *notary*.	Una *obligacion*. Un *notario*.
We will make a contract.	Haremos una obligacion.
A *well-digger*. The *size*.	Una *pozero*. El *tamaño*.
The well-digger has dug me a well.	El pozero me ha cavado un pozo.
To lighten. It lightens in the west.	*Relampaguear*. Relampaguea por el occidente.
A *sign*. To *thunder*.	Un *señal*. *Tronar* (varied as *mover*, Les. 37.)
It thunders in the south.	Truena por el sud.
Hail, *hailstones*. A *rare occurrence*.	*Granizos*. Una *rareza*.
Hailstones do much *damage*.	Los granizos hacen muchos *perjuicios*.
Damage. A sign of rain.	*Perjuicio*. Un señal de lluvia.
Thunder and lightning are signs that it is going to rain.	El trueno y el relámpago son señales de que va á llover.
Hailstones sometimes fall of the size of a hen's egg.	Caen algunas veces granizos del tamaño de un huevo de gallina.
To repair. He has repaired the fault.	*Reparar*. El ha reparado la falta.

Remark. We have seen that the objective pronouns are annexed so as to form a single word with *the imperative*, *the infinitive*, and *the present participle*. This, though not common, is admissible, especially in poetry, with all the other parts of the verb, except the *past participle*, the *present*, the *future*, and the third form of the *imperfect* subjunctive. The first person plural drops its final *s*, and the second its final *d*, when followed by the reflective pronoun.

Let us go away. Let us take a walk.	Vámonos. Paseémonos.
Remember ye what I say.	Acordaos de lo que digo.

* y despues de haberse tajado y puéstose en pacífica posesion de - D. Quijote - Vol. II. cap. XXX 2d vol. Lond. p. 415

We shave ourselves.	Afeitámonos (better, nos afeitamos.)
He saw me.	Vióme (better me vió.)

In what year were you born? I was born in eighteen hundred and thirty-five. My cousin and I were born the same year. I was born the first of March and he the tenth of May. Were your parents born in this country? No, sir; my brothers and sisters were born in this country, but my parents were born in Europe. (Les. 48, Rem. 2.) How many years old are you? (See Les. 47.) I am almost eighteen years old, and my brother is fifteen years and six months (old.) He was born the sixth of August eighteen hundred and thirty-eight. Have you a double-barreled gun now? Yes; my father bought me one last week; because I am able to maintain a conversation in Spanish. I have studied almost all the grammar; I have learnt by heart, the regular and the irregular verbs; my master is a good one, and speaks much with me, and now I can maintain a conversation in this language. p. 110.

Good evening Mr. Rafael. Good evening Master Diego. Where have you been, that I have not seen you since the day that we spoke of the building? Sir; when I returned home, I had (*fué con*) a cold and a headache, so violent (*fuerte*) that they obliged me to keep my bed until this morning. I regret much that you have been sick, but it appears that now (*ya*) you are better; are you not? Yes, sir; I am well, thank God (*gracias á Dios*) at your service. Have you made the plan, and the computation of the materials, which are necessary? Yes, sir; here I bring them. See first, if the house is drawn, in the manner that you told me. All is good except the roof of the rooms in the (*del*) yard, which appears to me lower than that of the kitchen. Sir, that is a thing of small importance, and easy to repair, I will make it equal with that of the kitchen. It appears to me better that they be equal.

Tell me now the materials which you need. Sir, I need fifteen thousand brick, fifty barrels of lime, a hundred and fifty of sand for mortar, five thousand nine hundred slates for the roof. The doors, the windows, and the timber for the roof and the floor, you can contract for with a carpenter, and the locks and the nails, with a black-

smith; and if you wish to paint the doors and the windows, my brother-in-law is a painter, and he can paint them cheaper than any other. How much do you ask me for your work? If it be on my account, to pay the laborers, you will give me two thousand seven hundred dollars; but if you pay them, you will give me one thousand nine hundred. I prefer paying you the two thousand seven hundred dollars, and you will pay and look for the laborers, to your liking. Let us make a contract. To-morrow we will go to the house of a notary, and will make it; now I am going to look for a well-digger, that he may begin to-morrow early to dig the well. Go and see the carpenter, and tell him the height and the breadth which the doors and windows ought to have; and if you have time, go and see also the blacksmith, and tell him the size which the locks ought to have. Sir, in the stores there are locks and nails of all sizes; it appears to me better to buy them made, and they will be cheaper. You say very well.

Do you not see that it is lightening in the south? Yes; I see that it is lightening, and it is also thundering. That is a sure sign that it is going to rain; do you not know it? Perhaps it is so; but many times it thunders and lightens and does not rain; and at other times you see it rain, and do not hear thunder, nor see lightning. When thunder-bolts fall are you not afraid? I do not fear that bolts may fall, but I fear that hail may fall. Do you fear hail more than thunderbolts? Yes; because it is a rare occurrence for a thunderbolt to fall and kill a person; but when hailstones fall, as I have seen them fall, of the size of a pigeon's egg, they do much damage.

Pluton, tercer hijo de Saturno y Cibeles,[1] reinaba en los infiernos. Dicese que no muy contento con su suerte,[2] se quejaba[3] de la particion[4] que Júpiter habia hecho del reino de su padre. No queriendo ninguna diosa casarse con él, á causa[5] de su figura, y de la oscuridad[6] de su reino, tomó el partido[7] de robar[8] á Proserpina, hija de la diosa Ceres, un dia que se divertia[9] en coger flores, en los campos de Sicilia. La ninfa Cyane que estaba á la sazon[10] con ella, se opuso[11] al rapto,[12] y no pudiendo estorbarlo,[13] iba á dar parte[14] á Ceres de lo sucedido;[15] pero al punto[16] perdió la voz,[17] y fué convertida en arroyo. Proserpina se fué acostumbrando á Pluton y á su nueva morada,[18] de tal suerte, que

cuañdo Ceres, que la buscó por todo el mundo, bajó[19] á los infiernos, ya no quiso seguirla.

A Pluton, se le representa[20] sobre un carro tirado de caballos negros, una corona de ébano[21] en la cabeza, y unas llaves en la mano, en la que, algunas veces tambien, le suelen[22] poner por cetro un bidente;[23] y á Proserpina de la misma suerte, ó sentada en el carro al lado de su marido.

El reino de Pluton, que comunmente es llamado la mansion de las sombras ó de los muertos, que estaba circundado de cinco rios, y cuya entrada guardaba el can Cerbero,[24] perro de tres cabezas, comprendia los campos Eliseos,[25] que eran unos deliciosos jardines, adonde iban los hombres virtuosos, y el Ténaro ó Tártaro, lugar destinado á los castigos,[26] y adonde iban los malvados.[27]

1, *Cibeles*, Cybele. 2, *Suerte*, lot. 3, *Quejarse*, to complain. 4, *Particion*, division. 5, *A causa*, because. 6, *Oscuridad*, darkness. 7, *Partido*, resolution. 8, *Robar*, to carry off. 9, *Divertirse*, to amuse one's self. 10, *Sazon*, time. 11, *Oponer*, to oppose. 12, *Rapto*, carrying off. 13, *Estorbar*, to hinder. 14, *Dar parte*, to inform. 15, *Sucedido*, event. 16, *Al punto*, at the moment. 17, *Voz*, voice. 18, *Morada*, abode. 19, *Bajar*, to descend. 20, *Representarse*, to be represented. 21, *Ebano*, ebony. 22, *Soler*, to be accustomed. 23, *Bidente*, instrument with two prongs. 24, *Can cerbero*, dog Cerberus. 25, *Eliseo*, elysian. 26, *Castigo*, chastisement. 27, *Malvado*, wicked.

---

103. LECCION CENTÉSIMA Y TERCERA.

MISCELLANEOUS EXERCISES.

To shave one's self, also, *to be shaved.*	*Afeitarse.*
I wish to have my hair cut.	Quiero cortarme el *pelo.*
A *barber's shop.* A *razor.*	Una *barberia.* Una *navaja.*
To wound, *to cut.* The *beard.*	*Herir*, (as *preferir*, Les. 35.) La *barba*, las *barbas.*
To sharpen, *to whet.*	*Amolar*, (varied as *mover*, Les. 37.)
A *whet-stone.* *Scissors*, *shears.*	Una *piedra de amolar.* *Tijeras.*
To cook. *To saw.*	*Cocinar.* *Aserrar*, (as *cerrar*, Les. 38.)
A *saw.* *Ingenious.*	Una *sierra.* *Ingenioso.*
I sharpen my razors and shears.	Amuelo mis navajas y tijeras.
A saw for sawing the wood.	Una sierra de aserrar la leña.
He saws the wood for cooking.	El asierra la leña para cocinar.
I always cut myself when I shave.	Siempre me corto cuando me afeito.
That blacksmith is very ingenious.	Ese herrero es muy ingenioso.

To drive in. To strike, to beat.	*Clavar. Golpear.*
A *misfortune. To remedy.*	Una *desgracia. Remediar.*
He strikes the nail, and drives it in with a hammer.	El golpea el clavo, y le clava con un martillo.
To stay. I can not stay.	*Detenerse*, (as *tener*, Les. 13.) No puedo detenerme.
Near. Near my house.	*Cerca de.* Cerca de mi casa.
The *funeral.* I am going to the funeral.	El *funeral* (*entierro*). Voy al funeral (entierro).
The *grinder. Serious.* A *trick.*	El *amolador. Serio.* Una *burla.*
Rarely. He laughs but rarely.	*Rara vez.* No se rie sinó rara vez.
The grinder sharpens the razors.	El amolador amuela las navajas.
He is very serious. *To continue.*	El es muy serio. *Continuar.*
I wish you to continue the anecdote.	Quiero que V. continue el chiste.
The *custom.* According to the custom of the country.	El *uso.* Al uso del campo.
To comb. The barber combs him.	*Peinar.* El barbero le peina.
To stop. He stops.	*Pararse.* El se para.
The *shaving* is worth a shilling.	La *barba* vale un real.
To mean. The *shaving.*	*Querer decir.* La *barba.*
What does that mean?	¿ Que quiere decir eso?
I have to learn my lesson.	Tengo que aprender mi leccion.
He has to write a letter.	El tiene que escribir una carta.
They must go home.	Tienen que ir á su casa.

Friend Blas, whence do you come so early? I went to be shaved; but it appears that the barber is sick, because the barber's shop has been shut since the day before yesterday. Have you no razor to shave yourself? I have never been able to shave, without cutting myself. Is it possible that a poor man like you expends money upon (*en*) a barber? I am rich, and since I have had a beard, I have shaved myself, without needing a barber, except to (*sinó para que*) cut my hair (*pelo*). I have a pair of razors, which, when they do not cut well, I sharpen myself; because I have a whet-stone. How! do you also know how to sharpen? Yes, I sharpen my knives, my scissors, and sometimes my servant sharpens the axe, and the saw for sawing the wood to cook. You are very ingenious, but I am so lazy that I do not like even (*ni aun*) to drive a nail into the wall, not to have (*por no tener*) the labor of striking with the hammer. That is a great (*mucha*) misfortune for a poor man. I know

it, but it is not in my power (*manos*) to remedy it, because from a youth I have been an enemy to laboring. I cannot stay. Adieu.

Do not go away, Blas. Come with me. Where do you wish us to go? Let us go and see if a carpenter, who lives near the wharf, can make me a bureau and a wash-stand. It is very far from here there, and I wish to be shaved and have my hair cut before nine, because I have to go to the funeral of Mr. D. I also am going; we will go together. Let us go first to the funeral, and after that we will go to see the carpenter. In front of the carpenter's shop (*carpintería*), where we are going, there is a barber's shop; there we can be shaved, and have our hair cut. The fact (*caso*) is that I carry no money to pay the barber. Nor I either, but the barber knows me, and will shave us on credit; and if not, we will borrow of him a razor, some scissors, and a piece of soap, and we will shave ourselves and have our hair cut. If it is so, let us go.

Now we are at the barber's shop—let us enter. Master Thomas, we bring no money; can you shave us and cut our hair on credit, or lend us a razor and some shears? Sir, all the razors and shears which I had in the shop, I gave last night to the grinder, in order that he should sharpen them, and he has not brought them yet. What shall we do now, Blas?

I remember a trick which a countryman played upon (*hizo á*) a barber. Tell it to me. In my country there was a barber who was called master Paul (*Pablo*), and this said (*tal*) barber was so serious that he never laughed, and spoke but rarely. One day there arrived at his shop a countryman, and said to him, Master Paul, will you shave me according to the custom of the country? Before continuing the anecdote, I wish to inform (*hacer saber*) you, that the countrymen, in the country, when they have no looking-glass, or can not shave themselves, shave each other (*los unos á los otros*).

Master Paul, believing that to shave according to the custom of the country, was to shave soon and without delay (*prolijidad*), answered him, yes, sir; made the countryman sit down, shaved him, and as soon as he had washed his face, and combed him, he stopped before him, waiting (*esperando*) for him to pay him. But seeing that the countryman, instead of paying him, asked him for the razor and

the soap, asked him why (*para que*) he wished for them. To shave you, replied the countryman. I do not need you to shave me, replied Master Paul; I know how to shave myself when I wish. What you ought to do is to pay me a shilling, which is what the shaving is worth. Master Paul, I owe you no shilling, replied the countryman. Before entering into your shop, I asked you if you were willing to shave me according to the custom of the country, and you answered me yes, sir. What I am bound (*debo*) to do now is, to shave you as you have shaved me; and this is what shaving according to the custom of the country means.

Let us go now and see if we can find a barber who is willing to shave us according to the custom of the country. George, to what church do you go? I go to that of father Maho. Did you hear what he preached (*predicó*) last Sunday? I arrived when he was saying: "My brethren, you are (Les. 13, Rem. 3,) the sheep, and I am your shepherd (*pastor.*) You had no refuge (*refugio*), and I have provided (*proporcionado*) you one, in this church. But it is necessary for you to know, that I bought the ground on which I have built it on credit. I owe the carpenters, masons, and painters, who have worked on it, fifteen hundred dollars, and if you do not buy the seats (*asientos*), I shall not be able to pay them, and it will be necessary to sell the church in order to pay the debts. Think of (*en*) me, as I think of you.

Despues de haber visitado las diversas[1] provincias que componen la monarquía[2] de España, hallo ser muy verdadero el informe[3] que me habia dado Nuño de estas provincias.

En efecto los cantabros,[4] entendiendo por este nombre todos los que hablan el idioma[5] vizcaino,[6] son unos pueblos sencillos y de notoria[7] probidad.[8] Fueron los primeros marineros de Europa, y han mantenido siempre la fama de excelentes hombres de mar.[9] Su pais, aunque sumamente[10] áspero,[11] tiene una poblacion numerosísima, que no parece disminuirse[12] con las continuas[13] colonias que envia á la América. Aunque un vizcaino se ausente de su patria, siempre se halla en ella como se encuentre un paisano suyo. El señorio[14] de Vizcaya,[15] Guipúzcoa, Alava, y el reyno de Navarra[16] tienen tal pacto[17] entre sí, que algunos llaman á estos paises las provincias unidas de España.

Los de Asturias y de las Montañas hacen sumo aprecio de su genealogía,[18] y de la memoria de haber sido aquel pais el que produjo[19] la reconquista[20] de Es-

paña, con la expulsion de nuestros abuelos.[21] Su poblacion demasiada para la miseria y estrechez[22] de la tierra, hace que un número considerable de ellos se emplee continuamente en Madrid en la librea,[23] que es la clase inferior de criados. Sin embargo de todo esto, varias familias respetables[24] de esta provincia se mantienen con el debido[25] lustre,[26] son acredoras[27] á la mayor consideracion, y producen continuamente oficiales[28] del mas alto mérito[29] en el ejército[30] y marina.[31]

1, *Diversos*, various. 2, *Monarquía*, monarchy. 3, *Informe*, information. 4, *Cantabros*, Cantabrians. 5, *Idioma*, idiom. 6, *Vizcaino*, Biscayan. 7, *Notorio*, notable. 8, *Probidad*, probity. 9, *Hombres de mar*, seamen. 19, *Sumamente*, extremely. 11, *Aspero*, rough. 12, *Disminuirse*, to be diminished. 13, *Continuo*, continual. 14, *Señorio*, lordship. 15, *Vizcaya*, Biscay. 16, *Navarra*, Navarre. 17, *Pacto*, compact. 18, *Genealogía*, genealogy. 19, *Producir*, to produce. 20, *Reconquista*, re-conquest. 21, *Abuelos*, ancestors. 22, *Estrechez*, poverty. 23, *Librea*, livery. 24, *Respetable*, respectable. 25, *Debido*, due. 26, *Lustre*, splendor. 27, *Acredora*, granted. 28, *Oficial*, officer. 29, *Mérito*, merit. 30, *Ejército*, army. 31, *Marina*, navy.

---

104. LECCION CENTÉSIMA Y CUARTA.

MISCELLANEOUS EXERCISES.

To enjoy. To hear (something said.) — *Gozar de. Oír decir.*

Health. I enjoy good health — La *salud.* Yo gozo de buena salud.

I heard that he was sick. — Yo oí decir que él estaba enfermo.

The *opposite. Naturally.* — El *contrario. Naturalmente.*

He is the opposite. He is naturally quiet. — El es al contrario. Es naturalmente pacífico.

Quiet. To mistake. — *Pacífico. Equivocarse.*

Age. How old is he? — *Edad.* ¿Que edad tiene él?

He is older than I. — Tiene mas edad que yo.

He is fourteen and going on fifteen years old. — Tiene catorce y va (á entrar) en los quince años.

You mistake, he is fifteen and going on sixteen. — V. se equivoca, tiene quince y va en diez y seis.

Observe the use of *y va* in the two last phrases.

Exactly. To complete. — *Exactamente. Cumplir.*

He has completed his sixteenth year. — El ha cumplido diez y seis años.

Precisely. To become widower, or *widow.* — *Justamente. Enviudar.*

Nuptials. Infantry. — *Nupcias. Infantería.*

He will marry a second time.	El se casará en segundas nupcias.
The *governor*. The *peculiarity*.	El *gobernador*. La *particularidad*.
Miss Emily Peters is the daughter of the governor.	Doña Amelia Peters es hija del gobernador.
He died last week.	Murió la semana pasada.
Strange. A *widow*, *widower*.	*Estraño*. Una *viuda*, *viudo*.
To permit.	*Permitir*.
He permits his son to travel.	El permite que su hijo viaje.
The *duchess*. The *writer*.	La *duquesa*. El *escritor*.
To mark. A watch marks the hours.	*Marcar*. Un reloj marca las horas.
Highness. Your highness.	*Alteza*. Vuestra alteza.
An *officer*. *To repel*.	Un *oficial*. *Rechazar*.
To prepare. *Food*, *eatables*.	*Preparar*. *Manjares*.
To vex. *To cry*, *to cry out*.	*Enfadar*. *Gritar*.
He repulsed his child.	El rechazó á su niño.
That widow will marry again soon.	Aquella viuda volverá á casarse pronto.
He has just died.	El acaba de morir.

Being the other day on a visit, I heard that Mrs. D. was older than her husband (*esposo*); do you believe it, Mr. Lewis? Do not doubt it, Mr. Gaspar; because I remember the day on (*en*) which Mrs. D. was born, and that on which her husband was born, and I know that she is six years older than he. But, as she is so lively, and has always enjoyed good health, without having suffered any misfortune, she appears a young person (youth) of twenty years. Her husband is the opposite, because besides being naturally quiet, he has always been a very infirm (*enfermo*) man, and has suffered many misfortunes since the year one thousand eight hundred and twenty-nine.

In what year was Mrs. D. born? If I mistake not, she was born the fifteenth of January, eighteen hundred; and her husband was born the fourteenth of February, eighteen hundred and six. That is to say (*es decir*), she is fifty-five and going on (*va á entrar en*) fifty-six; and her husband is forty-nine and going on fifty. Exactly, and how many years old do you believe that I am? You may (*puede*) be sixty years old, or very near that. I am much older than that, because I was born the fifteenth of June, seventeen hundred and eighty-five. Then to-day you complete your seventieth year.

Those are precisely the years of my age (*que tengo.*) And you seem a boy who can still marry. No, never; since I became a widower of my (*la*) second wife, I have not thought of marrying a third time.

I did not know that you had been a widower, and married a second time. Whom did you marry the first time? I married, in Madrid, the daughter of a captain of infantry; and in the second nuptials, I married here the daughter of the governor. And have you had no sons? Yes, sir; I have had three, by the first wife, and one by the second. Have they all been born here? No, sir; each one has been born in a different place; but, with the peculiarity, that the first was born in Madrid, the first day of September, eighteen hundred and twenty-five; the second was born in Cuba, the first of October, eighteen hundred and twenty-nine; the third was born here the first of November, eighteen hundred and thirty-two. Are they dead or living? He that was born in Madrid, died the same day that he completed his fourteenth year; he that was born in Cuba is living; and he that was born here died the year past, three months after having married.

And were the others married? Do you not remember that I told you, that he who was born in Madrid, died the same day that he completed his fourteenth year? How could he have married? It is not strange that he should marry at that age, because a cousin of mine married in Cuba at fourteen years, being a widow of the first husband. The climate of Cuba is very different from that of Madrid, and the law permits there the woman to marry at that age; but it does not permit a man to marry, unless he be fifteen years old.

You have just said that your cousin married at fourteen years, being a widow of the first husband; how could that be at so young (*corta*) an age? She married at thirteen years, her first husband, and in (*á los*) five months after being married (*de casada*), she became a widow, and married a second time. Do you understand now? Yes, sir; I understand; but to become a widow at so tender (*tierna*) an age, and to marry again so soon, is a thing of which I do not approve.

A French officer had invited many persons to dinner. His son, who was only six years old, came to the table, but his father repelled

him, saying to him that his beard was too short to dine with him. But his mother had a little table prepared for him, and ordered them to serve him with all the eatables that were on the table of his father. In the meantime, an old cat tried several times to carry off some, at (*por*) which, the child vexed, cried out: "Go and eat with my father, thy beard is (*tú que tienes la barba*) sufficiently long."

"What difference is there," asked the duchess of Maine of the writer La Mote, "between a watch and me?" "Madam duchess," replied La Mote, "a watch marks the hours, and your highness makes one forget them."

Los gallegos[1] en medio de la pobreza de su tierra son robustos; se esparcen por toda España á emprender[2] los trabajos mas duros. Sus soldados son excelentes para la infantería, por su subordinacion,[3] dureza[4] de cuerpo, y hábito[5] de sufrir incomodidades[6] de hambre, sed, y cansancio.[7]

Los castellanos[7] son de todos los pueblos del mundo los que merecen la primacía[8] en línea[9] de lealtad. Cuando el ejército del primer rey de España de la casa de Francia quedó arruinado en la batalla[10] de Zaragoza,[11] la sola provincia de Soria dió á su soberano un ejército nuevo y numeroso con que salir á campaña,[12] y fué el que ganó[13] las victorias, de que resultó[14] la destruccion[15] del ejército y bando austríaco.[16] El ilustre historiador que refiere las revoluciones del principio de este siglo, con todo el rigor[17] y verdad que pide la historia para distinguirse de la fábula,[18] pondera[19] tanto la fidelidad de estos pueblos, que dice será eterna[20] en la memoria de los reyes. Esta provincia aun conserva cierto orgullo[21] nacido de su antigua grandeza, que hoy no se conserva sinó en las ruinas de sus ciudades, y en la honradez[22] de sus habitantes.

Estremadura produjo los conquistadores del Nuevo mundo, y ha continuado siendo madre de insignes[23] guerreros. Sus pueblos son poco afectos[24] á las letras;[25] pero los que entre ellos las han cultivado, no han tenido ménos suceso[26] que sus patriotas[27] en las armas.

1, *Gallegos*, Galicians. 2, *Emprender*, to undertake. 3, *Subordenacion*, subordination. 4, *Dureza*, hardiness. 5, *Hábito*, habit. 6, *Incomodidad*, distress. 7, *Cansancio*, fatigue. 7, *Castellanos*, Castilians. 8, *Primacia*, precedency. 9, *Línea*, line (rank). 10, *Batalla*, battle. 11, *Zaragoza*, Saragossa. 12, *Salir á campaña*, to take the field. 13, *Ganar*, to gain. 14, *Resultar*, to result. 15, *Destruccion*, destruction. 16, *Bando austríaco*, Austrian faction. 17, *Rigor*, rigor. 18, *Fábula*, fable. 19, *Ponderar*, to weigh (estimate). 20, *Eterno*, eternal. 21, *Orgullo*, pride. 22, *Honradez*, honor. 23, *Insigne*, distinguished. 24, *Afecto*, inclined. 25, *Letras*, letters. 26, *Suceso*, success. 27, *Patriota*, countryman.

105. LECCION CENTÉSIMA Y QUINTA.

MISCELLANEOUS EXERCISES.

My good sir.	*Señor mio.*
A *remnant*, *piece*. *Fine*.	Un *retazo*. *Fino*.
A remnant of fine cloth.	Un retazo de paño fino.
I am going to sell it by the yard.	Voy á venderle por varas.

REMARK. Nouns of *weight*, *measure*, *etc.*, used as in this phrase, are plural in Spanish, and without the article.

By the dozen. *By the pound*.	*Por docenas*. *Por libras*.
A *third*. *Complete*, *full measure*.	Una *tercia*. *Completo*.
A *trader*, *a customer*. *To amount to*.	Un *marchante*, un *parroquiano*. *Importar*.
He has many customers.	Tiene muchos marchantes.
A *quarter*. *At the rate of*	Una *cuarta*. *A razon de*.
The *price*. *At the price*.	El *precio*. *Al precio*.
The *tailor's shop*. *Eatable*.	La *sastrería*. *Comestible*.
There is a tailor's shop in this street.	Hay una sastrería en esta calle.
To sell *at retail*. *By wholesale*.	Vender *menudeado*, or *por menor*. *Por mayor*. ó al menudeo (Sp.)
He does not sell by retail, but by wholesale.	El no vende menudeado, sino por mayor.
A *gallon*. What is the price of a gallon of *lamp oil*?	Un *galon*. ¿A como está el galon de *aceite para lámparas*?
Scarce. The *measure*.	*Escaso*. La *medida*.
A gallon measure.	Una medida de galon.
A *shopkeeper*. A *student*.	Un *bodeguero*. Un *estudiante*.
To adjust. *Economy*.	*Ajustar*. *Economía*.
To pass the night, *to lodge*. *Understanding*.	*Hacer noche*. *Entendimiento*.
To suffice. That suffices me.	*Bastar*. Eso me basta.
To propose. She proposed.	*Proponer*, (as *poner*, Les. 46.) Ella propuso.
A *trout*. *To decline*.	Una *trucha*. *Escusar* (de).
To look. *To add*.	*Mirar*. *Añadir*.
Look, added he. *To reply*.	Mire, añadió él. *Replicar*.
Well flavored. The trout is well flavored.	*Sabroso*. La trucha es sabrosa.
The *acuteness*. His acuteness pleased me.	La *agudeza*. Su agudeza me agradó.

To please. *To furnish.* The *saddle-bag.*	*Agradar.* *Provéer.* La *alforja.*
He furnished the saddle-bag.	El proveyó la alforja. (See Les. 74, Rem. 3.)
They sell their wine by the gallon.	Venden su vino por galones.
Two yards and three-quarters of cloth, at the rate of four dollars a yard, amount to eleven dollars.	Dos varas y tres cuartas de paño, á razon de cuatro pesos la vara, importan once pesos.
How do you sell this cloth a yard?	¿A como vende V. la vara de este paño?
There are three yards and a third.	Hay tres varas y tercia.
The measure is full.	La medida está completa.
They do not sell eatables by retail, but by wholesale.	No venden comestibles por menor, sinó por mayor.
The shopkeepers have raised the price of wine because it is scarce.	Los bodegueros han subido el precio del vino porque está escaso.

Show me some pieces of the finest cloths that you have. Sir, see them in this glass case (*vidriera.*) How do you sell this blue cloth a yard? At (*á*) twelve dollars, because it is the finest that you can find in the city. And how much do you ask a (*por la*) yard for this black cloth? Six dollars; but if you buy it by the piece, I will give it to you cheaper. I need only two yards and three quarters of the blue, and two yards and a third of the black. I am going to measure them. Take care to measure them full measure. My good sir, all that I sell in my shop, I measure with one or two inches over (*de mas*), and for that reason, I have so many customers. How much do the yards of blue cloth amount to? I will make you the account. The two yards and three quarters of blue cloth, at the rate of twelve dollars a yard, amount to thirty-three dollars, and the two yards and a third of the black, at the price of six dollars, amount to fourteen dollars. Here you have forty-seven dollars, which is what the account comes to (*monta.*) Send the cloth to the tailor's shop, which is behind the church; because I am going now to a (store of eatables) provision store, and can not carry it.

My good sir, have you sugar? Yes, sir. How much do you ask a pound? I do not sell at retail, but by wholesale. I will buy of (*á*) you a box, if the price be not very high. A box of sugar is worth to-day seventeen dollars, but as you are my customer, I will give it to you for fifteen dollars and six shillings. How many pounds

does a box contain (*tiene*)? Four hundred. Weigh that, and see if it is full measure. Do you see? it weighs four hundred and seventeen pounds; but take it for the price that I said to you. And have you not lamp oil at retail? Yes, sir. What is the price a gallon? (Les. 74, Rem. 28) Ten shillings. That price is very dear. My dear sir, lamp oil is very scarce, and those who sell by wholesale have raised the price. Let me see the gallon measure, because many shopkeepers have neither the measure nor the weight complete. All that I sell I measure complete, and I never ask more than the things are worth.

A student, who was returning from Salamanca to his own (*para su*) land, carried so little money for the way (*camino*), that at the hotels where (*que*) he arrived, he adjusted everything with the greatest economy, that it might not give out (*se acabase*) before arriving at his home (*casa.*) It happened that coming (*sucedió que llegando*) to lodge in a hotel where the mistress was a woman of much understanding, and much affability, she asked him what he wished to sup on (*cenar.*) He answered, a pair of boiled (*cocidos*) eggs. No more than that? said the mistress. That suffices me, madam, because I sup on little. They brought him the eggs, and when he was supping, the mistress proposed to him some very good trout which she had. The student declined taking them.

Look, Mr. student, added she, these trout are very good, because they have the four *f's*. How the four *f's?* replied he. Do you not know, said the woman, that trout, in order to be delicious, must (*han de*) have the four *f's?* I have never heard such a thing, answered the student, and I should like to know what enigma that is. I will tell it to you answered the mistress. It means that trout, in order to be well flavored, must be *fresh*, *fried*, *cold* (*frias*), and rough (*fragósa.*) Now (*ya*) I understand, but if the trout do not have another *f*, they do not serve for me. What other *f*, more? asked the woman. Madam, that they be credited (*fiadas*), because in my purse there is not wherewith (*con que*) to pay for them now. The acuteness pleased the mistress so much, that she not only presented him the trout, but furnished his saddle-bags for the way which remained (*restaba.*)

Don Pedro Pascual se hallaba de presidente del consejo de Indias. Un adulador le quiso adular,[1] y para ello mandó hacer una pintura á un diestro pintor, y al pié de ella puso cuatro *Ps*, haciendo un geroglífico[2] misterioso[3] de ellas, que descifrado[4] decia; *Pedro Pascual Primer Presidente.* Puso esta pintura en su cuarto. Entre los muchos pretendientes[5] que le molestaban, habia un Indiano agudo, y eficaz[7] en sus pretensiones.[8] No le dejaba sosegar[9] un instante; pues á cada paso que daba le tenia sobre sí; y á todas horas en su casa. Un dia Don Pedro Pascual venia bastantemente[10] fatigado,[11] y se encontró con el Indiano en su casa, que tambien se llamaba Don Pedro, y le dijo: Señor Don Pedro, no me apure[12] V. la paciencia,[13] que traigo bastantes fatigas conmigo. El buen Indiano Don Pedro se quedó mustio[14] sin hablar palabra, arqueando[15] las cejas, y encogiéndose[16] los hombros.

Se estaba inmoble,[17] y de cuando en cuando[18] miraba pensativo[19] á la pintura con el geroglífico de las cuatro *Ps*, y Don Pedro Pascual reparando en[20] ello, le dijo: Si V. Señor Don Pedro quiere que le despache,[21] me ha de explicar lo que las cuatro *Ps*, que están en esa pintura, que V. mira con tanto cuidado, dan á entender.[22] Don Pedro el Indiano volvió á mirarla,[23] y dijo pronto: Señor, lo que aquellas cuatro *Ps* quieren decir es lo siguiente; *Pedro Pascual Preparad Paciencia.* No es nada de eso, replicó el señor presidente. Don Pedro el Indiano volvió á mirarla, y volvió á decir: Señor, si no es lo antecedente[24] será lo subsecuente:[25] *Pobres Pretendientes Preparad Paciencia.* Tampoco es cosa de eso, retornó[26] Don Pascual. Pues Señor, replicó el Indiano, si ni lo uno ni lo otro alcanza al acierto,[27] alcance[28] vuestra paciencia y mi sumision[29] á lo que voy á decir: *Pacientísimo Presidente Perdonad á Pedro.* Las prontitudes[30] del Indiano cayeron tan en gracia[31] á Don Pedro Pascual, que no solo le concedió lo que pretendia,[32] sinó que le agasajó[33] grandemente.

1, *Adular*, to flatter. 2, *Geroglífico*, hieroglyphic. 3, *Misterioso*, mysterious. 4, *Descifrar*, to decipher. 5, *Pretendiente*, petitioner. 6, *Molestar*, to annoy. 7, *Eficaz*, active. 8, *Pretension*, petition. 9, *Sosegar*, to be quiet. 10, *Bastantemente*, sufficiently (a good deal). 11, *Fatigado*, fatigued. 12, *Apurar*, to consume. 13, *Paciencia*, patience. 14, *Mustio*, gloomy. 15, *Arquear*, to arch, *arqueando las cejas*, knitting his brows. 16, *Encoger*, to shrug. 17, *Inmoble*, without motion. 18, *De cuando en cuando*, from time to time. 19, *Pensativo*, thoughtful. 20, *Reparar en*, to observe. 21, *Despachar*, dispatch. 22, *Dar á entender*, to signify. 23, *Volver á mirar*, to look again at. 24, *Antecedente*, preceding. 25, *Subsecuente*, following. 26, *Retornar*, to return. 27, *Alcanzar al acierto*, (to attain to a hit) to hit the meaning. 28, *Alcance*, let extend. 29, *Sumision*, submission. 30, *Prontitudes*, readiness. 31, *Cayeron en gracia*, were agreeable. 32, *Pretender*, to seek. 33, *Agasajar*, to regale.

106. LECCION CENTÉSIMA SEXTA.

MISCELLANEOUS EXERCISES.

The *doctor*. *Pain*.	El *doctor*. *Pena, dolor*.
Doctor, I feel much pain.	Señor Doctor, siento mucha pena.
The *side*. The *heart*.	El *costado*. El *corazon*.
In the side near the heart.	En el costado cerca del corazon.
To discover. *To sweat, perspire*.	*Descubrir*. *Sudar*.
An *absurdity*. The *adversary*.	Un *disparate*. El *contrario*.
I have committed an absurdity.	He hecho un disparate.
The *bath, bathing*. *Dangerous*.	El *baño*. *Peligroso*.
To stop perspiration by bathing is dangerous.	*Detener el sudor* con el baño es peligroso.
To break the fever.	*Cortar la calentura*.
An apothecary's shop. A *dose*.	Una *botica*. Una *dósis*.
Peruvian bark. A *folly*.	*Quina*. Una *locura*.
A dose of Peruvian bark.	Una dósis de quina.
Blood. A *drop*.	*Sangre*. Una *gota*.
A drop of blood.	Una gota de sangre.
An *apothecary*. An *adverb*.	Un *boticario*. Un *adverbio*.
The apothecary will give you a *plaster*.	El boticario le dará á V. un *emplasto*.
A *drink*. *To become weak*.	Una *bebida*. *Debilitarse*.
The more he drinks the weaker he becomes.	Cuanto mas bebe tanto mas se debilita.
The more he has the more he desires.	Cuanto mas tiene tanto mas desea.
Immediately. *Notice*.	*Inmediatamente*. *Noticia*.
To approach. An *adjective*.	*Acercarse*. Un *adjetivo*.
He looked at it again.	El volvió á mirarle (Les. 86, Rem. 4.)
He will marry again.	El volverá á casarse.
To assure. *To confess*.	*Asegurar*. *Confesar*, (varied as *Cerrar*, Les. 38.)

REMARK 1. We have already seen that many adverbs are formed by annexing *mente* to an adjective. Most English adverbs ending in *ly* formed from adjectives, have, in Spanish, corresponding adverbs in *mente*, formed also from adjectives.

Tranquil. *Tranquilly*.	Tranquilo. *Tranquilamente*.
Honest. *Honestly*.	*Honesto*. *Honestamente*.
Entire. *Entirely*.	*Entero*. *Enteramente*.
Equal. *Equally*.	Igual. *Igualmente*.
Merry. *Merrily*.	*Alegre*. *Alegremente*.

Remark 2. When adverbs of this kind immediately follow each other, *mente* is used only with the last; as

Really and truly.	*Real* y *verdaderamente.*
The *dispute*. *To explain.*	La *disputa*. *Explicar.*
Straw. *Beaver*. A beaver hat.	*Paja*. *Castor*. Un sombrero de castor.

Doctor, I feel so unwell (*malo*) and so weak, that I can hardly stand up. Where do you feel the pain (*mal*)? All my body pains me; but where I feel most pain, is in the left side near the heart. Did you sleep last night? and do you feel an appetite (*con apetito*)? I am very sleepy, but my pains do not let me sleep, nor have I the least desire to take anything; because I am constantly with a desire to vomit (*ansia de provocar.*) How long (*desde cuando*) have you felt sick? Since last evening, when (*que*) I bathed my face and arms in cold water, being in a perspiration (*sudando.*) You committed a great absurdity, because to perspire is very healthy, and the pains which you feel now are the consequence (*consecuencia*) of having stopped the perspiration with the bathing. Do you believe that my disease is dangerous? No; but it can be so. Let me feel your pulse. You have a very violent (*fuerte*) fever, and it is necessary to break it. What is it necessary for me to do to break the fever?

Send to an apothecary's shop for three doses of Peruvian bark. Take one every two hours, in half a tumbler of tepid water. It appears to me doctor, that it would be good to bleed me. That would be a folly in the state in which you are. As soon as you are free (*limpio*) from fever, I will see if it be suitable to draw from you (*sacarle*) some ounces of blood; but now not a drop. What shall I do for the pain in (*de*) the side, and the inclination to vomit? The apothecary will send you a plaster for the side, and a drink for the inclination to vomit. Can I take the drink when I take the doses of Peruvian bark? Do not take it until you are free from fever. And if I should be hungry, what shall I be able to eat? Nothing while you have (a) fever, and if you feel very weak (*débil*) you can take a little chicken broth. When you take the Peruvian bark, take care to cover yourself up (*procure abrigarse*) well with two or three sheets and blankets, and do not speak much; because the more a weak

person speaks the weaker he becomes. To-morrow I will return, and I hope to find you in good health. I thank you.

Do you hear the dispute which those two boys have? I hear them, but I do not understand what they say because they speak in Spanish. I will explain to you what they are disputing about (*disputando.*) He who has the straw hat says, that in the Spanish language, all the adverbs end in *mente;* and he who has the beaver hat, tells him that it is an absurdity, because, *to-day, now, to-morrow, as soon as*, which are adverbs of time and many others, do not end in this termination (*terminacion.*) He with (*de*) the straw hat, seeing that the other knows more than he, tries (*trata*) to discover some ignorance (*ignorancia*) in his adversary, and tells him: I bet that you do not tell me what are the adverbs which end in *mente.* He with the beaver hat, who knows perfectly the Spanish grammar, answers him: The adverbs which end in *mente* are those which are derived (*se derivan*) from adjectives; as from *perfect* perfectly, from *bitter* (*amargo*) *bitterly* (*amargamente*), as you will see in the following (*siguentes*) examples; Miss N. is so *merry* that those who are in her company (*la acompañan*) pass the time *merrily.* Although my friend is not *prudent*, when he sees the danger (*peligro*), he avoids it (*le evita*) *prudently.* The captain of that boat is so fortunate (*feliz*), that in spite (*á pesar*) of the bad weather, he arrives fortunately at the port (*al puerto.*) Although the history which you related to us the other day is not true (*verdadero*), it is truly very amusing (*divertida.*)

A man had two sons, the one liked to sleep much in the morning (*las mañanas,*) and the other was very industrious, and rose every day very early. The latter having gone out one day early in the morning (*muy de mañana*), found a purse full of money. He ran immediately to give notice to his brother of his good fortune, and said to him, Thou seest Louis what one gains (*gana*) rising early. By (*á*) my faith (*fe mia*), answered his brother, if he who lost the purse, had not risen earlier than I, he would not have lost it.

A good old man being very near death, had his wife called, who was still young, and said to her. My dear (*querida mia*), you see that my last hour approaches. For this reason, if you wish that I should die in peace, it is necessary that you do me a favor. You

are still young, and undoubtedly will (*ha de*) marry again, I know it, but I pray (*suplico*) you not to marry Mr. Lewis; because I confess that I have always been jealous (*zeloso*) of him, and I am so still. I should die in despair (*desesperado*), if you did not grant me this favor (*gracia.*) My dear (*corazon*), answered the woman, I pray you let not that prevent (*impida*) you from (*á*) dying in peace, for I assure you that even though I wished to marry him, I could not, being already engaged (*comprometido*) to another.

El conde[1] de Lemos se hallaba de gobernador del Perú. Una pobre mujer se le querelló[2] de que un compadre[3] suyo le negaba el valor[4] de seis mil pesos, que le habia entregado[5] en confianza,[6] en joyas[7] de mucho coste,[8] y cerradas en un baulito.

El conde conoció por lo desnudo[9] del informe[10] ser cierto lo que aquella mujer pedia. Llamó á la parte,[11] y le mandó restituir las prendas.[12]

El se resistia[13] con decir, que su camarada[14] habia perdido el juicio;[15] pues, ella nunca le habia dado tal cosa; y como faltaba probanza[16] para condenarle,[17] el conde procuraba que el halago[18] y buenas palabras le convenciesen.[19] Lo hecho no fué bastante para que aquel hombre se diese[20] á la razon; y ya enfadado el conde pues llegó á concebir malicia[21] en aquel infame[22] sugeto,[23] le dijo con mesura;[24] Es imposible que hombre que comete[25] semejante crueldad sea Cristiano; y en mas prueba[26] de esta verdad, dijo; V. no trae rosario.[27]

El acusado respondió pronto: "Como que no, Señor! Este que Vuestra Excelencia ve, me acompaña[28] mucho tiempo ha."

El Virey[29] lo sacó[30] y lo tomó, y al punto mandó encerrar al tal[31] compadre en un cuarto solo, sin que nadie le acompañase ni hablase; y luego despidió[32] un criado para que fuese á la casa del incluso,[33] y pidiese á la mujer del tal, por señas[34] de aquel rosario, el baulillo que tenia de tales y tales marcas,[35] segun la querellante[36] las habia dado. El intento[37] se logró[38] felizmente: porque la mujer del acusado, luego que vió el rosario de su marido, y las claras y manifiestas señas que el criado del Conde dió, no tuvo razon de dudar en que su marido se lo enviaba á pedir, sacólo y se lo entregó.[39] Este lo trajó á la presencia[40] del Virey; el baul siendo registrado,[41] se hallaron las mismas alhajas[42] que la querellante habia dicho.

El Conde se lo entregó todo con dos mil ducados[43] mas en que condenó al delincuente,[44] y en cuatro años de presidio,[45] por la mala fe con que habia obrado.[46]

1, *Conde*, count. 2, *Querellarse*, to complain. 3, *Compadre*, friend. 4, *Valor*, value. 5, *Entreagar*, to deliver. 6, *Confianza*, confidence. 7, *Joyas*, jewels. 8, *Coste*, cost. 9, *Desnudo*, bare simplicity. 10, *Informe*, information. 11, *Parte*, party. 12, *Prenda*, deposit. 13, *Resistirse*, to refuse. 14, *Camarada*, acquaintance. 15, *Juicio*, judgment. 16, *Probanza*, proof. 17,

Condenar, to condemn. 18, *Halago*, mildness. 19, *Convencer*, to convince. 20, *Se diese*, should yield. 21, *Malicia*, ill-will. 22, *Infame*, infamous. 23, *Sugeto*, person. 24, *Mesura*, gravity. 25, *Cometer*, to commit. 26, *Prueba*, proof. 27, *Rosario*, rosary. 28, *Acompañar*, to accompany. 29, *Virey*, viceroy. 30, *Sacar*, to draw out. 31, *El tal*, the said. 32, *Despedir*, to send. 33, *Incluso*, one confined. 34, *Señas*, sign. 35, *Marca*, mark. 36, *Querellante*, complainant. 37, *Intento*, purpose. 38, *Lograrse*, to be obtained. 39, *Entregar*, to deliver. 40, *Presencia*, presence. 41, *Registrar*, to search. 42, *Alhaja*, jewel. 43, *Ducado*, ducat. 44, *Delincuente*, delinquent. 45, *Presidio*, public work. 46, *Obrado*, acted.

---

107. LECCION CENTÉSIMA SÉPTIMA.

MISCELLANEOUS EXERCISES.

Affection. Measles.	*Afecto. Sarampion.*
The *rheumatism. To suffer.*	El *reumatismo. Padecer.*
To complain of. Medicine.	*Quejarse. Medicina.*
He has the measles.	El está con sarampion.
He is constantly complaining, because he has the rheumatism, and suffers many pains.	Se está quejando continuamente, porque está con el reumatismo, y padece muchos dolores.
I have a medicine for the measles.	Tengo una medicina para el sarampion.
Traveling, also *traveller.* An *Indian.*	*Viajante.* Un *Indio.*
A *desert.* An *exchange.*	Un *desierto.* Un *cambio.*
He proposed an exchange.	Propuso un cambio.
In the midst of the desert.	En medio del desierto.
Reasonable. To come to blows.	*Razonable. Ir á las manos.*
Contiguous, near. To follow.	*Inmediato. Seguir*, (varied as *Pedir*, Les. 58.)
He followed him. The nearest city.	El le siguió. La ciudad mas inmediata.
To appear. To raise (animals), *to create.*	*Comparecer. Criar.*
A *litigant. Undecided.*	Un *litigante. Indeciso.*
He had raised the horse.	El habia criado el caballo.
The judge was undecided.	El juez estaba indeciso.
He dismissed the litigants.	El despidió los litigantes.
To adjudge. Food, eating.	*Adjudicar. Comida.*
He adjudges the money to its owner.	El adjudica el dinero á su amo.
To roast. To dream.	*Asar. Soñar*, (varied as *mover*, Les. 37.)

He dreams that he is rich.	El sueña que está rico.
To go to bed. Immediately.	*Irse á la cama. Luego.*
They went to bed. *Magnificent.*	Se fueron á la cama. *Magnífico.*
Glory. To celebrate.	La *gloria. Celebrar.*
He had the bird roasted.	Hizo asar el pájaro.
To rise. A *leaf.* The *Creator.*	*Levantarse.* Una *hoja.* El *Criador.*
Fragrance. The *delight.*	*Fragrancia.* La *delicia.*
A *lair* (of a wild beast). *To shake.*	Un *cubil. Sacudir.*
Terrible. To shine.	*Terrible. Brillar.*
To consider, regard. Shining.	*Considerar. Resplandeciente.*

Good evening, sirs. Good evening, Mr. Michael; what business has brought you to the city? None, I have come solely to have the pleasure of seeing you. We thank you for your good affection. Are your wife and children well? All enjoy good health, except little John, who has the measles. And how are you? My mother and I, although we have had bad colds (*una mala fluxion*) the week past, are now perfectly well, at your service (*á la disposicion de V.*), but my father is in his bed with the rheumatism; and so great are the pains which he suffers, that he is constantly complaining. I regret it, as if I were myself the one who suffered them. And is the little child very well and robust (*robusto*)? Since the day before yesterday he has not been very well; because he appears sad, and (*y que*) has some pain. We believe it is (*son*) the teeth which begin to come (*á salirle*). It is necessary to take much care of (*con*) him, because, when the teeth begin to come to children, they suffer much pain. Now I have had the pleasure of seeing you, it is necessary for me to go, because I left the family alone; and I wish to carry a medicine for the measles to (*de*) little John. I shall rejoice that your father become (*se ponga*) well of the rheumatism, and do me the favor to give him my respects (*espresiones*). Adieu. God bless you (*vaya con Dios*), Mr. Michael, and give my respects to your wife. I will do what you command.

A Spaniard travelling met an Indian in the midst of a desert. Both went on horseback. The Spaniard, fearing that his horse (*el suyo*), being (*por ser*) very bad, would not be able to make the journey (*camino*), proposed to the Indian, who had a very good and vigorous one, an

exchange. The latter did not consent (*no le admitió*), as (*por*) not being reasonable. Then the Spaniard, who was well armed, sought to quarrel (*trató de querellar*) with the Indian. They came to blows, and finally (*al fin*) he carried off (*se llevó*) the horse, and continued his journey.

The Indian followed him to the nearest city, and complained to the judge. He made the Spaniard appear, and obliged him to produce (*presentar*) the horse. As the Indian had no proof, his adversary termed him calumniator, and affirmed (*le trató de calumniador, y aseguró*) that he had raised the horse from a colt (*desde pequeño*). The judge, undecided, was going to dismiss the litigants, when the Indian cried: "The horse is mine, and I will prove it." He took off (*se quitó*) his cloak and suddenly covered the head of the animal, and addressing himself (*derijiéndose*) to the judge: "Inasmuch (*supuesto*)," said he, "as that man says that he has (Les. 99, Rem. 1,) raised the horse from a colt, command him to tell of which of his eyes he is blind (*tuerto*)." The Spaniard, not (*por no*) to appear to doubt, answered immediately, "Of the right eye." Then the Indian uncovered (*descubrió*) the head of the animal, and said: "He is blind neither of the right eye nor of the left." The judge, convinced by a proof so strong and so ingenious, adjudged the horse to his true owner, and the affair ended.

The ortolan (*hortelan*) they say is (*un*) delicate eating, and this bird is found only in the country of Chartres, in France. Two Gascons (*Gascones*) of delicate taste, went there expressly (*de propósito*) to eat ortolans; but they arrived when these birds had gone away. They were only able to find one, in spite of all their exertions (*diligencias.*) "Then," said one Gascon, "it must (*ha de*) not be divided, and it is necessary that one eat it all entire. Let us keep it for tomorrow; he of the two who may dream the better (*mejor*), must eat the delicate morsel (*bocado*) without leaving anything to the other."

The proposition is accepted (*proposicion queda aceptada*), and having supped, they went to bed. One of them, the more greedy (*voraz*), rose very early (*muy de mañana*), had the ortolan roasted, and ate it. Immediately he went to wake his companion, who, as soon as he opened his eyes, said to him, that the ortolan ought to be

for him, because he had dreamed that a magnificent choir of angels (*coro de ángeles*) had taken him up (*elevado*), and carried him in pomp (*en pompa*) to glory. The other interrupted (*interrumpió*) him, saying: "It is true, I saw thee when thou begannest to go up, and I said in myself, 'He (*este*) no more wishes for ortolans, for he will have much better and more delicate ones in glory;' and for that, I immediately had it roasted, and I have eaten it to celebrate the pleasure which your happiness (*felicidad*) gave me."

I wish to show you what is a beautiful thing; an open rose. Nothing is more beautiful. Look how it rises on its stem of moss (*tallo de musgo*), and appears to reign over all the flowers. Its leaves appear only of the color of fire; the air is full of its fragrance; it makes the delight of our eyes. The rose is beautiful, but He who created it, is much more so.

Do you wish to know what is strong? The lion is strong, when on going forth (*al salir*) from his lair, he shakes his curled mane (*encrespada melena*). He is strong, he is terrible; but He who has created the lion is stronger.

The sun is majestic (*majestuoso*) when he shines in the blue sky. He is the work of God, the most perfect that human eyes can regard; he is shining, magnificent; but the Creator of the sun is more so; mortal eyes could not see him face to face.

No basta el leer con eleccion,[1] es necesario leer con reflexion.[2] Leed ménos libros, y leedlos bien; pues nada queda de las lecturas[3] demasiado rápidas.[4] Sucede con los libros lo mismo que con el alimento,[5] que no aprovecha[6] sinó cuando se toma lentamente,[7] y es bien digerido.[8] Un hombre se jactaba[9] delante de Aristipo de que habia leido mucho. "No son los que comen mas," le respondió este filósofo, los que están mas gordos, y sanos, sinó los que digieren mejor. No conviene,[10] si uno quiere formarse[11] el entendimiento, leer muchos libros, sinó leer mucho un mismo libro cuando es excelente. Pretender[12] una universalidad[13] de conocimientos[14] es una ilusion[15] del amor propio,[16] y la locura[17] de nuestro siglo.[18] La manía[19] de saberlo todo, ó de saber un poco de todo, no hace sinó entendimimientos superficiales,[20] y presuntuosos ignorantes;[21] pues cuando se quiere saber demasiado, no se profundiza[22] nada.

No leais para los otros, sinó para vos mismo: ved lo que os conviene, y lo que puede serviros de regla de conducta. Leed no para ser mas docto, sinó para llegar á ser mejor. Así es como debeis leer tambien la historia, y no por un sim-

ple divertimiento,[23] ó por curiosidad.[24] ¿Que os servirá haber nacido despues de tantos hombres grandes, si no los tomais por modelo?[25] ¿Que os servirá haber nacido despues de tantos locos y malvados,[26] si no llegais á ser mas sabios, y mas virtuoso?

El sol es magestuoso cuando brilla en el cielo azul, y vibra[27] sus ardientes rayos[28] sobre la tierra. Es la obra de Dios, es lo mas perfecto que los ojos humanos pueden considerar; es resplandeciente, es magnífico; pero el Criador del sol lo es mucho mas; los ojos mortales no podrian verle cara á cara, porque su resplandor[29] es demasiado brillante para la debilidad[30] de nuestra vista.

El penetra[31] con su luz hasta el seno[32] de las mas espesas[33] tinieblas;[34] todas sus obras están llenas de esta luz. ¿Que nombre daremos á este gran ser que todo lo ha criado, y que es tan superior á todas sus criaturas? Este gran ser es Dios, el que gobierna el mundo, y arregla el movimiento de todas las cosas de que se compone, desde el astro[35] que brilla en el firmamento,[36] hasta el grano de arena que anda rodando bajo la planta[37] de nuestros piés. ¡En él solo, residen la belleza, la fuerza, el poder,[38] y la perfeccion!

1, *Eleccion*, selection. 2, *Reflexion*, reflection. 3, *Lectura*, reading. 4, *Rápido*, rapid. 5, *Alimento*, food. 6, *Aprovechar*, to benefit. 7, *Lentamente*, slowly. 8, *Digerir*, to digest. 9, *Jactarse*, to boast. 10, *Convenir*, to be expedient. 11, *Formarse*, to form for himself. 12, *Pretender*, to attempt. 13, *Universalidad*, universality. 14, *Conocimiento*, knowledge. 15, *Ilusion*, illusion. 16, *Amor propio*, self love. 17, *Locura*, insanity. 18, *Siglo*, age. 19, *Manía*, mania. 20, *Superficial*, superficial. 21, *Presuntuoso ignorante*, presumptuous ignoramus. 22, *Profundizarse*, to examine profoundly. 23, *Simple divertimiento*, mere amusement. 24, *Curiosidad*, curiosity. 25, *Modelo*, model. 16, *Malvado*, wicked. 27, *Vibrar*, to dart. 28, *Ardiente rayo*, ardent ray. 29, *Resplandor*, splendor. 30, *Debilidad*, weakness. 31, *Penetrar*, to penetrate. 32, *Seno*, bosom. 33, *Espeso*, thick. 34, *Tiniebla*, darkness. 35, *Astro*, star. 36, *Firmamento*, firmament. 37, *Planta*, sole. 38, *Poder*, power.

SYNOPSIS OF GRAMMAR.

ARTICLES.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
Masculine.	*Feminine.*		*Masculine.*	*Feminine.*	
El	La	*the.*	Los	Las	*the*
del	de la	*of the.*	de los,	de las	*of the*
al	á la	*to the*	á los	á las	*to the*

Neuter article, *lo*, *the*.

Del is a contraction of ***de el***, and ***al*** of ***á el***.

Lo has no plural. It is used only before adjectives and past participles.

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

Masculine.	*Feminine.*		*Masculine.*	*Feminine.*	
Un	Una	*a*	Unos	Unas	*some.*

Un is ***uno***, one, always contracted before a noun. The plural of this article has an indefinite meaning, ***unos hombres*** some men, ***unas mujeres*** some women.

1. Articles agree in gender and number with their nouns; as, ***El hombre*** the man, ***la mujer*** the woman, ***los reyes*** the kings, ***las reines*** the queens.

Note.—The masculine articles *el* and *un* are used before feminine nouns in the singular, when they begin with *a* or *ha* accented; as, *El alma*, *un ala*.

The following are almost all the nouns of this class: *Un acta*, an act; *el agua*, the water; *un águila*, an eagle; *un ala*, a wing; *el alba*, the dawn; *el alma*, the soul; *el ama*, the mistress; *ancla*, *áncora*, anchor; *ansia*, anxiety; *ara*, altar; *arca*, chest; *arma*, weapon; *arpa*, harp; *arte*, art; *asa*, handle; *ascua*, red hot coal; *el asma*, the asthma; *un aula*, a hall; *aura*, a kind of bird; *un ave*, a bird; *un aya*, a governess; *un habra*, a bean; *habla*, speech; *hacha*, axe; *hambre*, hunger; also *Africa*, *Asia*, *Austria*.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE USED.

2. The definite article is used chiefly in Spanish as in English to point out some definite object; as Déme *el* libro que V. tiene.

3. Nouns used in a universal sense also, take the definite article in Spanish, though not in English; as ***La plata es blanca. El hombre es mortal.***

4. The definite article is also used with the names of countries not preceded by a preposition; as, *La Irlanda es una isla.* But if a preposition precede, the article is omitted; as, *Viene de Francia.*

Brazil, China, Japan, and all countries considered very remote, and places personified, take the article even when preceded by a preposition; as, *El vino de la China.*

5. The definite article is also used with titles and epiphets prefixed to proper names, except when spoken to; as *El general Taylor, el señor Torrey.*

6. The definite article is also used with the names of mountains, rivers, seasons, the days of the week, the days of the month, the hours of the day, and the cardinal points of the compass; as, *El Ebro, el norte, el otoño, el lúnas.* El cuatro de Julio. A las diez.

The article is omitted before the date of letters and of written instruments.

7. The definite article is also used, with nouns of weight, measure, etc.; as, *Un peso la libra. Por* however may be used, and the article omitted; as, *Le vendo por varas.*

8. The definite article is also in general preferred to the possessive adjectives *mi, su,* etc., when the possessor is otherwise sufficiently denoted; as, *Me duele la cabeza.*

9. The definite article is generally repeated before nouns which immediately follow each other in the same construction, especially when of different genders, and when they are emphatic it must always be repeated; as, *La prudencia y el valor del rey. Los hermanos y las hermanas.*

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE OMITTED.

10. The definite article is omitted with nouns in a partitive sense, as it is in English; as, *¿ Tiene V. dinero? ¿ Quiere V. vino?*

11. The definite article is omitted also, before the names of cities and towns; and also the months of the year; *Lóndres es una ciudad magnífica. Julio es un mes caloroso.*

12. This article is omitted also before a noun in apposition with another noun or a clause, when not especially definite; as, *Pablo, apóstol de los Gentiles. Paris, Atenas de Francia.*

13. This article is omitted also before numeral adjectives numbering a series, and in the titles of books and heading of chapters, paragraphs, etc., as *Guillermo Tercero, Leccion Décima, Vida de Franklin, Capítulo octavo.*

14. This article is omitted also before a noun in the predicate expressing like an adjective some character of the subject; as, *Mi amigo es Frances. Este hombre es soldado.*

NOUNS.

GENDER OF NOUNS.

1. All nouns in Spanish are either masculine or feminine. Those denoting males are masculine, and those designating females are feminine. For the gender of all other nouns the following rule is given.

2. Nouns ending in *a*, *d*, *ion*, *is* and *ez*, are feminine, and those which do not end in any of these, are masculine; as, *La cama*, *la red*, *la religion*, *la hipótesis*, the hypothesis, *la palidez*, paleness.

Nouns which have no singular are of the gender indicated by their termination if used in the singular.

3. There are in Spanish about one hundred and fifty feminine nouns with masculine terminations, (that is not ending in *a*, *d*, *ion*, *is*, or *ez*); and about fifty masculine nouns with feminine termination, (that is, ending in some of the above letters.)

4. The following are common, that is they may have either the masculine or the feminine article.

Albalá,	*royal grant,*	Hermafrodita,	*hermaphrodite.*
Anatema.	*anathema,*	Mar,	*sea.*
Arte,	*art,*	Hypérbole,	*hyperbole.*
Azúcar,	*sugar,*	Márgen,	*margin.*
Canal,	*canal,*	Neuma,	*gesture.*
Cisma,	*schism,*	Orden,	*order.*
Cútis,	*skin,*	Puente,	*bridge.*
Dote,	*dowry,*	Reuma,	*rheum.*
Emblema,	*emblem,*		

5. When the same word is intended to include both genders, the masculine must be used in Spanish; as, *Mis padres*, my parents; *Mis tios*, my uncles and aunts; *Sus hijos*, his children.

PLURAL OF NOUNS.

6. Nouns ending with a consonant, or with any accented vowel except é, form the plural by adding *es;* and those ending with an unaccented vowel, or an accented *é*, form the plural by adding *s;* as, *Fusil*, *fusiles; Alelí*, *alelíes; Rio*, *rios; Pié*, *piés.*

Z final is changed to *ces*, and *i* final to *y*, in the plural; as, *Juez*, *jueces*, *Lei*, *leyes*. *S* final preceded by an unaccented vowel is unchanged in the plural; as, *Lúnes*, monday; *lúnes*, mondays.

7. The following are irregular in the plural; *Dux*, *duces; Lord*, *lores; Mamá*, *mamás; Papá*, *papás; Patron*, *patronos; Sofá*, *sofás.*

8. When parts belonging to more than one individual are spoken of collectively, if they be singular with each individual, they are singular in Spanish, though plural in English; as, *Ellos se lavan la cara*, they wash their faces.

9. *Dia*, *tarde*, and *noche* in salutations are always plural in Spanish; as *Buenos dias*, good morning; *Buenas noches*, good night.

DIMINUTIVE AND AUGMENTATIVE NOUNS.

10. The terminations *ito* or *ico* (masculine,) *ita*, *ica*, (feminine), are added to form DIMINUTIVES, which imply beauty and affection; as, *Un muchachito*, a pretty little boy; *Una muchachita*, a pretty little girl; *illo*, and *illa*, form diminutives of pity or contempt, and *uelo*, *uela* of contempt or aversion; as, *pececillo*, a little fish; *hombrezuelo*, a contemptible man; *mugerzuela*, a contemptible woman. *On*, *azo*, *ote*, *onazo*, (masculine;) *ona*, *aza*, *ota*, *onaza*, (feminine) form AUGMENTATIVES which imply *great*, *large*, *stout*; as, *Melonote* or *melonazo*, a very large melon, *un muchachon*, a big boy; *una muchachona*, a big girl. *¡Que mujerona!* what a large woman! *¡Que hombron* or *hombronazo!* What a big man.

ADJECTIVES.

AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

1. Adjectives, and participles used as adjectives, agree with their nouns in gender and number; as, *El libro malo*, *las obras buenas*, *estos baules son bien hechos*, *la mesa está cubierta.*

2. An adjective qualifying two or more singular nouns, must be plural, and if the genders are different, must be masculine; as, *La vaca y el buey son negros.*

An adjective qualifying two or more plural nouns, agrees with the nearest; as, *Buenos diccionarios y gramáticas; diccionarios y gramáticas buenas.* The best construction, however, in such cases, is to employ a different adjective of similar import with each noun, or an adjective of common gender.

Adjectives agree, not with titles, but with those who bear them; as, *su alteza está enfermo.*

NUMBER AND GENDER OF ADJECTIVES.

3. Adjectives form their plurals the same as nouns.

4. Adjectives ending in *o*, change *o* to *a* in the feminine; as, *hombre generoso; mujer generosa.* Those ending in *an*, *on*, and national adjectives, annex an *a*; as, *haragan*, *haragana*; *fanfarron*, *fanfarrona*; *ingles*, *inglesa*; *español*, *española.*

5. The following adjectives drop *o* final in the masculine singular before a noun; *alguno*, *bueno*, *malo*, *postrero*, *primero*, *tercero*, *uno*; as, *algun dinero*, *un buen hombre.*

Santo prefixed to the name of a male loses the *to*; as, *San Juan*, *San Pedro.* *Ciento* loses

its final syllable before a substantive. *Grande*, meaning great in merit, loses its final syllable before a substantive beginning with a consonant; meaning great in size, it is unchanged.

Pobre placed after the noun, means *poor, indigent;* before, it means *pitiful.* p. 132

Cierto placed before the noun, means *certain*; placed after, it means *true.*

POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.

6. Adjectives in Spanish are generally placed after their nouns. The *cardinal numbers*, however, *those which lose their final letters* before a noun, with a few others denoting inherent qualities, and epithets of persons, are generally placed before the noun. *Tanto*, *mucho*, *poco*, and *todo* are always placed before their nouns.

7. For NUMERAL ADJECTIVES, see Lesson 41. In a numbered rank, the first nine are *ordinal*, and all above *cardinal;* with the days of the month, the first is *ordinal*, and the rest *cardinal.* i.e. over Rule

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

8. The comparitive degrees of superiority and inferiority are formed by prefixing the adverbs *mas* and *ménos* to the positive; and the superlative relative by prefixing the definite article to these comparatives; as, *fuerte*, *mas fuerte*, *el mas fuerte; rico*, *ménos rico*, *el ménos rico.* The absolute superlative is formed by prefixing *muy*, or by annexing *ísimo* to the positive.

In annexing *ísimo*, if the adjective end in a vowel it is dropped, and if preceded by *c, g, gu, bl*, these are changed as follows: *co* becomes *qu; go, gu; guo, güí;* and *ble, bil. Z* final is also changed to *c;* as, *rico*, *riquísimo*, or *muy rico; largo*, *larguísimo*, or *muy largo; antiguo*, *antigüísimo*, or *muy antiguo; afable*, *afabilísimo*, or *muy afable; feliz*, *felicísimo*, or *muy feliz.*

There are some irregular comparisons; as,

Alto,	*superior*,	*supremo*,	high,	higher,	highest.
Bajo,	*inferior*,	*ínfimo*,	low,	lower,	lowest.
Bueno,	*mejor*,	*óptimo*,	good,	better,	best.
Grande,	*mayor*,	*máximo*,	great,	greater,	greatest.
Malo,	*peor*,	*pésimo*,	bad,	worse,	worst.
Pequeño,	*menor*,	*mínimo*,	small,	less,	least.

These adjectives have also superlatives formed by prefixing the article to the comparative; as, *el mejor*, the best; *el mayor*, the greatest, etc. They are also compared with *mas* and *ménos*, and have superlatives in *ísimo.*

Some superlatives in *ísimo* are irregular.

Bueno, good,	*bonísimo*, very good.	*Nuevo*, new,	*novísimo*, very new.
Fiel, faithful,	*fidelísimo*, very faithful.	*Sacro*, sacred,	*sacratísimo*, very sacred.
Fuerte, strong,	*fortísimo*, very strong.	*Sabio*, wise,	*sapientísimo*, very wise.

The following superlatives are also irregular: *celebérrimo*, very celebrated; *integérrimo*, very honest; *libérrimo*, very free; *miserrimo*, very miserable; *paupérrimo*, very poor; *salubérrimo*, very salubrious.

9. An adjective used with the neuter article forms an abstract noun; as *lo útil*, the useful; *lo bueno*, the good.

PRONOUNS.

THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

	FIRST PERSON.	SEC. PERSON.	THIRD PERSON.
1. SUBJECT.	*yo*, I *nosotros*, we,	*tu*, thou, *vosotros*, *vos*, you,	*él*, he, *ella*, she, *ello*, it. *Usted*, you. *ellos*, they, *ellas*, they. *Ustedes*, you.
DIRECT OBJECT.	*me*, me, *nos*, us,	*te*, thee, *os*, you,	*le*, him, *la*, her. *los*, them, *las*, them.
INDIRECT OBJECT.	*me*, to me, *nos*, to us,	*te*, to thee, *os*, to you,	*le*, to him, *le*, to her. *les*, to them, *les*, to them.
AFTER A PREPOSITION.	*á mí*, to me, *á nosótros*, to us, *á vosotros*, to you,	*á tí*, to thee, ——— *as* ——— *as*	*á él*, to him, *á ella*, to her, *á sí*, to himself, etc. *á ellos*, to them, *á ellas*, to them, *á sí*, to themselves, etc.

2. These objective pronouns are generally placed before the verb, except with the infinitive, the imperative, and the present participle, which they follow, and with which they are united as a single word; as, *Le veo*, *quiero verle*.

3. When a verb has both a direct and an indirect object, the indirect is placed first, and in the third person it becomes *se;* as, *Te le doy*. *El se le llevó*, he brought it to them. With reflective verbs, however, the reciprocal pronoun comes first; as, *El se me dirigió*.

4. When *mí*, *tí*, *sí*, are the object of *con*, they are united with it, and annex also *go* to the same word, making *conmigo*, *contigo*, *consigo;* as, *El va conmigo*.

5. *Ello* and *lo* are properly used in reference to propositions, or adjectives to which gender can not be applied; as, *El está enfermo; yo lo sé*. Practice, authorizes the use of *lo* also for the direct objective pronoun *le;* as, *Juan me lo dió*, John gave it to me. *Lo* is also used as *so* in English when *so* stands for *it;* as, *¿ Están buenos sus amigos?* LO *estan*. are your friends well? they are so.

6. The Spaniards sometimes use, for the sake of clearness or emphasis, two objective pronouns referring to the same antecedent, called the double objective pronoun; as, *no busco á mi hermano; él me busca á mí*.

7. *Mismo*, annexed to a personal pronoun subject, is equivalent to the repetition of the pronoun with *self* in English; as, *yo mismo lo he hecho*, I have done it myself; *ellos mismos lo han hecho*, they have done it themselves.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

8. *Mio*, my; *tuyo*, thy; *suyo*, his, her, its, their; *nuestro*, our; *vuestro*, your; are properly adjectives, and subject to the rules given for adjectives. *Mio*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, when placed before the noun drop their last syllable; as, *mi padre*, *tu madre*, *su hermano*.

9. *El mio*, mine; *el tuyo*, thine; *el suyo*, his; *el nuestro*, ours; *el vuestro*, yours; with their feminine and plural forms, are possessive pronouns, agreeing in gender and number with their nouns.

10. When these pronouns follow the verb *to be*, the article is omitted provided the subject be omitted; as, *esa es la suya*, that is his; *es suya*, it is his. *¿ No es mio?* is it not mine?

11. When *of* precedes these pronouns in English, both the *of* and the article are omitted in Spanish; as, *Un amigo mio*, a friend *of* mine.

INTERROGATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR—*Quien*, who; *Cual* and *Que*, who, which, that; *Cuyo, a*, whose, of which.
Quienes. PLURAL—*Quines*, who; *Cuales* and *Que*, who, which, that; *Cuyos, as*, whose, of which.

12. *Quien* always relates to persons and agrees with them; as, *El maestro es quien lo hizo*, the master is he who did it. When it is the object of a verb it is always preceded by *á;* as, *El hombre á quien V. vió. Whom*, preceded by a preposition, is always rendered by quien; *él con quien V. estaba.* It is always the translation of *who*, interrogative; as, Who has said that? *¿ Quien ha dicho eso?* Who is afraid? *¿ Quien tiene temor?*

13. *Cual* refers to persons and things and agrees with them. As a relative it is always preceded by the article, and is generally used to prevent the repetition of *quien* and *que;* as, *La casa que vimos, y de la cual hablamos, se quemó*, the house which we saw, and of which we speak, was burnt. *Cual*, as an interrogative, means *which*, and is used without the article; as, *¿ Cual de mis hermanos conoce V.?*

14. *Que* refers to both persons and things and agrees with them, though not varied. *Who*, used with its antecedent in English is generally translated by *que;* as, *El hombre* QUE *viene, yo* QUE *hablo. Whom*, the object of a verb, may be rendered *que* or *á quien*, more commonly the latter. *La señorita á quien*, or *que, V. vió. Que*, as an interrogative, always means *what;* as, ¿ QUE *hace V.?* what are you doing? ¿ QUE *libro tiene V.?* what book have you?

15. *Cuyo* refers to both persons and things, and agrees with the noun which follows; as, *El hombre* CUYO *hijo V. conoce; La casa cuyos cuartos son pequeños.* It is also used as an interrogative; as, *¿ Cuyas vacas son estas?*

DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

SINGULAR—*Este, Esta*, this; *Ese, Esa*, that; *Aquel, Aquella*, that.
PLURAL—*Estos, estas*, these; *Esos, Esas*, those; *Aquellos, Aquellas*, those.

16. *Este* marks an object nearer the speaker; *ese*, one nearer the person spoken to; and *aquel*, one remote from both. *Este* also denotes the latter, and *aquel* the former.

Este and *ese* drop *e* final before *otro*, and are united with it as one word; as, *estotro, estotra*, this other; *estotros, estotras*, these others; *esotro, esotra*, that other; *esotros, esotras*, those others.

17. These adjectives have also a neuter form, which is used only in the singular, and when gender can not be ascribed; *Esto*, this; *Eso*, that; *Aquello*, that.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Algo, something, anything.
Cada uno, every one, each one.
Cada cual, every one, each one.
Nada, nothing, not anything.
Todo lo que, all that, everything.
Un otro, each other.
Alguien, somebody, anybody.
Cualquiera que, *Quienquiera que*, Whoever. Whosoever. Whichsoever.
Nadie, nobody, no one.
Uno y otro, one and the other, both.
Unos otros, one another.

VERBS.

AGREEMENT.

1. A verb agrees with its subject in number and person; as, *yo soy tu amigo. El es americano. Los hombres vienen.*

2. Two or more nouns or pronouns singular, connected together, take a plural verb; as, *Mi padre y madre están aquí.*

3. When the subjects thus connected are of different persons, the first is preferred to the second, and the second to the third; as, *V. y yo somos amigos. Mi hermano y yo quedarémos satifechos.* (p. 92)

4. As the relative takes the number and person of the antecedent, the verb of which it is the subject does the same; as, *Yo soy que enseño. Tú que eres mi amigo.*

5. A collective noun conveying the idea of unity takes a verb in the singular, conveying the idea of many it takes the plural; as, *El ejército era numeroso. Parte de ellos estaban enfermos.*

MOODS AND TENSES.

6. There are four moods in Spanish, the *indicative*, the *imperative*, the *subjunctive*, and the *infinitive*.

7. The INDICATIVE MOOD affirms something or asks a question. The indicative mood has eight tenses, the *present*, the *imperfect*, the *present perfect*, or *past indefinite*, the *past perfect*, or *past definite*, the *pluperfect*, the *immediate pluperfect*, the *future*, the *future perfect*.

8. The *present tense* represents the action of the verb as unfinished in present time; *Escribo*, I write, or am writing.

A present may also be formed in Spanish as in English, by joining the present participle to the verb *estar*; as, *estoy escribiendo*; except with the verbs *ir* and *venir*. (p. 200, 321.)

Any process begun in past time and still continuing, is expressed by the present tense in Spanish, but the perfect in English. *Vivo en esta ciudad* hay un año. (p. 202)

9. The *imperfect* represents the action of the verb as unfinished and continuous in time past; *El escribia*, he was writing.

10. The *past indefinite* represents it as finished in present time; as, *He escrito*, I have written.

11. The *past definite* represents it as finished in past time; as, *Escribí una carta ayer.* I wrote a letter yesterday.

12. The *pluperfect* represents it as finished prior to some other time specified; as, *Yo habia comido ya cuando mi hermano llegó.*

13. The *immediate pluperfect* represents it as finished immediately prior to some other time specified; as, *Apenas hube salido cuando llegó.*

14. The *future* represents it as going to take place in future time; as, *me iré mañana.*

15. The *future perfect* represents it as going to take place prior to some future time specified; as, *Habré comido á las dos.*

16. The IMPERATIVE MOOD is used for commanding and requesting; as, *Escribe la carta. Présteme el dinero.*

This mood is not used with a negative, but the subjunctive present is then employed in its place. *S* final of the first person plural, and *d* of the second, are omitted before *nos* and *os*; *congratulémonos*, *congratulaos*. The *s* is also omitted with the indicative when *nos* comes after the verb; as, *amémonos*, we love ourselves.

17. The SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD is used in propositions of doubt or uncertainty, and this is its distinguishing character. The indicative mood is used to affirm or ask a question of something regarded as a fact, or as an existing reality; the subjunctive mood, of something doubtful or suppositious, existing only in the mind of the speaker; as,

I say that he goes to school.	Digo que va á la escuela.
I wish him to go to school.	Quiero que vaya á la escuela.

In the former of these phrases the going to school is mentioned as a fact, and the indicative is therefore used; in the second it is only a wish or conception of the mind, and therefore the subjunctive is used.

18. The subjunctive mood then may be used when it is preceded by *que* and depends on a verb expressing *will*, *desire*, *doubt*, *fear*, *command*, *consent*, or affection of the mind generally, if the subject of the dependent be different from that of the governing verb; as, *Desea que yo esté aquí.*

19. Impersonal verbs and phrases followed by *que*, when they imply in the dependent verb a character of uncertainty or supposition, require the subjunctive; as, *Es menester que yo le dé dinero.*

20. The relatives *que*, *quien*, and *cuyo*, when they refer not to a known individual, but merely to what is general and suppositious, govern the subjunctive, otherwise the indicative; as,

I will buy a house which is large.	Compraré una casa *que sea* grande.
I have bought a house which is large.	He comprado una casa *que es* grande.

In the former of these phrases the particular house is not yet known, and is spoken of only as a conception of the mind; in the latter it is bought and known to be large. In the former, therefore, the subjunctive is used; in the latter, the indicative.

a. Thus the relative preceded by *el, lo, todo*, and *cuanto*, used vaguely, generally govern the subjunctive; as, *Compraré el que sea mejor.*

b. For the same reason a relative preceded by a superlative, or word having the force of a superlative, as *solo, ninguno, pocos, cualquiera, quienquiera*, and *nadie*, generally govern the subjunctive; as, *Es el hombre mas sabio que yo conozca. Es el solo hombre que pueda ayudarnos.*

21. Conjunctions which imply a suppositious character in the following verb, generally take the subjunctive. The following are of this kind.

A fin que,	*in order that.*	Hasta que,	*until.*
A ménos que,	*unless.*	Lejos de,	*far from.*
A no ser que,	*unless.*	No por que,	*not that.*
Antes que,	*before.*	Ojalá!	*O that!*
Aunque,	*though.*	Por poco que,	*however little.*
Aun cuando,	*although.*	Por mucho que,	*however.*
Bien que,	*though.*	Por mas que,	*whatever.*
Caso que, / En caso que,	*in case that.* / *if.*	Por temor de no,	*lest.*
Con tal que, / Con quiera que,	*provided that.*	Para que,	*in order that.*
Dado que, / Dado caso que,	*grant that.*	Sea que,	*whether.*
		Siempre que,	*whenever.*
		Supuesto que,	*suppose that.*

The verb following *cuando* is in the subjunctive, when it has a future sense, and is accompanied by another verb, expressed or understood, with a future sense; as, *Cuando le vea hablaré con él.*

22. Verbs used interrogatively or negatively take the dependent verb in the subjunctive, if the speaker look upon what that verb expresses, as doubtful or false; as, *¿ Dice V. que su amigo esté enfermo? No sé que él esté enfermo.*

23. The subjunctive mood has six tenses, the *present*, the *perfect*, the *imperfect*, the *pluperfect*, the *future*, and the *future perfect.*

24. The *present* of the subjunctive is used, when the time of the governing clause is either present or future, to denote a time which is either present or future to it; as,

I doubt (or shall doubt) whether he is coming here. — *Dudo (ó dudaré) que él venga aquí.*

25. The *perfect* of the subjunctive is used, when the time of the governing clause is either present or future, to denote a time which is past to it; as,

I doubt (or shall doubt) whether he has come here. — *Dudo (ó dudaré) que él haya venido aquí.*

26. The first or third form of the *imperfect of the subjunctive* is used, when the time of the governing clause is past, to denote time which is either present or future to it; as,

He wished his son to be learned. — *El queria que su hijo fuera (ó fuese) docto.*

27. The imperfect of the subjunctive, or THE CONDITIONAL, is used also in conditional phrases expressed by *should* or *would* in English, and commonly attended by *if* and a verb in the imperfect. The verb accompanying the conjunction may be rendered either of the first or third form, and the other of the first or second; as,

If I had money I would travel.	*Si yo*	*tuviera*, or *tuviese*,	*dinero*	*viajaria*, or *viajara.*

This tense is used with several other expressions equivalent to the imperfect above, with other conjunctions implying a condition, and sometimes without any other clause; as,

If he should come they would go away.	*Si él viniese ellos se irian.*
Although he might be poor, he would be happy.	*Aunque él fuese pobre seria feliz.*
He would wish to be rich.	*El querria ser rico.*

28. The *pluperfect* of the subjunctive is used like the imperfect, but to denote time past to the governing clause, and in conditional sentence when the verb accompanying the conjunction is in the pluperfect in English, or is some conditional expression denoting past time.

Did you doubt that he had been sick?	*¿ Dudaba V. que él*	*hubiera*, or *hubiese*,		*estado enfermo?*
If I had had money I should have travelled?	*Si yo*	*hubiera*, or *hubiese*,	*tenido dinero*	*habria*, or *hubiera*, *viajado.*
Which of these would you have preferred?	*¿ Cual de estos habria preferido V.?*			

a. The present subjunctive is used also after the present perfect, when it is connected by a conjunction and denotes a result which may now be taking place.

I have written him in order that he may come.	*Yo le he escrito (á fin de) que venga.*

b. After the present, the imperfect may be used instead of the present, and the pluperfect instead of the perfect, when followed by a conditional clause.

Do you believe that they would deny it me, if I requested them?	*¿ Cree V. que me lo negasen, si les suplicara?*
Do you believe that they would have denied it me, if I had requested them?	*¿ Cree V. que me lo hubiesen negado, si les hubiera suplicado?*

c. The employment of the perfect subjunctive is also allowed after the past indefinite of the indicative.

Has there ever been a man who has labored more?	*¿ Ha habido jamas un hombre que haya trabajado mas?*

29. The future of the subjunctive is used in conditional phrases with *if*, instead of the imperfect subjunctive, to denote a future time.

If I should have money I shall travel.	*Si yo tuviere dinero viajaré.*

30. It is also used with *cuando* and relatives of a vague sense, when future time is expressed.

When I have books I will read.	*Cuando yo tuviere libros leeré.*
He who shall be studious will be learned.	*El que fuere estudioso será docto.*

31. The *future perfect* of the subjunctive is used instead of the future. when *have* is expressed in English with future time; as, If I shall have finished my work I will go with you. *Si yo hubiere acabado mi trabajo iré con V.*

32. The INFINITIVE MOOD has no distinction of persons. It is often used with a preposition instead of the present participle in English; as, *Trabaja sin cesar.* It is frequently used as a noun and takes the article, *El leer me gusta mucho.*

33. When two verbs are connected together in English, of which the second is the result or purpose of the first, the second is put in the infinitive in Spanish; as,

Come and sweep my room.	Venga á barrer mi cuarto.
I will go and buy some wine.	Iré á comprar vino.

34. The following verbs take *á* before a dependent infinitive.

Abandonnarse,	Condenar,	Exortar,	Pasar,
Acertar,	Conformarse,	Habituarse,	Persuadir,
Acostumbrarse.	Consagrarse,	Humillarse,	Ponerse,
Adelantarse,	Contribuir	Incitar,	Reducirse,
Aficionarse,	Convidar,	Inclinarse,	Resolverse,
Apostar,	Convocar,	Inducir,	Salir,
Apresurarse,	Dar,	Ir,	Sentarse,
Aproximarse,	Decidirse,	Meterse,	Someterse,
Arrojarse,	Dedicarse,	Negarse,	Subir,
Asomarse,	Determinarse,	Obligar,	Tornar,
Atreverse,	Echarse,	Obligarse,	Venir.
Comenzar,	Empezar,	Ofrecerse,	Volver.
Concurrir,	Enviar,	Pararse,	

35. The following verbs take *de* before a dependent infinitive.

Abochornarse,	Dar,	Guardarse,	Reirse,
Abstenerse,	Daber,	Gustar,	Renegarse,
Aburrirse,	Dejar,	Holgarse,	Retraerse,
Acabar,	Dejenerar	Hurtarse,	Sacar,
Acordarse,	Desdeñarse,	Jactarse,	Sentirse,
Acusar,	Desesperar,	Justificarse,	Servirse,
Agraviarse,	Despedirse,	Lamentarse,	Sobresaltarse,
Ahorrar,	Desquitarse,	Librar,	Subir,
Alegrarse,	Dignarse,	Llegar,	Subsistir,
Arrepentirse,	Disgustarse,	Llevarse,	Sustraerse,
Asegurarse,	Distraerse,	Mantenerse,	Tachar,
Avergonzarse,	Enmendarse,	Maravillarse,	Tratar,
Bajar,	Espantarse,	Molerse,	Valerse,
Blasonar,	Excluir,	Montejar,	Vanagloriarse,
Cansarse,	Excusarse,	Olvidarse,	Venir,
Confesarse,	Eximir,	Preciarse,	Vivir,
Congratularse,	Fastidiarse,	Presumir,	Zafarse.
Cuidarse,	Fatigarse,	Quejarse,	
Culpar,	Gloriarse,	Querellarse,	

REFLECTIVE VERBS.

34. Verbs which are reflective in English, are also in Spanish.

35. Verbs are reflective in Spanish, though not in English, which represent a person as doing something to a part of himself.

I wash my hands. *Me lavo las manos.*

36. Phrases in which the proper object of the verb in English is made the subject, and frequently passive forms, are made reflective in Spanish.

Cotton sells well. *El algodon se vende bien.*

That book is easily understood. *Ese libro se entiende facilmente.*

37. Many verbs are essentially reflective in Spanish for which no general rule can be given, and others not essentially so are very often made reflective, when they express one's doing something for his own benefit, and verbs immediately followed by *each other* and *one another*.

He abstains from wine. El se abstiene de vino.

He ate the fruit, and drank the wine. El se comió la fruta, y se bebió el vino.

They hate each other. Se aborrecen el uno al otro.

For Passive Verbs see Les. 98.

38. The present participle is never varied in gender and number. It is often used with the verb *to be*, as in English, to denote a continuous state of action.

We are talking. They are eating. *Estamos hablando. Ellos están comiendo.*

39. The present participle used as a noun in English is often translated by the infinitive; as, He plays instead of studying, *él juega en vez de estudiar.* p 310

40. When two actions are spoken of as performed at the same time, the more enduring of the two is often expressed by this participle; as, *El habló durmiendo.* p 207.

41. The past participle used with the auxiliary *haber* is not varied; in all other cases it agrees with its noun in gender and number; as, *¿ Ha visto V. mi pluma? No la he visto. Ella es amada de él. Ellos serán pagados por mí.*

ADVERBS.

1. In Spanish as in English, adverbs which qualify verbs, are generally placed after them; those which qualify adjectives and other adverbs, are generally placed before them; as, *El habla muy bien. El es muy ignorante.*

2. Adverbs are formed from adjectives by annexing *mente*, as they are in English by annexing *ly;* as, Cierto, *ciertamente.*

3. When a word implying negation comes after the verb, *no* must precede it in Spanish; as, *No tiene nada*, or *nada tiene.*

4. When several adverbs ending in *mente* follow each other, the termination is added to the last only; *El habló clara y distintamente.*

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *HABER*, TO HAVE.

Infinitive Mood.

Present.		Past.	
Haber,	to have.	*Haber habido*,	to have had.

Participles.

Present.		Past.	
Habiendo,	having.	*Habido*, had,	*Habiendo habido*, having had.

Indicative Mood.

Present.		Past indefinite.	
Yo he,	I have.	*Yo he habido*,	I have had.
Tú has,	thou hast.	*Tú has habido*,	thou hast had.
El ha,	he has.	*El ha habido*,	he has had.
Nosotros hemos,	we have.	*Nosotros hemos habido*,	we have had.
Vosotros habeis,	you have.	*Vosotros habeis habido*,	you have had.
Ellos han,	they have.	*Ellos han habido*,	they have had.
Imperfect.		**Pluperfect.**	
Yo habia,	I had.	*Yo habia habido*,	I had had.
Tú habias,	thou hadst.	*Tú habias habido*,	thou hadst had.
El habia,	he had.	*El habia habido*,	he had had.
Nosotros habiamos,	we had.	*Nosotros habiamos habido*,	we had had.
Vosotros habiais,	you had.	*Vosotros habiais habido*,	you had had.
Ellos habian,	they had.	*Ellos habian habido*,	they had had.
Past definite.		**Im. pluperfect.**	
Yo hube,	I had.	*Yo hube habido*,	I had had.
Tú hubiste,	thou hadst.	*Tú hubiste habido*,	thou hadst had.
El hubo,	he had.	*El hubo habido*,	he had had.
Nosotros hubimos,	we had.	*Nosotros hubimos habido*,	we had had.
Vosotros hubisteis,	you had.	*Vosotros hubisteis habido*,	you had had.
Ellos hubieron,	they had.	*Ellos hubieron habido*,	they had had.
Future.		**Future perfect.**	
Yo habré,	I shall have.	*Yo habré habido*,	I shall have had.
Tú habrás,	thou wilt have.	*Tú habrás habido*,	thou wilt have had.
El habrá,	he will have.	*El habrá habido*,	he will have had.
Nosotros habremos,	we shall have.	*Nosotros habremos habido*,	we shall have had.
Vosotros habreis,	you will have.	*Vosotros habreis habido*,	you will have had.
Ellos habrán,	they will have.	*Ellos habrán habido*,	they will have had.

Imperative Mood.*

Haya yo,	let me have.	*Háyamos nosotros*,	let us have.
Ha tú,†	have thou.	*Habéd vosotros*,	have you.
Haya él,	let him have.	*Hayan ellos*,	let them have.

Subjunctive Mood.

Present.		Perfect.	
Yo haya,	I may have.	*Yo haya habido*,	I may have had.
Tú hayas,	thou mayest have.	*Tú hayas habido*,	thou mayest have had.
El haya,	he may have.	*El haya habido*,	he may have had.
Nosotros háyamos,	we may have.	*Nosotros háyamos habido*,	we may have had.
Vosotros hayais,	you may have.	*Vosotros hayais habido*,	you may have had.
Ellos hayan,	they may have.	*Ellos hayan habido*,	they may have had.

Imperfect.

Yo hubiera, habria, hubiese,	I should have.
Tú hubieras, habrias, hubieses,	thou wouldst have.
El hubiera, habria, hubiese,	he would have.
N. hubiéramos, habriamos, hubiésemos,	we should have.
V. hubierais, habriais, hubieseis,	you would have.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, hubiesen,	they would have.

* *Habér*, as an auxiliary, has no imperative. † Formerly *habe tú*.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo hubiera, habria, hubiese habido,	I should have had
Tú hubieras, habrias, hubieses habido,	thou wouldst have had
El hubiera, habria, hubiese habido,	he would have had.
N. hubiéramos, habriamos hubiésemos habido,	we should have had.
V. hubierais, habriais, hubieseis habido,	you would have had.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, hubiesen habido,	they would have had.

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Yo hubiere,	I should have.	*Yo hubiere habido,*	I should have had.
Tú hubieres,	thou shouldst have.	*Tú hubieres habido,*	thou shouldst have had.
El hubiere,	he should have.	*El hubiere habido,*	he should have had
Nosotros hubiéremos,	we should have.	*Nosotros hubiéremos habido,*	we should have had.
Vosotros hubiereis,	you should have.	*Vosotros hubiereis habido,*	you should have had.
Ellos hubieren,	they should have.	*Ellos hubieren habido,*	they should have had.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *SER*, TO BE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Ser,	to be.	*Haber sido,*	to have been

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Siendo,	being.	*Sido,*	been.
		Habiendo sido,	having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Yo soy,	I am.	*Yo he sido,*	I have been.
Tú eres,	thou art.	*Tú has sido,*	thou hast been.
El es,	he is.	*El ha sido,*	he has been.
Nosotros somos,	we are.	*Nosotros hemos sido,*	we have been.
Vosotros sois,	you are.	*Vosotros habeis sido,*	you have been.
Ellos son,	they are.	*Ellos han sido,*	they have been.
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Yo era,	I was.	*Yo habia sido,*	I had been.
Tú eras,	thou wast.	*Tú habias sido,*	thou hadst been.
El era,	he was.	*El habia sido,*	he had been.
Nosotros éramos,	we were.	*Nosotros habiamos sido,*	we had been.
Vosotros erais,	you were.	*Vosotros habiais sido,*	you had been.
Ellos eran,	they were.	*Ellos habian sido,*	they had been.
PAST DEFINITE.		IM. PLUPERFECT.	
Yo fuí,	I was.	*Yo hube sido,*	I had been.
Tú fuiste,	thou wast.	*Tú hubiste sido,*	thou hadst been.
El fué,	he was.	*El hubo sido,*	he had been.
Nosotros fuimos,	we were.	*Nosotros hubimos sido,*	we had been.
Vosotros fuisteis,	you were.	*Vosotros hubisteis sido,*	you had been.
Ellos fueron,	they were.	*Ellos hubieron sido,*	they had been.
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Yo seré,	I shall be.	*Yo habré sido,*	I shall have been.
Tú serás.	thou wilt be.	*Tú habrás sido,*	thou wilt have been.
El será,	he will be.	*El habrá sido,*	he will have been.
Nosotros seremos,	we shall be.	*Nosotros habremos sido,*	we shall have been.
Vosotros sereis,	you will be.	*Vosotros habreis sido,*	you will have been.
Ellos serán,	they will be.	*Ellos habrán sido,*	they will have been.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sea yo,	let me be.	*Seamos nosotros,*	let us be.
Sé tú,	be thou.	*Sed vosotros,*	be ye.
Sea él,	let him be.	*Sean ellos,*	let them be.

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Yo sea,	I may be.	*Yo haya sido,*	I may have been.
Tú seas,	thou mayest be.	*Tú hayas sido,*	thou mayest have been.
El sea,	he may be.	*El haya sido,*	he may have been.
Nosotros seamos,	we may be.	*Nosotros hayamos sido,*	we may have been.
Vosotros seais,	you may be.	*Vosotros hayais sido,*	you may have been.
Ellos sean,	they may be.	*Ellos hayan sido,*	they may have been.

IMPERFECT.

Yo fuera, seria, fuese,	I should be.
Tú fueras, serias, fueses,	thou wouldst be.
El fuera, seria, fuese,	he would be.
N. fuéramos, seriamos, fuésemos,	we should be.
V. fuerais, seriais, fueseis,	you would be.
Ellos fueran, serian, fuesen,	they would be.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo hubiera, habria, hubiese sido,	I should have been.
Tú hubieras, habrias, hubieses sido,	thou wouldst have been.
El hubiera, habria, hubiese sido,	he would have been.
N. hubiéramos, habriamos, hubiésemos sido,	we should have been.
V. hubierais, habriais, hubieseis sido,	you would have been.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, habiesen sido,	they would have been.

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Yo fuere,	I should be.	*Yo hubiere sido,*	I should have been.
Tú fueres,	thou shouldst be.	*Tú hubieres sido,*	thou shouldst have been.
El fuere,	he should be.	*El hubiere sido,*	he should have been.
Nosotros fuéremos,	we should be.	*Nosotros hubiéremos sido,*	we should have been.
Vosotros fuereis,	you should be.	*Vosotros hubiereis sido,*	you should have been.
Ellos fueren,	they should be.	*Ellos hubieren sido,*	they should have been.

CONJUGATION OF THE VERB *ESTAR*, TO BE.

Infinitive Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Estar,	to be.	*Haber estado,*	to have been.

Participles.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Estando,	being.	*Estado,*	been.
		Habiendo estado,	having been.

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Yo estoy,	I am.	*Yo he estado,*	I have been.
Tú estás,	thou art.	*Tú has estado,*	thou hast been.
El está,	he is.	*El ha estado,*	he has been.
Nosotros estamos,	we are.	*Nosotros hemos estado,*	we have been.
Vosotros estais,	you are.	*Vosotros habeis estado,*	you have been.
Ellos están,	they are.	*Ellos han estado,*	they have been.

IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Yo estaba,	I was.	*Yo habia estado,*	I had been.
Tú estabas,	thou wast.	*Tú habias estado,*	thou hadst been.
El estaba,	he was.	*El habia estado,*	he had been.
Nosotros estábamos,	we were.	*Nosotros habiamos estado,*	we had been.
Vosotros estabais,	you were.	*Vosotros habiais estado,*	you had been.
Ellos estaban,	they were.	*Ellos habian estado,*	they had been.

PAST DEFINITE.		IM. PLUPERFECT.	
Yo estuve,	I was.	*Yo hube estado,*	I had been.
Tú estuviste,	thou wast.	*Tú hubiste estado,*	thou hadst been.
El estuvo,	he was.	*El hubo estado,*	he had been.
Nosotros estuvimos,	we were.	*Nosotros hubimos estado,*	we had been.
Vosotros estuvisteis,	you were.	*Vosotros hubisteis estado,*	you had been.
Ellos estuvieron,	they were.	*Ellos hubieron estado,*	they had been.
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Yo estaré,	I shall be.	*Yo habré estado,*	I shall have been.
Tú estarás,	thou wilt be.	*Tú habrás estado,*	thou wilt have been.
El estará,	he will be.	*El habrá estado,*	he will have been.
Nosotros estaremos,	we shall be.	*Nosotros habremos estado,*	we shall have been.
Vosotros estareis,	you will be.	*Vosotros habreis estado,*	you will have been.
Ellos estarán,	they will be.	*Ellos habrán estado,*	they will have been.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Esté yo,	let me be.	*Estemos nosotros,*	let us be.
Está tú,	be thou.	*Estád vosotros,*	be ye.
Esté él,	let him be.	*Estén ellos,*	let them be

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Yo esté,	I may be.	*Yo haya estado,*	I may have been.
Tú estés,	thou mayest be.	*Tú hayas estado,*	thou mayest have been.
El esté,	he may be.	*El haya estado,*	he may have been.
Nosotros estemos,	we may be.	*Nosotros hayamos estado,*	we may have been.
Vosotros esteis,	you may be.	*Vosotros hayais estado,*	you may have been.
Ellos estén,	they may be.	*Ellos hayan estado,*	they may have been.

IMPERFECT.

Yo estuviera, estaria, estuviese,	I should be.
Tú estuvieras, estarias, estuvieses,	thou wouldst be.
El estuviera, estaria, estuviese,	he would be.
N. estuviéramos, estariamos, estuviésemos,	we should be.
V. estuvierais, estariais, estuvieseis,	you would be.
Ellos estuvieran, estarian, estuviesen,	they would be.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo hubiera, habria, hubiese estado,	I should have been.
Tú hubieras, habrias, hubieses estado,	thou wouldst have been.
El hubiera, habria, hubiese estado,	he would have been.
N. hubiéramos, habriamos, hubiésemos estado,	we should have been.
V. hubierais, habriais, hubieseis estado,	you would have been.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, hubiesen estado,	they would have been.

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Yo estuviere,	I should be.	*Yo hubiere estado,*	I should have been.
Tú estuvieres,	thou shouldst be.	*Tú hubieres estado,*	thou shouldst have been.
El estuviere,	he should be.	*El hubiere estado,*	he should have been.
Nosotros estuviéremos,	we should be.	*Nosotros hubiéremos estado,*	we should have been.
Vosotros estuviereis,	you should be.	*Vosotros hubiereis estado,*	you should have been.
Ellos estuvieren,	they should be.	*Ellos hubieren estado,*	they should have been.

FIRST CONJUGATION IN *AR*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Amar,	to love.	*Haber amado,*	to have loved.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Amando,	loving.	*Amado,* loved.	*Habiendo amado,* having loved

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Yo ame,	I love.	*Yo he amado,*	I have loved.
Tú amas,	thou lovest.	*Tú has amado,*	thou hast loved.
El ama,	he loves.	*El ha amado,*	he has loved.
Nosotros amamos,	we love.	*Nosotros hemos amado,*	we have loved.
Vosotros amais,	you love.	*Vosotros habeis amado,*	you have loved.
Ellos aman,	they love.	*Ellos han amado,*	they have loved.
IMPERFECT.		**PLUPERFECT.**	
Yo amaba,	I loved.	*Yo habia amado,*	I had loved.
Tú amabas,	thou lovedst.	*Tú habias amado,*	thou hadst loved.
El amaba,	he loved.	*El habia amado,*	he had loved.
Nosotros amábamos,	we loved.	*Nosotros habiamos amado,*	we had loved.
Vosotros amabais,	you loved.	*Vosotros habiais amado,*	you had loved.
Ellos amaban,	they loved.	*Ellos habian amado,*	they had loved.
PAST DEFINITE.		**IM. PLUPERFECT.**	
Yo amé,	I loved.	*Yo hube amado,*	I had loved.
Tú amaste,	thou lovedst.	*Tú hubiste amado,*	thou hadst loved.
El amó,	he loved.	*El hubo amado,*	he had loved.
Nosotros amamos,	we loved.	*Nosotros hubimos amado,*	we had loved.
Vosotros amasteis,	you loved.	*Vosotros hubisteis amado,*	you had loved.
Ellos amaron,	they loved.	*Ellos hubieron amado,*	they had loved.
FUTURE.		**FUTURE PERFECT.**	
Yo amaré,	I shall love.	*Yo habré amado,*	I shall have loved.
Tú amarás,	thou wilt love.	*Tú habrás amado,*	thou wilt have loved.
El amará,	he will love.	*El habrá amado,*	he will have loved.
Nosotros amaremos,	we shall love.	*Nosotros habremos amado,*	we shall have loved.
Vosotros amareis,	you will love.	*Vosotros habreis amado,*	you will have loved.
Ellos amarán,	they will love.	*Ellos habrán amado,*	they will have loved.

Imperative Mood.

Ame yo,	let me love.	*Amemos nosotros,*	let us love.
Ama tú,	love thou.	*Amád vosotros,*	love ye.
Ame él,	let him love.	*Amen ellos,*	let them love.

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Yo ame,	I may love	*Yo haya amado,*	I may have loved.
Tú ames,	thou mayest love.	*Tú hayas amado,*	thou mayest have loved.
El ame,	he may love.	*El haya amado,*	he may have loved.
Nosotros amemos,	we may love.	*Nosotros hayamos amado,*	we may have loved.
Vosotros ameis,	you may love.	*Vosotros hayais amado,*	you may have loved.
Ellos amen,	they may love.	*Ellos hayan amado,*	they may have loved.

IMPERFECT.

Yo ama-ra,-ria,-se,	I should love.
Tú ama-ras,-rias,-ses,	thou wouldst love.
El ama-ra,-ria,-se,	he would love.
N. amá-ramos,-riamos,-semos,	we should love.
V. ama-rais,-riais,-seis,	you would love.
Ellos ama-ran,-rian,-sen,	they would love.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo hubiera, habria, hubiese amado,	I should have loved.
Tú hubieras, habrias, hubieses amado,	thou wouldst have loved.
El hubiera, habria, hubiese amado,	he would have loved.
N. hubiéramos, habriamos, hubiésemos amado,	we should have loved.
V. hubierais, habriais, hubieseis amado,	you would have loved.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, hubiesen amado,	they would have loved.

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.		
Yo amare,	I should love.	*Yo hubiere amado,*	I should	have loved.
Tú amares,	thou shouldst love.	*Tú hubieres amado,*	thou shouldst	
El amare,	he should love.	*El hubiere amado,*	he should	
Nosotros amáremos,	we should love.	*Nosotros hubiéremos amado,*	we should	
Vosotros amareis,	you should love.	*Vosotros hubierеis amado,*	you should	
Ellos amaren,	they should love.	*Ellos hubieren amado,*	they should	

SECOND CONJUGATION IN *ER*.

Infinitive Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Beber,	to drink.	*Haber bebido,*	to have drunk.

Participles.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Bebiendo,	drinking.	*Bebido,* drunk.	*Habiendo bebido,* having drunk.

Indicative Mood.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Yo bebo,	I drink.	*Yo he bebido,*	I have drunk.
Tú bebes,	thou drinkest.	*Tú has bebido,*	thou hast drunk.
El bebe,	he drinks.	*El ha bebido,*	he has drunk.
Nosotros bebemos,	we drink.	*Nosotros hemos bebido,*	we have drunk.
Vosotros bebeis,	you drink.	*Vosotros habeis bebido,*	you have drunk.
Ellos beben,	they drink.	*Ellos han bebido,*	they have drunk.
IMPERFECT.		**PLUPERFECT.**	
Yo bebia,	I drank.	*Yo habia bebido,*	I had drunk.
Tú bebias	thou drankest.	*Tú habias bebido,*	thou hadst drunk.
El bebia,	he drank.	*El habia bebido,*	he had drank.
Nosotros bebiamos,	we drank.	*Nosotros habiamos bebido,*	we had drunk.
Vosotros bebiais,	you drank.	*Vosotros habiais bebido,*	you had drunk.
Ellos bebian,	they drank.	*Ellos habian bebido,*	they had drunk.
PAST DEFINITE.		**IM. PLUPERFECT.**	
Yo bebí,	I drank.	*Yo hube bebido,*	I had drunk.
Tú bebiste,	thou drankest.	*Tú hubiste bebido,*	thou hadst drunk.
El bebió,	he drank.	*El hubo bebido,*	he had drunk.
Nosotros bebimos,	we drank.	*Nosotros hubimos bebido,*	we had drunk.
Vosotros bebisteis,	you drank.	*Vosotros hubisteis bebido,*	you had drunk.
Ellos bebieron,	they drank.	*Ellos hubieron bebido,*	they had drunk.
FUTURE.		**FUTURE PERFECT.**	
Yo beberé,	I shall drink.	*Yo habré bebido,*	I shall have drunk.
Tú beberás,	thou wilt drink.	*Tú habrás bebido,*	thou wilt have drunk.
El beberá,	he will drink.	*El habrá bebido,*	he will have drunk.
Nosotros beberemos,	we shall drink	*Nosotros habremos bebido,*	we shall have drunk.
Vosotros bebereis,	you will drink.	*Vosotros habreis bebido,*	you will have drunk.
Ellos beberán,	they will drink.	*Ellos habrán bebido,*	they will have drunk.

Imperative Mood.

Beba yo,	let me drink.	*Bebamos nosotros,*	let us drink.
Bebe tú,	drink thou.	*Bebéd vosotros,*	drink ye.
Beba él,	let him drink.	*Beban ellos,*	let them drink.

Subjunctive Mood.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Yo beba,	I may drink.	*Yo haya bebido,*	I may have drunk.
Tú bebas,	thou mayest drink.	*Tú hayas bebido,*	thou mayest have drunk.
El beba,	he may drink.	*El haya bebido,*	he may have drunk.
Nosotros bebamos,	we may drink.	*Nosotros hayamos bebido,*	we may have drunk.
Vosotros bebais,	you may drink.	*Vosotros hayais bebido,*	you may have drunk.
Ellos beban,	they may drink.	*Ellos hayan bebido,*	they may have drunk.

IMPERFECT.

Yo beb-iera,-eria,-iese,	I should drink.
Tú beb-ieras,-erias,-ieses,	thou wouldst drink.
El beb-iera,-eria,-iese,	he would drink.
N. beb-iéramos,-eriamos,-iésemos,	we should drink
V. beb-ierais,-eriais,-ieseis,	you would drink.
Ellos beb-ieran,-erian,-iesen,	they would drink

PLUPERFECT.

Yo hubiere, habria, hubiese bebido,	I should have drunk.
Tú hubieras, habrias, hubieses bebido,	thou wouldst have drunk.
El hubiera, habria, hubiese bebido,	he would have drunk.
N. hubiéramos, habriamos, hubiésemos bebido,	we should have drunk.
V. hubierais, habriais, hubieseis bebido,	you would have drunk.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, hubiesen bebido,	they would have drunk

FUTURE.

Yo bebiere,	I should drink.
Tú bebieres,	thou shouldst drink.
El bebiere,	he should drink.
Nosotros bebiéremos,	we should drink.
Vosotros bebiereis,	you should drink.
Ellos bebieren,	they should drink.

FUTURE PERFECT.

Yo hubiere bebido,	I should	have drunk.
Tú hubieres bebido,	thou shouldst	
El hubiere bebido,	he should	
Nosotros hubiéremos bebido,	we should	
Vosotros hubieres bebido,	you should	
Ellos hubieren bebido,	they should	

THIRD CONJUGATION IN *IR*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Sufrir,	to suffer.	*Haber sufrido,*	to have suffered.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Sufriendo,	suffering.	*Sufrido,* suffered.	*Habiendo sufrido,* having suffered.

INDICATIVE MOOD

PRESENT.

Yo sufro,	I suffer.
Tú sufres,	thou sufferest.
El sufre,	he suffers.
Nosotros sufrimos,	we suffer.
Vosotros sufris,	you suffer.
Ellos sufren,	they suffer.

IMPERFECT.

Yo sufria,	I suffered.
Tú sufrias,	thou sufferedst.
El sufria,	he suffered.
Nosotros sufriamos,	we suffered.
Vosotros sufriais,	you suffered.
Ellos sufrian,	they suffered.

PAST DEFINITE.

Yo sufrí,	I suffered.
Tú sufriste,	thou sufferedst.
El sufrió,	he suffered.
Nosotros sufrimos,	we suffered.
Vosotros sufristeis,	you suffered.
Ellos sufrieron,	they suffered.

PAST INDEFINITE.

Yo he sufrido,	I have suffered.
Tú has sufrido,	thou hast suffered.
El ha sufrido,	he has suffered.
Nosotros hemos sufrido,	we have suffered.
Vosotros habeis sufrido,	you have suffered.
Ellos han sufrido,	they have suffered.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo habia sufrido,	I had suffered.
Tú habias sufrido,	thou hadst suffered.
El habia sufrido,	he had suffered.
Nosotros habiamos sufrido,	we had suffered.
Vosotros habiais sufrido,	you had suffered.
Ellos habian sufrido,	they had suffered.

IM. PLUPERFECT.

Yo hube sufrido,	I had suffered.
Tú hubiste sufrido,	thou hadst suffered.
El hubo sufrido,	he had suffered.
Nosotros hubimos sufrido,	we had suffered.
Vosotros hubisteis sufrido,	you had suffered.
Ellos hubieron sufrido,	they had suffered.

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.		
Yo sufriré,	I shall suffer.	*Yo habré sufrido,*	I shall have	suffered.
Tú sufrirás,	thou wilt suffer.	*Tú habrás sufrido,*	thou wilt have	
El sufrirá,	he will suffer.	*El habrá sufrido,*	he will have	
Nosotros sufriremos,	we shall suffer.	*Nosotros habremos sufrido,*	we shall have	
Vosotros sufrireis,	you will suffer.	*Vosotros habreis sufrido,*	you will have	
Ellos sufrirán,	they will suffer.	*Ellos habrán sufrido,*	they will have	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sufra yo,	let me suffer.	*Suframos nosotros,*	let us suffer.
Sufre tú,	suffer thou.	*Sufrid vosotros,*	suffer ye.
Sufra él,	let him suffer.	*Sufran ellos,*	let them suffer.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.		
Yo sufra,	I may suffer.	*Yo haya sufrido,*	I may have	suffered.
Tú sufras,	thou mayest suffer.	*Tú hayas sufrido,*	thou mayest have	
El sufra,	he may suffer.	*El haya sufrido,*	he may have	
Nosotros suframos,	we may suffer.	*Nosotros hayamos sufrido,*	we may have	
Vosotros sufrais,	you may suffer.	*Vosotros hayais sufrido,*	you may have	
Ellos sufran,	they may suffer.	*Ellos hayan sufrido,*	they may have	

IMPERFECT.

Yo sufri-era,-ria,-ese,	I should suffer.
Tú sufri,-eras,-rias,-eses,	thou wouldst suffer.
El sufri-era,-ria,-ese,	he would suffer.
N. sufri-éramos,-riamos,-ésemos,	we should suffer.
V. sufri-erais,-riais,-eseis,	you would suffer.
Ellos sufri-eran,-rian,-esen,	they would suffer.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo hubiera, habria, hubeise sufrido,	I should have suffered.
Tú hubieras, habrias, hubieses sufrido,	thou wouldst have suffered.
El hubiera, habria, hubiese sufrido,	he would have suffered.
N. hubiéramos, habriamos, hubiésemos sufrido,	we should have suffered.
V. hubierais, habriais, hubieseis sufrido,	you would have suffered.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, hubiesen sufrido,	they would have suffered.

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.		
Yo sufriere,	I should suffer.	*Yo hubiere sufrido,*	I should have	suffered.
Tú sufrieres,	thou shouldst suffer.	*Tú hubieres sufrido,*	thou shouldst have	
El sufriere,	he should suffer.	*El hubiere sufrido,*	he should have	
Nosotros sufriéremos,	we should suffer.	*N. hubiéremos sufrido,*	we should have	
Vosotros sufriereis,	you should suffer.	*V. hubiereis sufrido,*	you should have	
Ellos sufrieren,	they should suffer.	*Ellos hubieren sufrido,*	they should have	

CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VERB *SER AMADO*, TO BE LOVED.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST	
Ser amado,	to be loved.	*Haber sido amado,*	to have been loved.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Siendo amado,	being loved.	*Habiendo sido amado,*	having been loved.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Yo soy amado,	I am loved.	*Yo he sido amado,*	I have been loved.
Tú eres amado,	thou art loved.	*Tú has sido amado,*	thou hast been loved.
El es amado,	he is loved.	*El ha sido amado,*	he has been loved.
N. somos amados,	we are loved.	*N. hemos sido amados,*	we have been loved.
V. sois amados,	you are loved.	*V. habeis sido amados,*	you have been loved.
Ellos son amados,	they are loved.	*Ellos han sido amados,*	they have been loved.

IMPERFECT.

Yo era amado,	I was loved.
Tú eras amado,	thou wast loved.
El era amado,	he was loved.
N. éramos amados,	we were loved.
V. erais amados,	you were loved.
Ellos eran amados,	they were loved.

PAST DEFINITE.

Yo fuí amado,	I was loved.
Tú fuiste amado,	thou wast loved
El fué amado,	he was loved.
N. fuimos amados,	we were loved.
V. fuisteis amados,	you were loved.
Ellos fueron amados,	they were loved.

FUTURE.

Yo seré amado,	I shall be loved.
Tú serás amado,	thou wilt be loved.
El será amado,	he will be loved.
N. seremos amados,	we shall be loved.
V. sereis amados,	you will be loved.
Ellos serán amados,	they will be loved.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo habia sido amado,	I had been loved.
Tú habias sido amado,	thou hadst been loved.
El habia sido amado,	he had been loved.
N. habiamos sido amados,	we had been loved.
V. habiais sido amados,	you had been loved.
Ellos habian sido amados,	they had been loved.

IM. PLUPERFECT.

Yo hube sido amado,	I had been loved.
Tú hubiste sido amado,	thou hadst been loved.
El hubo sido amado,	he had been loved.
N. hubimos sido amados,	we had been loved.
V. hubisteis sido amados,	you had been loved.
Ellos hubieron sido amados,	they had been loved.

FUTURE PERFECT.

Yo habré sido amado,	I shall have	been loved.
Tú habrás sido amado,	thou wilt have	been loved.
El habrá sido amado,	he will have	been loved.
N. habremos sido amados,	we shall have	been loved.
V. habreis sido amados,	you will have	been loved.
Ellos habrán sido amados,	they will have	been loved.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sea amado,	let me be loved.	*Seamos amados,*	let us be loved.
Sé amado,	be thou loved.	*Sed amados,*	be ye loved.
Sea amado,	let him be loved.	*Sean amados,*	let them be loved.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

Yo sea amado,	I may be loved.
Tú seas amado,	thou mayest be loved.
El sea amado,	he may be loved.
N. seamos amados,	we may be loved.
V. seais amados,	you may be loved.
Ellos sean amados,	they may be loved.

PERFECT.

Yo haya sido amado,	I may have	been loved.
Tú hayas sido amado,	thou mayest have	been loved.
El haya sido amado,	he may have	been loved.
N. hayamos sido amados,	we may have	been loved.
V. hayais sido amados,	you may have	been loved.
Ellos hayan sido amados,	they may have	been loved.

IMPERFECT.

Yo fuera, seria, fuese amado,	I should be loved
Tú fueras, serias, fueses amado,	thou wouldst be loved.
El fuera, seria, fuese amado,	he would be loved.
N. fuéramos, seriamos, fuésemos amados,	we should be loved.
V. fuerais, seriais, fueseis amados,	you would be loved.
Ellos fueran, serian, fuesen amados,	they would be loved.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo hubiera, habria, hubiese sido amado,	I should have been loved.
Tú hubieras, habrias, hubieses sido amado,	thou wouldst have been loved.
El hubiera, habria, hubiese sido amado,	he would have been loved.
N. hubiéremos, habriamos, hubiésemos sido amados,	we should have been loved.
V. hubiereis, habriais, hubieseis sido amados,	you would have been loved.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, hubiesen sido amados,	they would have been loved.

FUTURE.

Yo fuere amado,	I should be loved.
Tú fueres amado,	thou shouldst be loved.
El fuere amado,	he should be loved.
N. fuéremos amados,	we should be loved.
V. fuereis amados,	you should be loved.
Ellos fueren amados,	they should be loved.

FUTURE PERFECT.

Yo hubiere sido	I should have	*amado,*	been loved.
Tú hubieres sido	thou shouldst have	*amado,*	been loved.
El hubiere sido	he should have	*amado,*	been loved.
N. hubiéremos sido	we should have	*amado,*	been loved.
V. hubiereis sido	you should have	*amado,*	been loved.
Ellos hubieren sido	they should have	*amado,*	been loved.

CONJUGATION OF A REFLECTIVE VERB.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Bañarse,	to bathe (oneself.*)	*Haberse bañado,*	to have bathed (oneself.*)

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Bañándose,	bathing.	*Bañado,* bathed.	[bathed.
		Habiéndose bañado, having	

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Yo me baño,	I bathe.	*Yo me he bañado,*	I have bathed.
Tú te bañas,	thou bathest.	*Tú te has bañado,*	thou hast bathed.
El se baña,	he bathes.	*El se ha bañado,*	he has bathed.
Nosotros nos bañamos,	we bathe.	*Nosotros nos hemos bañado,*	we have bathed.
Vosotros os bañais,	you bathe.	*Vosotros os habeis bañado,*	you have bathed.
Ellos se bañan,	they bathe.	*Ellos se han bañado,*	they have bathed.
IMPERFECT.		**PLUPERFECT.**	
Yo me bañaba,	I bathed.	*Yo me habia bañado,*	I had bathed.
Tú te bañabas,	thou bathedst.	*Tú te habias bañado,*	thou hadst bathed.
El se bañaba,	he bathed.	*El se habia bañado,*	he had bathed.
N. nos bañábamos	we bathed.	*N. nos habiamos bañado,*	we had bathed.
V. os bañabais,	you bathed.	*V. os habiais bañado,*	you had bathed.
Ellos se bañaban,	they bathed.	*Ellos se habian bañado,*	they had bathed.
PAST DEFINITE.		**IM. PLUPERFECT.**	
Yo me bañé,	I bathed.	*Yo me hube bañado,*	I had bathed.
Tú te bañaste,	thou bathedst.	*Tú te hubiste bañado,*	thou hadst bathed.
El se bañó,	he bathed.	*El se hubo bañado,*	he had bathed.
N. nos bañamos,	we bathed.	*N. nos hubimos bañado,*	we had bathed.
V. os bañasteis,	you bathed.	*V. os hubisteis bañado,*	you had bathed.
Ellos se bañaron,	they bathed.	*Ellos se hubieron bañado,*	they had bathed.
FUTURE.		**FUTURE PERFECT.**	
Yo me bañaré,	I shall bathe.	*Yo me habré bañado,*	I shall have bathed.
Tú te bañarás,	thou wilt bathe.	*Tú te habrás bañado,*	thou wilt have bathed.
El se bañará,	he will bathe.	*El se habrá bañado,*	he will have bathed.
N. nos bañaremos,	we shall bathe.	*N. nos habremos bañado,*	we shall have bathed.
V. os bañareis,	you will bathe.	*V. os habreis bañado,*	you will have bathed.
Ellos se bañarán,	they will bathe.	*Ellos se habrán bañado,*	they will have bathed.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Báñeme yo,	let me bathe.	*Bañémonos nosotros,*	let us bathe.
Báñate tú,	bathe thou.	*Bañaos vosotros,*	bathe ye.
Báñese él,	let him bathe.	*Báñense ellos,*	let them bathe.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Yo me bañe,	I may bathe.	*Yo me haya bañado,*	I may have bathed.
Tú te bañes,	thou mayest bathe.	*Tú te hayas bañado,*	thou mayest have bathed.
El se bañe,	he may bathe.	*El se haya bañado,*	he may have bathed.
N. nos bañemos,	we may bathe.	*N. nos hayamos bañado,*	we may have bathed.
V. os bañeis,	you may bathe.	*V. os hayais bañado,*	you may have bathed.
Ellos se bañen,	they may bathe.	*Ellos se hayan bañado,*	they may have bathed.

IMPERFECT.

Yo me baña-ra,-ria,-se,	I should bathe.
Tú te baña-ras,-rias, ses,	thou wouldst bathe.
El se baña-ra,-ria,-se,	he would bathe.
N. nos bañá-ramos,-riamos,-semos,	we should bathe.
V. os baña-rais, riais,-seis,	you would bathe.
Ellos baña-ran,-rian,-sen,	they would bathe.

* The reflective pronoun may either be employed or omitted with this verb in the English.

PLUPERFECT.

Yo me hubiera, habria, hubiese bañado,	I should have bathed.
Tú te hubieras, habrias, hubieses bañado,	thou wouldst have bathed.
El se hubiera, habria, hubiese bañado,	he would have bathed.
N. nos hubiéramos, habriamos, hubiésemos bañado,	we should have bathed.
V. os hubierais, habriais, hubieseis bañado,	you would have bathed.
Ellos hubieran, habrian, hubiesen bañado,	they would have bathed.

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.		
Yo me bañare,	I should bathe.	*Yo me hubiere bañado,*	I should	have bathed.
Tú te bañares,	thou shouldst bathe.	*Tú te hubieres bañado,*	thou shouldst	
El se bañare,	he should bathe.	*El se hubiere bañado,*	he should	
N. nos bañáremos,	we should bathe.	*N. nos hubiéremos bañado,*	we should	
V. os bañareis,	you should bathe.	*V. os hubiereis bañado,*	you should	
Ellos se bañaren,	they should bathe.	*Ellos se hubieren bañado,*	they should	

CONJUGATION OF AN IMPERSONAL VERB.

IMPERSONAL VERBS are those which are used only in the third person singular, without any individual subject.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Granizar,	to hail.	*Haber granizado,*	to have hailed.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.		PAST.	
Granizando,	hailing.	*Granizado,*	hailed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE.	
Graniza,	it hails.	*Ha granizado,*	it has hailed.
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Granizaba,	it hailed.	*Habia granizado,*	it had hailed.
PAST DEFINITE.		IM. PLUPERFECT.	
Granizó,	it hailed.	*Hubó granizado,*	it had hailed.
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Granizará,	it will hail.	*Habrá granizado,*	it will have hailed.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
Granice,	it may hail.	*Haya granizado,*	it may have hailed.
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
Granizara,-ria,-se,	it might hail.	*Hubiera, habria, hubiese granizado,*	it might have hailed.
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
Granizare,	it should hail.	*Hubiere granizado,*	it should have hailed.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

Verbs which do not follow one of the paradigms given in AR, ER, or IR are called IRREGULAR. The conjugation of all such verbs is given on the pages immediately following. Let the following slight changes however be first noted, for although departures from the paradigms given, they are not considered as irregularities.

1. Verbs ending in *car* change *c* into *qu*, when followed by *e*, as *buscar*, *busqué*.

2. Those ending in *gar* change *g* into *gu* when followed by *e*; as, *llegar*, *llegué*.

3. Those ending in *guir* change *gu* into *g* when followed by *a* or *o* in a different syllable; as *seguir*, *sig-o*.

4. Several ending in *cer* and *cir* change *c* into *z* when followed by *a* or *o*; as *vencer*, *venzas*, *venzo*.

5. Several ending in *quir* change *qu* into *c* when followed by *a* or *o*; as *delinquir*, *delinco*, *delincamos*.

6. Several ending in *ger*, *gir* change *g* into *j* when followed by *a* or *o*; as *coger*, *cojan*; *ungir*, *unjo*.

These changes, it is readily seen, are made that the last consonant may retain the same sound in these, as in the other terminations.

I preceded by *a*, *o* or *u*, is changed into *y* in the third persons of the past definite of the second and third conjugations; also, in the first and third forms of the imperfect subjunctive, in the future subjunctive, and in the present participle; as *Caer*, *cayó*, *cayeron*, *cayera*, *cayese*, *cayere*, *cayendo*. *Leer*, *leyó*, *leyeron*, *leyera*, *leyese*, *leyere*, *leyendo* *Argüir*, *arguyó*, *arguyeron*, etc.

NOTE.—In the paradigms on the following pages, the parts of the verbs which are irregular are printed in italics.

CONJUGATION OF

FIRST

INFINITIVE *present.*	PARTICIPLES *pres. and past.*	INDICATIVE. *present.*		INDICATIVE *imperfect.*	PAST *definite.*	
ANDAR, *to go.*	Andando, Andado,	Ando, andas, anda,	andamos, andais, andan,	Yo andaba, etc.	*Anduve, anduviste, anduvo,*	*anduvimos, anduvisteis, anduvieron,*
CONTAR, *to relate.*	Contando, Contado,	*Cuento, cuentas, cuenta,*	contamos, contais, *cuentan,*	Contaba, etc.	Conté; contaste, contó,	contamos, contasteis, contaron,
DAR, *to give.*	Dando, Dado,	*Doy,* das, da,	damos, dais, dan,	Daba, etc.	*Di, diste, dió,*	*dimos, disteis, dieron.*
ERRAR, *to err.*	Errando, Errado,	*Yerro, yerras, yerra,*	erramos, errais, *yerran,*	Erraba, etc.	Erré, erraste, erró,	erramos, errasteis, erraron.
JUGAR, *to play.*	Jugando, Jugado,	*Juego, juegas, juega,*	jugamos, jugais, *juegan,*	Jugaba, etc.	Jugué, jugaste, jugó,	jugamos, jugasteis, jugaron.
TENTAR, *to try.*	Tentando, Tentado,	*Tiento, tientas, tienta,*	tentamos, tentais, *tientan,*	Tentaba, etc.	Tenté, tentaste tentó	tentamos, tentasteis, tentaron.

SECOND

CABER, *to be contained.*	Cabiendo, Cabido,	*Quepo,* cabes, cabe,	cabemos, cabeis, caben,	Cabia, etc.	*Cupe cupiste cupo*	*cupimos, cupisteis, cupieron,*
CAER, *to fall.*	Cayendo, Caido,	*Caigo,* caes, cae,	caemos, caeis, caen,	Caia, etc.	Caí caiste, cayó,	caimos, caisteis, cayeron.
HACER, *to do.*	Haciendo, *Hecho,*	*Hago,* haces, hace,	hacemos, hacels, hacen,	Hacia, etc.	*Hice, hiciste, hizo,*	*hicimos, hicisteis, hicieron.*
MOVER, *to move.*	Moviendo, Movido,	*Muevo, mueves, mueve,*	movemos, moveis, *mueven,*	Movia, etc.	Moví moviste movió	movimos. movisteis, movieron.

* *Satisfacer*, a compound of *hacer*, has in

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

CONJUGATION.

Indicative. *future.*	Imperative.		Subjunctive. *present.*		Subjunctive, *imperfect and future.*
Andaré, etc.	Ande, anda, ande,	andemos, andád, anden,	Ande, andes, ande,	andemos, andeis anden,	*And-uviera*,-aria,-*uviese* etc. *Anduviere*, etc.
Contaré, etc.	*Cuente*, *cuenta* *cuente*,	contemos, contád, *cuenten*.	*Cuente*, *cuentes*, *cuente*,	contemos, conteis. *cuenten*.	Conta-ra,-ria,-ase, etc. Contare, etc.
Daré, etc.	Dé, da, dé,	demos dad den	Dé, des, dé,	demos, deis, den,	*Diera*, daria, *diese*, etc. *Diere*, etc.
Erraré, etc.	*Yerre*, *yerra*, *yerre*,	erremos, errád, *yerren*,	*Yerre*, *yerres*, *yerre*,	erremos, erreis, *yerren*,	Erra-ra,-ria,-se, etc, Errare, etc.
Jugaré, etc.	*Juegue*, *juega*, *juegue*,	juguemos, jugád, *jueguen*.	*Juegue*, *jueges*, *juegue*,	juguemos, jugueis, *jueguen*.	Jugara,-ria,-se, etc, Jugare, etc.
Tentaré, etc.	*Tiente*, *tienta*, *tiente*,	tentemos, tentád, *tienten*.	*Tiente*, *tientes*, *tiente*,	tentemos, tenteis, *tienten*.	Tenta-ra,-ria,-se, etc. Tentare, etc.

CONJUGATION

Cabré, etc.	*Quepa*, cabe, *quepa*,	*quepamos*, cabéd, *quepan*.	*Quepa*, *quepas*, *quepa*,	*quepamos*, *quepais*, *quepan*.	*Cupiera*, *cabria*, *cupiese*, etc. *Cupiere*, etc.
Caeré, etc.	*Caiga*, cae, *caiga*,	*caigamos*, caéd, *caigan*.	*Caiga*, *caigas*, *caiga*,	*caigamos*, *caigais*, *caigan*.	Cayera, caeria, cayese, etc. Cayere, etc.
Haré, etc.	*Haga*, *haz*,* *haga*,	*hagamos*, hacéd, *hagan*,	*Haga*, *hagas*, *haga*,	*hagamos*, *hagais*, *hagan*.	*Hiciera*, *haria*, *hiciese*, etc. *Hiciere*, etc.
Moveré, etc.	*Mueva*, *mueve*, *mueva*,	movamos movéd *muevan*.	*Mueva*, *muevas*, *mueva*,	movamos, movais, *muevan*.	Moviera, moveria, moviese, etc. Moviere, etc.

* this person both *satisfaz* and *satisface*.

INFINITIVE present.	PARTICIPLES pres. and past.	INDICATIVE present.		INDICATIVE. imperfect.	PAST definite.	
OLER, *to smell.*	Oliendo, Olido,	*Huelo,* *hueles,* *huele,*	olemos, oleis, *huelen,*	Olia, etc.	Olí, oliste, olió,	olimos, olisteis, olieron.
PARECER,* *to appear.*	Pareciendo, Parecido,	*Parezco,* pareces, parece,	parecemos, pareceis, parecen,	parecia, etc.	Parecí pareciste, pareció,	parcimos, parecisteis, parecieron.
PLACER,† *to please.*	....	.... place,	....	.... Placia,	.... *plugo,*	....
PODER, *to be able.*	*Pudiendo,* Podido,	*Puedo,* *puedes,* *puede,*	podemos, podeis, *pueden,*	Podia,	*Pude,* *pudiste,* *pudo,*	*pudimos,* *pudisteis,* *pudieron.*
PONER, *to place.*	Poniendo, *Puesto,*	*Pongo,* pones, pone,	ponemos, poneis, ponen,	Ponia, etc.	*Puse,* *pusiste,* *puso,*	*pusimos,* *pusisteis,* *pusieron.*
QUERER, *to be willing.*	Queriendo, Querido,	*Quiero,* *quieres,* *quiere,*	queremos, quereis, *quieren,*	Queria, etc.	*Quise,* *quisiste,* *quiso,*	*quisimos,* *quisisteis,* *quisieron,*
SABER, *to know.*	Sabiendo, Sabido,	*Sé,* sabes, sabe,	sabemos, sabeis, saben,	Sabia, etc.	*Supe,* *supiste,* *supo,*	*supimos,* *supisteis,* *supieron.*
SOLER,‡ *to be accustomed to.*	Soliendo, Solido,	*Suelo,* *sueles,* *suele,*	selemos soleis, *suelen.*	Solia, etc.	Solí, soliste, solió,	solimos, solisteis, solieron.
TENDER, *to extend.*	Tendiendo, Tendido,	*Tiendo,* *tiendes,* *tiende,*	tendemos, tendeis, *tienden.*	Tendia, etc.	Tendí, tendiste, tendió,	tendimos, tendisteis, tendieron
TENER, *to have.*	Teniendo, Tenido,	*Tengo,* *tienes,* *tiene,*	tenemos, teneis, *tienen.*	Tenia, etc.	*Tuve,* *tuviste,* *tuvo,*	*tuvimos,* *tuvisteis,* *tuvieron.*
TRAER, *to bring.*	Trayendo, Traido,	*Traigo,* traes, trae,	traemos, traeis, traen.	Traia, etc.	*Traje,* *trajiste,* *trajo,*	*trajimos,* *trajisteis,* *trajeron.*
VALER, *to be worth.*	Valiendo, Valido,	*Valgo,* vales, vale.	valemos, valeis, valen.	Valia, etc.	Valí, valiste, valió,	valimos, valisteis, valieron.

* All verbs in *acer*, *ecer*, and *ocer* (except *hacer* and *cocer*)

† *Placer* is used only in the tenses and persons here given, and

‡ This verb is seldom used except in the

INDICATIVE *future.*	IMPERATIVE.		SUBJUNCTIVE *present.*		SUBJUNCTIVE. *imperfect and future.*
Oleré, etc.	*Huela,* *huele,* *huela,*	olamos, oléd, *huelan.*	*Huela,* *huelas,* *huela,*	olamos, olais, *huelan.*	Oliera, oleria, oliese, olieras, olerias, etc. Oliere, etc.
Pareceré, etc.	*Parezca,* parece, *parezca,*	*parezcamos,* parecéd, *parezcan,*	*Parezca,* *parezcas,* *parezca,*	*parezcamos,* *parezcais,* *parezcan.*	Parec-iera-eria-iese, parec-ieras-erias, etc. Pareciere, etc.
....	....	....	.... *Plegue,*	....	.... *Pluguiera,* *pluguiese,* *Pluguiere.*†
Podré, etc.	*wanting,*		*Pueda,* *puedas,* *pueda,*	podamos, podais *puedan.*	*Pudiera,* *podria,* *pudiese.* *Pudiere,* etc.
Pondré, etc.	*Ponga,* *pon,* *ponga,*	*pongamos,* ponéd, *pongan,*	*Ponga,* *pongas,* *ponga,*	*pongamos,* *pongais,* *pongan.*	*Pusiera,* *pondria,* *pusiese,* etc, *Pusiere,* etc,
Querré, etc.	*Quiera,* *quiere,* *quiera,*	queramos, queréd, *quieran.*	*Quiera,* *quieras,* *quiera,*	queramos, querais, *quieran.*	*Quisiera,* *querria,* *quisiese,* etc. *Quisiere,* etc.
Sabré, etc.	*Sepa,* sabe, *sepa,*	*sepamos,* sabéd, *sepan.*	*Sepa,* *sepas,* *sepa,*	*sepamos,* *sepais,* *sepan.*	*Supiera,* *sabria,* *supiese,* etc. *Supiere,* etc,
Soleré, etc.	*Suela,* *suele,* *suela,*	solamos, soléd, *suelan.*	*Suela,* *suelas,* *suela,*	solamos, solais, *suelan,*	Soliera, soleria, soliese, solieras, etc. Soliere, etc.
Tenderé, etc.	*Tienda,* *tiende,* *tienda,*	tendamos, tendéd, *tiendan.*	*Tienda,* *tiendas,* *tienda,*	tendamos, tendais, *tiendan.*	Tendiera, tenderia, tendiese, etc. Tendiere, etc.
Tendré, etc.	*Tenga,* *ten,* *tenga,*	*tengamos,* tenéd, *tengan.*	*Tenga,* *tengas,* *tenga,*	*tengamos,* *tengais,* *tengan.*	*Tuviera,* *tendria,* *tuviese,* etc. *Tuviere,* etc.
Traeré, etc.	*Traiga,* trae, *traiga,*	*traigamos,* traéd, *traigon.*	*Traiga,* *traigas,* *traiga,*	*traigamos.* *traigais,* *traigan.*	*Trajera,* traeria, *trajese,* *trajeras,* traerias, etc. *Trajere,* etc.
Valdré, etc.	*Valga,* vale, *Valga,*	*valgamos,* valéd, *valgan,*	*Valga,* *valgas,* *valga,*	*valgamos,* *valgais,* *valgan.*	Valiera, *valdria,* valiese. etc. Valieré, etc.

take *z* before the *c* whenever this is followed by *a* or *o*.
in the interjection *Plegue á Dios!* May it please God!
Present and *Imperfect* of the *Indicative.*

Infinitive *present.*	Participles *pres. and past.*	Indicative *present.*		Indicative *imperfect.*	Past *definite*	
Ver, *to see,*	Viendo, *Visto,*	*Veo,* ves, ve,	vemos, veis, ven.	*Veia,* etc.	Ví, viste, vió,	vimos, visteis, vieron.
Yacer, *to lie.*		*Yago,* yaces, yace,	yacemos, yaceis, yacen.	Yacia, etc.	....	....

THIRD

Adquirir, *to acquire.*	Adquiriendo, Adquirido,	*Adquiero,* *adquieres,* *adquiere,*	adquirimos, adquiris, *adquieren.*	Adquiria, etc.	Adquirí, adquiriste, adquirió,	adquirimos. adquiristeis. adquirieron.
Asir,* *to seize.*	Asiendo, Asido,	*Asgo,* asces, ase,	asimos, asis, asen,	Asia, etc.	Así, asiste, asió,	asimos, asisteis, asieron.
Bendecir. *to bless.*	*Bendiciendo,* Bendecido,	*Bendigo,* *bendices,* *bendice,*	bendecimos, bendecis, *bendicen,*	Bendecia, etc.	*Bendige,* *bendigiste,* *bendijo,*	*bendigimos,* *bendigsteis,* *bendigeron.*
Decir, *to say.*	*Diciendo,* *Dicho.*	*Digo,* *dices,* *dice,*	decimos, decis, *dicen.*	Decia, etc.	*Dige,* *digiste,* *dijo,*	*digimos,* *digisteis,* *digeron.*
Dormir, *to sleep.*	*Durmiendo,* Dormido,	*Duermo,* *duermes,* *duerme,*	dormimos, dormis, *duermen.*	Dormia, etc.	Dormí, dormiste, *durmió,*	dormimos, dormisteis, *durmieron.*
Erguir, *to erect.*	*Irguiendo,* Erguido,	*Hiergo,*† *hiergues,* *hiergue,*	erguimos, erguis, *hierguen.*	Erguia, etc.	Erguí, erguiste, *irguió,*	erguimos, erguisteis, *irguieron.*
Incluir, *to include.*	*Incluyendo,* Incluido,	*Incluyo,* *incluyes,* *incluye,*	incluimos, incluis, *incluyen,*	Incluia, etc.	Incluí, incluiste, *incluyó.*	incluimos, incluisteis, *incluyeron*
Ir, *to go.*	*Yendo,* Ido,	*Voy,* *vas,* *va,*	*vamos,* *vais,* *van,*	*Iba,* etc.	*Fuí,* *fuiste,* *fué,*	*fuimos,* *fuisteis,* *fueron.*
Lucir, *to shine.*	Luciendo, Lucido,	*Luzco,* luces, luce,	lucimos, lucis, lucen.	Lucia, etc.	Lucí, luciste, lució,	lucimos, lucisteis, lucieron.

* The parts of this verb which are irregular are very little used.

† *Hi* is also written Y, *Yergo, Yergues,* etc.

0 se decian, y aun ahora lo dicen muchos. Yo creo que Salinas dice

Indicative *future.*	Imperative.		Subjunctive *present.*		Subjunctive *imperfect and future.*
Veré, etc.	*Vea,* ve, *vea,*	*veamos,* ved, *vean.*	*Vea,* *veas,* *vea,*	*veamos,* *veais,* *vean.*	Viera, veria, viese, vieras, verias, etc. Viere, etc.
.....	.....	.....	*Yaga,* *yagas,* *yaga,*	*yagamos.* *yagais.* *yagan.**	....

CONJUGATION.

Adquiriré, etc.	*Adquiera,* *adquiere,* *adquiera,*	adquiramos adquirid *adquieran.*	*Adquiera,* *adquieras,* *adquiera,*	adquiramos, adquirais, *adquieran.*	Adquiri-era-ria-ese, adquiri-eras-rias, etc. Adquiriere, etc.
Asiré, etc.	*Asga,* ase, *asga,*	*asgamos,* asíd, *asgan.*	*Asga,* *asgas,* *asga,*	*asgamos,* *asgais,* *asgan.*	Asiera, asiria, asiese, asieras, asirias, etc. Asiere, etc.
Bendeciré, etc.	*Bendiga,* *bendice,* *bendiga,*	*bendigamos,* bendecíd, *bendigan.*	*Bendiga,* *bendigas,* *bendiga,*	*bendigamos,* *bendigais,* *bendigan.*	*Bendigera,* bendeciria, *bendigese,* etc. *Bendigere,* etc.
Diré, etc.	*Diga,* *di,*† *diga,*	*digamos,* decíd, *digan.*	*Díga,* *digas,* *diga,*	*digamos,* *digais,* *digan,*	*Digera, diria, digese,* *digeras, dirias,* etc. *Digere,* etc
Dormiré, etc.	*Duerma,* *duerme,* *duerma,*	*durmamos,* dormíd, *duerman.*	*Duerma,* *duermas,* *duerma,*	*durmamos,* *durmais,* *duerman,*	*Durmiera,* dormiria, *durmiese,* etc. *Durmiere,* etc.
Erguiré, etc.	*Hierga,* *hiergue.* *hierga,*	*irgamos,* erguíd, *hiergan,*	*Hierga,* *hiergas,* *hierga,*	*irgamos,* *irgais,* *hiergan.*	*Irguiera,* erguiria, *irguiese,* etc. *Irguiere,* etc.
Incluiré, etc.	*Incluya,* *incluye,* *incluya,*	*incluyamos,* incluíd, *incluyan.*	*Incluya,* *incluyas,* *incluya,*	*incluyamos,* *incluyais,* *incluyan.*	*Incluyera,* incluiria, *incluyese,* etc. *Incluyere,* etc.
Iré, etc.	*Vaya,* *ve,* *vaya,*	*vamos,*‡ *id,* *vayan.*	*Vaya,* *vayas,* *vaya,*	*váyamos,* *vayais,* *vayan.*	*Fuera,* iria, *fuese* *fueras,* irias, etc. *Fuere,* etc.
Luciré, etc.	*Luzca,* luce, *luzca,*	*luzcamos,* lucíd, *luzcan.*	*Luzca,* *luzcas,* *luzca,*	*luzcamos,* *luzcais,* *luzcan,*	Luciera, luciria, luciese, lucieras, lucirias, etc. Luciere, etc.

* *Yacer* is seldom used except in epitaphs and in the third person singular and plural of the indicative present, *yace* and *yacen.*

† *Contradecir* and *desdecir*, compounds of *decir*, have *contradice*, and *desdice* in the second person singular, imperative.

‡ Sometimes *váyamos.*

Infinitive present.	Participles pres. and past.	Indicative present.		Indicative imperfect.	Past definite.	
Oir, *to hear.*	*Oyendo,* oido,	*Oigo,* *oyes,* *oye,*	oimos, ois. *oyen.*	Oia, etc.	Oí, oíste, *oyó,*	oimos. oisteis, *oyeron.*
Pedir, *to ask.*	*Pidiendo,* Pedido,	*Pido,* *pides,* *pide,*	pedimos, pedis, *piden.*	Pedia, etc.	Pedí, pediste, *pidió,*	pedimos, pedisteis, *pidieron.*
Podrir,* *to rot.*	*Pudriendo.* Podrido,	*Pudro,* *pudres,* *pudre,*	podrimos, podris, *pudren.*	Podria, etc.	Podri, podriste, *pudrió,*	podrimos, podristeis, *pudrieron.*
Producir, *to produce.*	Produciendo, Producido,	*Produzco,* produces, produce,	producimos, producis, producen,	Producia, etc.	*Produje,* *produjiste,* *produjo,*	*produjimos,* *prodjisteis,* *produjeron.*
Reir, *to laugh.*	*Riendo,* Reido,	*Rio,* *ries,* *rie,*	reimos, reis, *rien.*	Reia, etc.	Reí, reiste, *rió,*	reimos, reisteis, *rieron.*
Salir, *to go out.*	Saliendo, Salido,	*Salgo,* sales, sale,	salimos, salis, salen.	Salia, etc.	Salí, saliste, salió,	salimos, salisteis, salieron,
Sentir, *to feel.*	*Sintiendo,* Sentido,	*Siento,* *sientes,* *siente,*	sentimos, sentis, *sienten.*	Sentia, etc.	Sentí, sentiste, *sintió,*	sentimos, sentisteis, *sintieron.*
Venir, *to come.*	*Viniendo,* Venido,	*Vengo,* *vienes,* *viene,*	venimos, venis, *vienen,*	Venia, etc.	*Vine,* *viniste.* *vino,*	*vinimos,* *vinisteis,* *vinieron.*

IMPERSONAL

Amanecer, *to grow light.*	Amaneciendo, Amanecido,	Amanece, *it grows light.*	Amanecia,	Amaneció,
Nevar, *to snow.*	Nevando, Nevado,	*Nieva,* *it snows,*	Nevaba,	Nevó,
Tronar, *to thunder.*	Tronando, Tronado,	*Truena,* *it thunders,*	Tronaba,	Tronó.

* *Podrir,* in its literal sense is used only in a few tenses and

Indicative *future.*	Imperative.		Subjunctive *present.*		Subjunctive *perfect and future.*
Oiré, etc.	*Oiga, oye, oiga*	*oigamos,* oíd, *oigan.*	*Oiga, oigas, oiga,*	*oigamos, oigais, oigan.*	*Oyera,* oiria, *oyese. oyeras,* etc. *Oyere,* etc.
Pediré, etc.	*Pida, pide, pida,*	*pidamos,* pedíd, *pidan,*	*Pida, pidas, pida,*	*pidamos, pidais, pidan.*	*Pidiera,* pediria, *pidiese,* etc. *Pidiere,* etc.
Podriré, etc.	*Pudra, pudre, pudra,*	*pudramos,* podríd, *pudran.*	*Pudra, pudras, pudra,*	*pudramos, pudrais, pudran,*	*Pudriera,* podriria, *pudriese, pudrieras,* etc. *Pudriere,* etc.
Produciré, etc.	*Produzca,* produce, *produzca,*	*produzcamos,* producíd, *produzcan.*	*Produzca, produzcas, produzca,*	*produzcamos, produzcais, produzcan.*	*Produjera,* produciria, *produjese,* etc. *Produjere,* etc.
Reiré, etc.	*Ria, rie, ria,*	*riamos,* reíd, *rian,*	*Ria, rias, ria,*	*riamos, riais, rian.*	*Riera,* reiria, *riese,* etc. *Riere,* etc.
Saldré, etc.	*Salga, sal; salga,*	*salgamos,* salíd, *salgan,*	*Salga, salgas, salga,*	*salgamos. salgais, salgan.*	*Saliera,* saldria, *saliese, salieras,* saldrias, etc. *Saliere,* etc.
Sentiré, etc.	Sienta, siente, sienta,	*sintamos,* sentíd, *sientan.*	*Sienta, sientas, sienta,*	*sintamos, sintais, sientan.*	*Sintiera,* sintiria, *sintiese, sintieras,* etc. *Sintiere,* etc.
Vendré, etc.	*Venga, ven, venga,*	*vengamos,* veníd, *vengan.*	*Venga, vengas, venga,*	*vengamos, vengais, vengan.*	*Viniera, vendria, viniese, vinieras,* etc. *Viniere,* etc.

VERBS.

Amanecerá,	*Amanezca,*	*Amanezca,*	Amanec--iera-eria-iese, Amaneciere.
Nevara,	*Nieve,*	*Nieve,*	Nevara, nevaria, nevase, Nevare,
Tronará,	*Truene,*	*Truene,*	Tronara,tronaria,tronase. Tronare,

persons.

Anochecer, *to grow night*, Anochece, *it grows night*, is conjugated like *amanecer*.

Haber, *to have* or *to be*, *hay* or *ha*, *there is*, *there are*, is the same in all the rest as the third person singular of the auxiliary *haber*. Habia, *there was* or *were*. *Hubo*, *there was* or *were*. *Habrá*, *there will be*. *Haya*, *let there be*. *Haya*, *there may be*. *Hubiera*, *habria*, *hubiese*, *there should be*, *might be*, *would be*. *Hubiere*, *there should be*,

Hacer, (impersonal), is the same as the third person singular of the personal verb *hacer*. Hace, *it is*. Hacia, *it was*, etc.

Helar, *to freeze*, is conjugated like nevar. *Hiela*, *it freezes*, etc.

Llover, *to rain*, is conjugated like third person singular of mover. *Llueve*, *it rains*, etc.

Escarchar, *to freeze*. Escarcha, *it freezes*.
Granizar, *to hail*. Graniza, *it hails*.
Lloviznar, *to drizzle*. Llovizna, *it drizzles*.
Relampaguear, *to lighten*. Relampaguea, *it lightens*.
} are regular, as granizar.

VERBS WITH TWO PAST PARTICIPLES.

Each of the following verbs, besides the regular past participle, has also an irregular one, which is here given.

To surfeit,	Ahitar,	*ahito*.	*To insert*,	Insertar,	*inserto*.
To bless,	Bendecir,	*bendito*.	*To invert*,	Invertir,	*inverso*.
To compel,	Compeler,	*compulso*.	*To ingraft*,	Ingerir,	*ingerto*.
To conclude,	Concluir,	*concluso*.	*To join*,	Juntar,	*junto*.
To confound,	Confundir,	*confuso*.	*To curse*,	Maldecir,	*maldito*.
To convince,	Convencer,	*convicto*.	*To manifest*,	Manifestar,	*manifiesto*.
To convert,	Convertir,	*converso*.	*To fade*,	Marchitar,	*marchito*.
To awake,	Despertar,	*despierto*.	*To omit*,	Omitir,	*omiso*.
To elect,	Elejir,	*electo*.	*To oppress*,	Oprimir,	*opreso*.
To wipe,	Enjugar,	*enjuto*.	*To perfect*,	Perfeccionar,	*perfecto*.
To exclude,	Excluir,	*excluso*.	*To seize*,	Prender,	*preso*.
To expel,	Expeler,	*expulso*.	*To prescribe*.	Prescribir,	*prescrito*.
To express,	Expresar,	*expreso*.	*To provide*,	Proveer,	*provisto*.
To extinguish,	Extinguir,	*extinto*.	*To shut up*,	Recluir,	*recluso*.
To fix,	Fijar,	*fijo*.	*To break*,	Romper,	*roto*.
To fry,	Freir,	*frito*.	*To loosen*,	Soltar,	*suelto*.
To satiate,	Hartar,	*harto*.	*To suppress*,	Suprimir,	*supreso*.
To include,	Incluir,	*incluso*.	*To suspend*,	Suspender,	*suspenso*.
To incur,	Incurrir,	*incurso*.	*To substitute*,	Sustituir,	*Sustituto*.

The regular participle of these verbs is always used with the auxiliary *haber*, and the irregular is used like an adjective; as, *El está despierto; le han despertado temprano;* he is awake, they have awaked him early. *Inserto*, *opreso*, *preso*, *provisto*, *roto*, and *supreso*, however, are used with the auxiliary.

TABLE OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

THE numbers in the following table mark the page where the verb to which it belongs will be found, in all its moods and tenses, or some other verb, whose paradigm it follows. Verbs now obsolete are marked *.

* *Atestar*, meaning *to attest*, is regular.

Absolver,	has the	participle,	*absuelto*.	*Freir*,	has the	participle,	*frito*.
Abrir,	"	"	*abierto*.	*Imprimir*,	"	"	*impreso*.
Cubrir,	"	"	*cubierto*.	*Morir*,	"	"	*muerto*.
Descubrir,	"	"	*descubierto*.	*Prender*,	"	"	*preso*.
Encubrir,	"	"	*encubierto*.	*Proscribir*,*	"	"	*proscrito*, or *proscripto*.
Escribir,	"	"	*escrito*.	*Soltar*,	"	"	*suelto*.
Fechar,	"	"	*fecho*.	*Volver*,	"	"	*vuelto*.

* Other compounds of *escribir* have two participles. *Describir* has *descrito* and *descripto*; *Prescribir* has *prescrito* and *prescripto*.

DICTIONARY.

ABBREVIATIONS.

adj., adjective.
adv., adverb.
art., article.
c., common gender.
conj., conjunction.
dim., diminutive.
f., feminine.
int., interjection.
m., masculine.
num., numeral.
p., past.
part., participle.
pl., plural.
prep., preposition.
v. r., verb reflective.
pres., present.
pron., pronoun.
rel., relative.
s., substantive.
v. a., verb active.
v. i., verb impersonal.
v. n., verb neuter.

Letters placed after nouns, adjectives, and participles, show that the feminine is formed by adding those letters. Some words which are the same in both languages, have been omitted, as needing no explanation.

A.

A, prep., *to.*
Abierto, a, adj., *open.*, part. p., *opened.*
Abreviar, v. a., *to shorten, to abridge.*
Abrir, v. a., *to open.*
Absolutamente, adv., *absolutely.*
Abuelo, s. m., *grandfather.*
Abundancia, s. f., *abundance.*
Abundante, adj., *abundant.*
Abundar, v. n , *to abound.*
Acabar, v. a. and n., *to finish.*
Accidente, s. m., *accident.*
Accion, s. f., *act, action.*
Acero, s. m., *steel.*
Acompañar, v. a., *to accompany.*
Acostumbrarse, v. r., *to become accustomed.*
Acusar, v. a., *to accuse.*
Admirable, adj., *admirable.*
Admiracion, s. f., *admiration.*
Admirar, v. a., *to admire.*
Adonde, adv., *where, to what place.*
Adornado, a, part. p., *adorned.*
Adornar, v. a., *to adorn.*
Adquerir, v. a., *to acquire.*
Adulador, s. m., *flatterer.*
Afeitar, v. a., *to shave.*
Agradado, a, part. p., *pleased.*
Agradar, v. a., *to please.*
Agua, s. f., *water.*
Agudo, a, adj., *acute.*
Aguila, s. f.. *eagle.*
Ahí, adv., *there.*
Ahora, adv., *now.*
Aire, s. m., *air.*
Ala, s. f., *wing.*
Alarma, s. f., *alarm.*
Alcanzar, v. a., *to obtain.*
Alegre, adj., *joyful.*
Aleman, s. and adj., *German.*
Algodon, s. m., *cotton.*
Alguno, a, algun, adj., *some, any.*
Alimentar, v. a., *to nourish.*
Alimento, s. m., *food.*
Allí, adv., *there.*
Alma, s. f., *soul.*
Alonso, s. m., *Alonzo.*
Alteracion, s. f., *alteration.*
Altísimo, a, adj., *very high.*
Alto, a, adj., *high, tall.*
Alto, s. m., *height, top.*
Altura, s. f., *height.*
Amable, adj., *amiable.*
Amar, v. a., *to love.*
Amarillo, a. adj., *yellow.*
Amazona, s. f., *Amazon.*
Ambos, as, adj., *both.*
Amenazar, v. a., *to threaten.*
Americano, a. adj. and s. m. *American.*
Amiga, s. f., *friend.*
Amigo, s. m., *friend.*
Amistad, s. f., *friendship.*
Amo, s. m., *master.*
Amor, s. m., *love.*
Ancho, a. adj., *broad, wide.*

Anciano, a. adj., *ancient.*
Andar, v. n., *to go.*
Añejo, a, adj., *old.*
Anillo, s. m., *ring.*
Animado, a, adj., *animated, living.*
Animal, s. m., *animal.*
Animalito, s. m. dim., *little animal.*
Animar, v. a., *to animate.*
Animo, s. m., *mind.*
Año, s. m., *year.*
Anochecer, v. n., *to become night.*
Anteponer, v. a., *to put before, to prefer.*
Antes, adv., *before.*
Antigüedad, s. f., *antiquity.*
Antiguo, a, adj., *ancient.*
Antiparos, s., *Antiparos.*
Anunciar, v. a., *to announce.*
Apacible, adj., *peaceable.*
Apagado, a, part. p., *stifled.*
Apagarse, v. r., *to be extinguished.*
Apeles, s. m., *Apelles.*
Apolo, s. m., *Apollo.*
Aprecio, s. m., *appraisement, esteem.*
Aquí, adv., *here.*
Arabe, adj., and s., *Arabian, Arab.*
Arbol, s. m., *tree.*
Arco, s. m., *bow.*
Arena, s. f., *sand.*
Aristipo, s. m., *Aristippus.*
Arma, s. f., *weapon;* (pl.) *arms.*
Arreglar, v. a., *to regulate.*
Arrodillarse, v. r., *to kneel down.*
Arrojar, v. a., *to dart, to throw, to cast.*
Arroyo, s. m., *rivulet.*
Arruinar, v. a., *to ruin.*
Arte, s. m., *art.*
Artificio, s. m., *art, skill.*
Así, adv., *so, thus.*
Asno, s. m., *ass.*
Aspecto, s. m., *aspect.*
Astronomía, s. f., *astronomy.*
Asunto, s. m., *subject.*
Atlante, s. m., *Atlas.*
Atras, de atras, adv., *behind.*
Atravesar, v. a., *to pass through.*
Aun, adv., *yet, still.*
Aun cuando, con., *although.*
Aunque, con., *although.*
Ausentarse, v. r., *to absent one's self.*
Autor, s. m., *author.*
Autoridad, s. f., *authority.*
Ave, s. f., *bird.*
Ayuda., s. f., *help.*
Azogue, s. m., *quicksilver.*
Azúcar, s. m., *sugar.*
Azul, adj., *blue.*

B.

Babilonia, s. f., *Babylon.*
Bajo (de), prep., *under.*
Baleares, adj., *Belearic.*
Bañar, v. a., *to bathe.*
Barba, s. f., *beard.*
Bárbaro, a. adj., *Barbary, barbarous.*
Barbero, s. m., *barber.*
Barquero, s. m., *boatman.*
Bastante, adv., *sufficiently.*
Bastar, v. n., *to suffice.*
Baston, s. m., *cane, stick.*
Batalla, s. f., *battle.*
Baul, s. m., *trunk.*
Baulito, s. m. dim., *little trunk.*
Beber, v. a., *to drink.*
Belicoso, a, adj., *warlike.*
Belleza, s. f., *beauty.*
Bello, a, adj., *beautiful.*
Beneficio, s. m., *benefit.*
Benéfico, a, adj., *beneficent.*
Benevolencia, s. f., *good-will.*
Bien, adv., *well, very.*
Bien s. m., *good, property.*
Bien sea, *perhaps;* ó bien, *or perhaps.*
Billete, s. m., *note.*
Bizcocho, s. m., *biscuit.*
Blanco, a, adj., *white.*
Blancura, s. f., *whiteness.*
Bolsa, s. f., *purse.*
Bonito, a, adj., *pretty.*
Bosque, s. m., *wood.*
Bota, s. f., *boot.*
Botella, s. f., *bottle.*
Boton, s. m., *button.*
Braza, s. f., *fathom.*
Brazo, s. m., *arm.*
Brillante, adj., *brilliant.*
Brillar, v. n., *to shine.*
Bronce, s. m., *brass.*
Buen, bueno. a, adj., *good.*
Buey, s. m., *ox.*
Buscar, v. a., *to seek, to look for.*
Buscarse, v. r., *to be sought.*

C.

Caballeriza, s. f., *stable.*

Caballero, s. m., *gentleman, knight.*
Caballo, s. m., *horse.*
Cabello, s. m., *hair.*
Caber, v. n., *to be able to be contained.*
Cabeza, s. f., *head.*
Cada, adj., *each.*
Cadáver, s. m., *dead body.*
Cadena, s. f., *chain.*
Caer, v. n., *to fall.*
Café, s. m., *coffee.*
Calidad, s. f., *quality.*
Caliente, adj., *hot.*
Callar, v. n., *to be silent.*
Calle, s. f., *street, alley.*
Calor, s. m., *heat.*
Calzado, a. part. p., *shod.*
Cama, s. f., *bed.*
Camello, s. m., *camel.*
Caminar, v. n., *to go, to move along.*
Camino, s. m., *road.*
Camisa, s. f., *shirt.*
Campo, s. m., *field, country.*
Canasta, s. f., *basket.*
Canciller, s. m., *chancellor.*
Candelero, s. m., *candlestick.*
Capa, s. f., *cloak.*
Cara, s. f., *face.*
Carga, s. f., *load.*
Carlos, s. m., *Charles.*
Carne, s. f., *flesh, meat.*
Carnero, s. m., *sheep.*
Carnívoro, a, adj., *carnivorous.*
Carpintero, s. m., *carpenter*
Carro, s. m., *car.*
Carta, s. f., *letter.*
Cartaginense, adj., *Carthagenian.*
Casa, s. f., *house;* á casa, *home.*
Casaca, s. f., *coat.*
Casarse, v. r., *to marry.*
Cascada, s. f., *water-fall.*
Cáscara, s. f., *bark.*
Casi, adv., *almost.*
Casto, a, adj., *chaste.*
Casualidad, s. f., *chance.*
Catorce, num., *fourteen.*
Causa, s. f., *cause.*
Causar, v. a., *to cause.*
Caverna, s. f., *cavern.*
Cayendo, part. pres., *falling.*
Cayó, (past def. of *caer,*) *fell.*
Célebre, adj., *celebrated.*
Ceniciento, a, adj., *ash-colored.*
Cerca, adv., *near, around.*
Cerca (de), prep., *near, around.*
Cerrar, v. a., *to shut.*
Cesar, v. n., *to cease.*
Cetro, s. m., *sceptre.*
Chocolate, s. m., *chocolate.*
Choza, s. f., *cottage.*
Ciego, a. adj., *blind.*
Cielo, s. m., *heaven.*
Cien, num., *hundred.*
Ciencia, s. f., *science.*
Cieno, s. m., *mud.*
Ciento, num., *hundred.*
Cierto, a, adj., *certain.*
Cinco, num., *five.*
Cincuenta, num., *fifty.*
Cinta, s. f., *ribbon.*
Circundar, v. a., *to surround.*
Circunferencia, s. f., *circumference.*
Cisne, s. m., *swan.*
Ciudad, s. f., *city.*
Ciudadano, s. m., *citizen.*
Civil, adj., *civil.*
Claro, a, adj., *clear.*
Claro, adv., *clearly.*
Clase, s. f., *class.*
Clavo, s. m., *nail.*
Cleóbulo, s. m., *Cleobulus.*
Clima, s. m., *climate.*
Cobre. s. m., *copper.*
Cocinera, s. f., *cook.*
Coger, v. a., *to take.*
Col, s. f. *cabbage.*
Cola, s. f., *tail.*
Colocar, v. a, *to place.*
Colonia, s. f., *colony.*
Color, s. m., *color.*
Colorado, a, adj., *red.*
Columna, s. f., *column.*
Comenzar, v. a., *to begin.*
Comer, v. a., *to eat.*
Comerciante, s. m., *merchant.*
Comido, a, part. p., *eaten.*
Como, adv., *as, about;* como de, *about.*
Compañero, s. m., *companion.*
Compañía, s. f., *company.*
Componer, v. a., *to compose.*
Componerse, v. r., *to be composed.*
Comprar, v. a., *to buy.*
Comprender, v. a., *to comprehend.*
Comun, adj., *common.*
Comunicar, v. a., *to communicate.*
Comunmente, adv., *commonly.*
Concibir, v. a., *to conceive.*

Conceder, v. a., *to grant.*
Conciudadano, s. m., *fellow-citizen.*
Conducta, s. f., *conduct.*
Confesar, v. a., *to confess.*
Confusion, s. f., *confusion.*
Conmigo, pron., *with me.*
Conocer, v. a., *to know.*
Conocerse, v. r., *to be known, to know each other, to know one's self.*
Conocido, part. p., *known.*
Conquistador, s. m., *conqueror.*
Consagrar, v. a., *to consecrate.*
Consecuencia, s. f., *consequence.*
Consejo, s. m., *advice, counsel, council.*
Conservar, v. a., *to preserve.*
Considerable, adj., *considerable.*
Considercion, s. f., *consideration.*
Considerar, v. a., *to consider.*
Consigo, pron., *with himself.*
Consistir, v. n., *to consist.*
Constante, adj., *constant.*
Construir, v. a., *to build,*
Contar, v. a., *to count.*
Contento, a. adj., *contented.*
Contiguo, a. adj., *contiguous.*
Continente, s. m., *continent.*
Continuamente, adv., *continually.*
Continuar, v. n., *to continue.*
Continuo, a, adj., *continual.*
Contra, prep., *against.*
Convenir, v. n., *to suit.*
Conversacion, s. f., *conversation.*
Convertir, v. a., *to change, to convert.*
Copenhague, s., *Copenhagen.*
Corazon, s. m., *heart.*
Corbata, s. f., *cravat.*
Corona, s. f., *crown.*
Coronado, a, part. p., *crowned.*
Correr, v. n., *to run.*
Corriente, s. m., *current.*
Corrupcion, s. f., *corruption.*
Cortar, v. a., *to cut, to cut off.*
Cortarse, v. r., *to be cut.*
Corto, a, adj., *short,*
Cosa, s. f., *thing.*
Cosecha, s. f., *crop.*
Costa, s. f., *shore, coast.*
Coturno, s. m., *buskin.*
Crear, v. a., *to create.*
Crédito, s. m., *credit.*
Creencia, s. f., *belief.*
Creer, v. a., *to believe.*
Creso, s. m., *Croesus.*
Creyendo, part. pres., *believing.*
Criado, s. m., *servant.*
Criador, s. m., *creator.*
Criar, v. a., *to create.*
Criatura, s. f., *creature.*
Cristianismo, s. m., *christianity.*
Christiano, adj. and s., *christian.*
Cruel, adj., *cruel.*
Crueldad, s. f., *cruelty.*
Cruzado, a, part. p., *crossed.*
Cuadro, s. m., *picture.*
Cuadrúpedo, s. m., *quadruped.*
Cual, adj. and pron., *which, what;* el cual, pron., *who, which, that, whom.*
Cuando, adv., *when.*
Cuanto, a, adj., *how much, as much;* cuantos, *how many, as many as.*
Cuarenta, num., *forty.*
Cuarto, s. m., *room.*
Cuatro, num., *four.*
Cubierto, a, adj. and part., *covered.*
Cubo, s. m., *bucket.*
Cubrir, v. a., *to cover.*
Cuchillo, s. m., *knife.*
Cuelgan, (ind. pres. of *colgar,*) *hang.*
Cuello, s. m., *neck.*
Cuero, s. m., *leather.*
Cuerpo, s. m., *body.*
Cueva, s. f., *cave, burrow.*
Cuidado, s. m., *care.*
Cuidar, v. a., *to take care.*
Cultivado, a, part. p., *cultivated.*
Cumplir, v. a., *to fulfil, to execute.*
Cuyo, a, adj., *whose.*

D

Dado, a, part. p., *given.*
Dama, s. f., *lady.*
Dar, v. a., *to give.*
De, prep., *of, by, from, with.*
Deber, v. a., *to owe, ought.*
Debil, adj., *feeble.*
Decir, v. a., *to say.*
Decirse, v. r., *to be said.*
Defender, v. a, *to defend.*
Defensa, s. f., *defense.*
Defensor, s. m., *defender.*
Dejar, v. a., *to leave, to let.*
Delante, prep., *before.*
Deleite, s. m., *pleasure.*
Delicioso, a, adj., *delicious.*
Demas, adv. and adj., *over, beyond;* los demas, *the rest, the other.*

masiado, adv., *too.*

masiado, a, adj., *too much, excessive.*

ntro, adv., *within.*

recho, a, adj., *right.*

rredor, s. m., en derredor, *around.*

sayunarse, v. r., *to breakfast.*

sconsuelo, s. m., *affliction.*

scubrir, v. a., *to discover.*

sde, prep., *from.*

sear, v. a., *to desire.*

sgracia, s. f., *misfortune.*

sigual, adj., *unequal.*

spertar, v. a., *to awaken.*

spues, prep., *after.*

spues, adv., *after, afterwards.*

stinar, v. a., *to destine.*

tener, v. a., *to detain.*

terminar, v. a., *to determine.*

vorar, v. a., *to devour.*

a, s. m., *day.*

amante, s. m., *diamond.*

[illegible]

Dos, num., *two.*

Doscientos, num., *two hundred.*

Doy, (ind. pres. of *dar,*) *I give.*

Dudar, v. a. and n., *to doubt.*

Dueño, s. m., *master, lord.*

Duerme, (ind. pres. of *dormir,*) *sleeps.*

Dulce, adj., *sweet, gentle, mild.*

Dulcísimo, a, adj., *most sweet, very sweet.*

Dulzura, s. f., *sweetness, gentleness.*

Durante, prep., *during.*

Duro, a, adj., *hard.*

E.

E, conj., *and.*

Edad, s. f., *age.*

Edificar, v. a., *to build.*

Edificio, s. m., *edifice, building.*

Edinburgo, s., *Edinburg.*

Efecto, s. m., *effect;* en efecto, *in fact.*

Egipcio, s. m., *Egyptian.*

Egipto, s., *Egypt.*

Ejecutar, v. a., *to execute.*

Ejercito, s. m., *army.*

El de, *the one of, that of.*

Elefante, s. m., *elephant.*

Elevacion, s. f., *elevation.*

Elevado, a, adj. and part., *elevated.*

Elogio, s. m., *eulogy.*

Eminentemente, adv., *eminently.*

Emperador, s. m., *emperor.*

Empezado, a, part. p., *begun.*

Emplear, v. a., *to employ.*

Empresa, s. f., *enterprise.*

Encerrar, v. a., *to shut, to shut up.*

Encontrar, v. a., *to find, to meet with.*

Encontrarse, v. r., *to be found.*

Enemigo, s. m., *enemy.*

Enfadar, v. a., *to displease.*

Enfermedad, s. f., *infirmity, sickness.*

Enfermo, a, adj., *sick.*

Enigma, s. m., *enigma.*

Enrique, s. m., *Henry.*

Enseñar, v. a., *to teach.*

Entender, v. a., *to understand.*

Entenderse, v. r., *to be understood.*

Entendimiento, s. m., *understanding.*

Enteramente, adv., *entirely.*

Entero, a, adj., *entire, whole.*

Entonces, adv., *then, at that time.*

Entrada, s. f., *entrance.*

Entrar, v. a., *to enter.*

Entre, prep., *between, among.*
Entregar, v. a., *to deliver.*
Enviar, v. a., *to send, to send away.*
Erigir, v. a., *to erect.*
Escipion, s. m., *Scipio.*
Escita, s., *Scythian.*
Escitia, s. f., *Scythia.*
Esclavitud, s. f., *slavery.*
Escoba, s. f., *broom.*
Escocces, s. m., *Scotchman.*
Escocia, s. f., *Scotland.*
Escribir, v. a., *to write.*
Escuchar, v. a., *to listen to.*
Esfera, s. f., *sphere, globe.*
Eso, pron, *that.*
Espacio, s. m., *space.*
Espacioso, a, adj., *spacious.*
Espada, *sword.*
España, s. f., *Spain.*
Español, s. and adj., *Spaniard, Spanish.*
Esparcer, v. a., *to spread, to diffuse.*
Especie, s. f., *species, kind.*
Espedicion, *expedition.*
Esperanza, s. f., *hope.*
Esperar, v. a., *to hope.*
Espeso, a, adj., *thick.*
Espina, s. f., *thorn.*
Esplicar. See *explicar.*
Esta, pron., f., *this, this one, the latter.*
Establecer, v. a., *to establish.*
Estado, s. m., *state.*
Estatua, s. f., *statue.*
Este, pron. m., *this, this one, the latter.*
Estender, v. a., *to extend.*
Estimar, v. a., *to esteem.*
Estio, s. m., *summer.*
Estranjero. See *extranjero.*
Estraordinario. See *extraordinario.*
Estrella, s. f., *star.*
Estudiar, v. a., *to study.*
Estudio, s. m., *study.*
Eternidad, s. f., *eternity.*
Eterno, a, adj., *eternal.*
Europa, s. f., *Europe.*
Excelencia, s. f., *excellence.*
Excelente, adj., *excellent.*
Exento, a, adj., *exempt.*
Existir, v. n., *to exist.*
Explicar, v. a., *to explain.*
Expulcion, s. f., *expulsion.*
Extranjero, s. and adj., *foreigner, stranger, foreign.*
Extenso, a., adj., *extensive.*
Extraordinario, a, adj., *extraordinary.*
Extremamente, adv., *extremely.*
Extremo, s. m., *extremity, end.*

F.

Fácil, adj., *easy.*
Facilmente, adv., *easily.*
Fallecer, v. n., *to die.*
Falta, s. f., *fault.*
Faltar, v. n., *to fail, to be wanting.*
Fama, s. f., *fame.*
Familia, s. f., *family.*
Famoso, a, adj., *famous.*
Faro, s. m., *Pharos, lighthouse.*
Fatiga, s. f., *fatigue.*
Fe, s. f., *faith, revealed truth.*
Febrero, s. m., *February.*
Felicidad, s. f., *happiness.*
Feliz, adj., *happy.*
Felizmente, adv., *happily.*
Feroz, adj., *fierce.*
Fértil, adj., *fertile.*
Fertilizar, v. a., *to fertilize.*
Fidelidad, s. f., *fidelity.*
Fidias, s. m., *Phidias.*
Fiel, adj., *faithful.*
Figura, s. f., *figure.*
Filo, s. m., *thread, edge (of a sword).*
Filosofía, *philosophy.*
Filósofo, s. m., *philosopher.*
Fin, s. m., *end;* en fin, *finally.*
Fino, a, adj., *fine.*
Firme, adj., *firm.*
Firmeza, s. f., *firmness.*
Flauta, s. f., *flute.*
Flecha, s. f., *arrow*
Flexible, adj., *flexible.*
Flor, s. f., *flower.*
Forastero, s. m., *stranger, foreigner.*
Forma, s. f., *form.*
Formar, v. a., *to form.*
Fortuna, s. f., *fortune.*
Frances, adj. and s., *French, Frenchman.*
Francia, s. f., *France.*
Frecuentemente, adv., *frequently.*
Frente, s. f., *forehead.*
Fresco, a, adj., *fresh, cool.*
Frio, a, adj., *cold.*
Frio, s. m., *cold.*
Fruta, s. f., *fruit.*

Fruto, s. m., *fruit.*
Fuego, s. m., *fire.*
Fuerte, adj., *strong.*
Fuerza, s. f., *strength, force.*
Fundado, a, part. p., *founded.*
Fusil, s. m., *gun.*

G.

Gacela, s. f., *gazelle.*
Gallina, s. f., *hen.*
Gana, s. f., *desire, fancy.*
Ganado, s. m., *flock, herd.*
Garra, s. f., *claw.*
Gasto, s. m., *cost, expense.*
Gato, s. m., *cat.*
General, s. m., *general.*
General, adj., *general.*
Generoso, a, adj., *generous.*
Gente, s. f., *people.*
Gerion, s. m., *Geryon.*
Gloria, s. f., *glory.*
Glorioso, a, adj., *glorious.*
Gobernador, s. m., *governor.*
Gobernar, v. a., *to govern.*
Gobierno, s. m., *government.*
Golpe, s. m., *blow.*
Gordo, s. m., *fat.*
Gorro, s. m., *cap.*
Gracias, s. f. pl., *thanks.*
Gran, grande, adj., *great, large.*
Grandemente, adv., *greatly.*
Grandeza, s. f., *greatness.*
Grano, s. m., *grain.*
Griego, s. m., *Greek.*
Grito, s. m., *cry.*
Gruta, s. f., *grotto.*
Guante, s. m., *glove.*
Guarda, s. f., *custody*
Guardar, v. a., *to guard, to keep.*
Guarnecido, a, part. p., *furnished.*
Guerra, s. f., *war.*
Guerrero, s. m., *warrior.*

H.

Ha, v. i., *it is, there are.*
Habia, v. i., *there was, there were.*
Habiendo, part. pres., *having.*
Habitante, s. m., *inhabitant.*
Habitar, v. a., *to inhabit.*
Hablar, v. a., *to speak.*
Hace, v. i., *it is.*
Hacer, v. a., *to make, to do, to go.*
Hacerse, v. r., *to be made, to be done.*
Hacia, prep., *towards.*
Hacia, v. i., *it was.*
Hallar, v. a., *to find.*
Hallarse, v. r., *to be, to happen to be.*
Hambre, s. f., *hunger.*
Hasta, prep., *to, unto.*
Hasta, adv., *until.*
Hay, v. i., *there is, there are.*
Hecho, s. m., *deed.*
Hecho, a, part. p., *made, done.*
Hembra, s. f., *female.*
Hermana, s. f., *sister.*
Hermano, s. m., *brother.*
Hermoso, a, adj., *handsome.*
Héroe, s. m., *hero.*
Heroico, a, adj., *heroic.*
Hespérides, s. f. pl., *Hesperides.*
Hierro, s. m., *iron.*
Hija, s. f., *daughter.*
Hijo, s. m., *son.*
Historia, s. f., *history.*
Historiador, s. m., *historian.*
Hizo, (past def. of hacer,) *made.*
Hoja, s. f., *leaf.*
Hombro, s. m., *shoulder.*
Homenaje, s. m., *homage.*
Honor, s. m., *honor.*
Honra, s. f., *honor;* tuvieron á honra, *they deemed it an honor.*
Honrar, v. a., *to honor.*
Hora, s. f., *hour.*
Hoy, adv., *to day, at this day.*
Huevo, s. m., *egg.*
Huir, v. n., *to fly.*
Humano, a, adj., *human.*
Humedad, s. f., *humidity.*
Humilde, adj., *humble.*
Huye, (pres. ind., of huir,) *flies.*
Huyen, (pres. ind. of huir,) *fly.*
Huyendo, part. pres., *flying.*

I.

Idea, s. f., *idea.*
Iglesia, s. f., *church.*
Igual, adj., *equal.*
Ilustrado, a, part. p., *illustrated.*
Ilustrar, v. a., *to enlighten, to illustrate, to make illustrious.*
Ilustre, adj., *illustrious.*
Implacable, adj., *implacable.*

Imposible, adj., *impossible.*
Inclinar, v. a., *to incline.*
Indiano, s. m., *Indian, one who has resided in India.*
Indias, s. f. pl., *Indies.*
Indigno, a, adj., *unworthy*
Indispensable, adj., *indispensable.*
Industria, s. f., *diligence.*
Infantería, s. f., *infantry.*
Infeliz, adj., *unhappy.*
Inferior, adj., *inferior, lower.*
Infiernos, s. m., pl., *infernal regions.*
Infinitamente, adv., *infinitely.*
Ingenio, s. m., *genius.*
Inglaterra, s. f., *England.*
Ingles, s. m., *Englishman.*
Ingles, adj., *English.*
Injuria, s. f., *injury.*
Inmediatemente, adv., *immediately.*
Inmenso, a, adj., *immense.*
Inmortal, adj., *immortal.*
Inocente, adj., *innocent.*
Inspirar, v. a., *to inspire.*
Instante, s. m., *instant.*
Instruir, v. a., *to instruct, to inform.*
Instrumento, s. m., *instrument.*
Insulto, s. m., *insult.*
Intento, s. m., *purpose.*
Introducir, v. a., *to introduce.*
Inundacion, s. f., *inundation.*
Inventora, s. f., *inventress.*
Investigacion, s. f., *investigation.*
Invierno, s. m., *winter.*
Ir, v. n., *to go.*
Irlanda, s. f., *Ireland.*
Isla, s. f., *island.*
Italiano, s. m., *Italian language.*
Izquierdo, a, adj., *left.*

J.

Jabon, s. m., *soap.*
Jamas, adv., *never.*
Jardin, s. m., *garden.*
Jorge, s. m., *George.*
Jóven, s. c., *a youth, young person.*
Jóven, adj., *young.*
Juéves, s. m., *Thursday.*
Julio, s. m., *July.*
Junio, s. m., *June.*
Junto, a, adj., *together.*
Junto, adv., *near, close by.*
Juventud, s. f., *youth.*

L.

La, pron., *it, her, that, the one.*
Labio, s. m., *lip.*
Labrador, s. m., *husbandman.*
Lado, s. m., *side.*
Ladrillo, s. m., *brick.*
Lago, s. m., *lake.*
Lágrima, s. f., *tear.*
Laguna, s. f., *lake.*
Lapicero, s. m., *pencil-case.*
Largo, a, adj., *long.*
Largo, s. m., *length.*
Las, pron., *them;* las de, *those of.*
Látigo, s. m., *whip.*
Latin, s. m., *latin.*
Laurel, s. m., *laurel.*
Le, pron., *him, it, to him, to her, to it.*
Lealtad, s. f., *loyalty.*
Leche, s. f., *milk.*
Leer, v. a., *to read.*
Leerse, v. r., *to be read.*
Legua, s. f., *league.*
Leido, a, part. p., *read.*
Leña, s. f., *wood.*
Lengua, s. f., *language.*
Lento, a, adj., *slow.*
Leon, s. m., *lion.*
Lerneo, a, adj., *Lernean.*
Les, pron., *to them.*
Levantado, a, part. p., *raised.*
Levantar, v. a., *to raise.*
Levantarse, v. r., *to rise.*
Ley, s. f., *law.*
Libertad, s. f., *liberty, freedom.*
Libra, s. f., *pound.*
Librar, v. a., *to free.*
Libre, adj., *free.*
Libremente, adv., *freely.*
Libro, s. m., *book.*
Liebre, s. f. *hare.*
Lindo, a, adj., *pretty.*
Línea, s. f., *line.*
Lira, s. f., *lyre.*
Llamado, a, part. p., *called.*
Llamar, v. a., *to call.*
Llamarse, v. r., *to be called.*
Llave, s. f., *key.*
Llegar, v. n., *to arrive, to come.*
Llenar, v. a., *to fill.*
Lleno, a, adj., *full.*
Llevar, v. a., *to carry, to take.*
Lo, pron., *it, so.*

Lo, pron., *it, so.*
Loco, a, adj., *crazy, mad, foolish.*
Lóndres, s., *London.*
Los., pron., *them.*
Los, art., *the, those.*
Luchar, v. n., *to struggle.*
Luego, adv., *forthwith, after that;* luego que, *as soon as.*
Lugar, s. m., *place.*
Luís, s. m., *Lewis.*
Luna, s. f., *moon.*
Lúnes, s. m., *Monday.*
Luz, s. f., *light.*

M.

Madera, s. f., *wood, timber.*
Maestro, s. m., *master.*
Magnánimo, a, adj., *magnanimous.*
Magnificencia, s. f., *magnificence.*
Magnífico, a, adj., *magnificent.*
Majestuoso, a, adj., *majestic.*
Malo, a, adj., *bad, evil.*
Maña, s. f., *skill.*
Mañana, s. f., *to-morrow, morning.*
Manchado, a, adj. and part., *spotted.*
Mandar, v. a., *to command;* mandó hacer, *had made.*
Manera, s. f., *manner.*
Manifestar, v. a., *to manifest.*
Manifiesto, a, adj., *manifest.*
Mano, s. f., *hand.*
Mansion, s. f., *mansion, residence.*
Manso, a, adj., *gentle.*
Mantener, v. a., *to maintain.*
Mantenerse, v. r., *to support one's self,* (*itself.*)
Mantequilla, s. f., *butter.*
Manzana, s. f., *apple.*
Mar, s. c., *sea.*
Maravilla, s. f., *wonder.*
Maravilloso, a, adj., *wonderful.*
Marcado, a, adj. and part., *marked.*
Márgen, s. m., *border, bank* (*of a river.*)
Marido, s. m., *husband.*
Marinero, s. m. *mariner.*
Mariscal, s. m., *marshal.*
Mármol, s. m., *marble.*
Mártes, s. m., *Tuesday.*
Mas, adv., *more, most.*
Masa, s. f., *mass.*
Matar, v. a., *to kill.*
Mayor, adj., *greater.*
Media, s. f., *stocking.*
Médico, s. m., *physician.*
Medio, a, adj., *half.*
Medio dia, *noon.*
Medio, s. m., *middle, midst.*
Mejor, adj., *better.*
Mejor, adv., *better;* el mejor, adj., *the best.*
Melena, s. f., *mane.*
Memoria, s. f., *memory.*
Menester, adj., *necessary.*
Menor, adj., *less;* el menor, adj., *the least.*
Ménos, adv., *less;* al ménos, *at least.*
Mercader, s. m., *trader, merchant.*
Merecer, v. a., *to merit.*
Mes., s. m., *month.*
Mesa, s. f., *table.*
Metafísica, s. f., *metaphysics.*
Metal, s. m., *metal.*
Mi, adj., *my.*
Mí, pron., *me.*
Miel, s. m., *honey.*
Miéntras, adv., *while.*
Miércoles, s. m., *Wednesday.*
Mil, num., *thousand.*
Milesio, a, adj., *Miletian.*
Mileto, s. m., *Miletus.*
Militar, adj., *military.*
Minuto, s. m., *minute.*
Mirar, v. a., *to look at, to regard.*
Miseria, s. f., *misery, meanness.*
Mismo, a, adj., *itself, same.*
Mitad, s. f., *half.*
Moderado, a, adj., *moderate.*
Modesto, a, adj., *modest.*
Modo, s. m., *manner, way*
Molestar, v. a., *to vex, to molest, to annoy.*
Momento, s. m., *moment.*
Monarca, s. m., *monarch.*
Mono, s. m., *monkey.*
Monstruo, s. m., *monster.*
Montaña, s. f., *mountain.*
Monte, s. m., *mountain.*
Monumento, s. m., *monument.*
Morir, v. n., *to die.*
Mortal, adj., *mortal.*
Mostrar, v. a., *to show.*
Motivo, s. m., *motive.*
Mover, v. a., *to move.*
Movimiento, s. m., *movement.*
Moza, s. f., *servant maid, girl, lass.*

Mozo, s. m., *servant boy, boy, lad.*
Muchacho, s. m., *boy.*
Mucho, a, adj., *much;* muchos as, *many.*
Mudable, adj., *changeable.*
Mudanza, s. f., *change.*
Mudar, v. a., *to change.*
Muebles, s. m., pl., *furniture, articles.*
Muerte, s. f., *death.*
Muerto, a, adj., *dead.*
Muerto, a, part. p., *died.*
Mujer, s. f., *woman, wife.*
Multiplicado, a, part. p., *multiplied.*
Multitud, s. f., *multitude.*
Mundo, s. m., *world, persons.*
Murió, (past def. of *morir,*) *died.*
Muro, s. m., *wall.*
Música, s. f., *music.*
Muy, adv., *very.*

N.

Nacer, v. n., *to be born.*
Nacimiento, s. m., *birth.*
Nacion, s. f., *nation.*
Nada, s. f., *nothing.*
Nadie, s. m., *nobody, no one.*
Nariz, s. f. *nose.*
Natural, s. m., *native.*
Naturaleza, s. f., *nature.*
Naturalmente, adv., *naturally.*
Navío, s. m., *ship.*
Necesario, a, adj., *necessary.*
Necesidad, s. f., *necessity.*
Necesitado, a, adj., *necessitous.*
Necesitar, v. a., *to need.*
Negro, a, adj., *black.*
Neptuno, s. m., *Neptune.*
Ni, conj., *neither, nor.*
Nieve, s. f., *snow.*
Nilo, s. m., *Nile.*
Ninfa, s. f., *nymph.*
Ninguno, a, adj., *no, none, no one.*
Niño, s. m., *child, son.*
Noble, adj., *noble.*
Noche, s. f., *night.*
Nombre, s. m., *name.*
Norte, s. m., *north.*
Nos, pron., *us, to us.*
Notable, adj., *remarkable.*
Notar, v. a., *to note, to mark.*
Nube, s. f., *cloud.*
Nueve, num., *nine.*
Nuevo, a, adj, *new.*
Numancia, s. f., *Numantia.*
Número, s. m., *number.*
Numerosísimo, a, adj., *most numerous.*
Numeroso, a, adj., *numerous.*
Nunca, adv., *never.*

O.

O, conj., *or, either.*
O, int., *oh.*
Objeto, s. m., *object.*
Obra, s. f., *work.*
Observar, v. a., *to observe.*
Ocasion, s. f., *occasion.*
Octavo, a, adj., *eighth.*
Ocultándose, part. pres., *hiding.*
Ocupado, a, part. p., *occupied.*
Ocupar, v. a., *to occupy.*
Odio, s. m., *hatred.*
Ofrecer, v. a., *to offer.*
Oir, v. a., *to hear.*
Ojo, s. m., *eye.*
Olvidado, part. p., *forgotten.*
Olvido, s. m., *forgetfulness, oblivion.*
Opinion, s. f., *opinion.*
Opuesto, a, part. p., *opposed.*
Orador, s. m.. *orator.*
Ordinariamente, adv., *commonly.*
Ordinario, a, adj., *ordinary, common.*
Oreja, s. f., *ear.*
Oriental, adj., *east, eastern.*
Oriente, s. m., *east.*
Origen, s. m., *origen.*
Originario, a, adj., and s., *native.*
Orilla, s. f., *border, bank.*
Ornamento, s. m., *ornament.*
Oro, s. m., *gold.*
Os, pron., *you, to you.*
Ostentacion, s. f., *ostentation.*
Otro, a, adj., *other, different.*
Oveja., s. f., *sheep.*

P.

Paciencia, s. f., *patience.*
Paciente, adj., *patient.*
Pagar, v. a. *to pay.*
Pais, s. m., *country.*
Paisano, s. m., *countryman.*
Palabra, s. f., *word, speech.*
Palacio, s. m., *palace.*
Pan, s. m., *bread.*
Panadero, s. m., *baker.*

Pañuelo, s. m., *handkerchief.*
Papel, s. m., *paper.*
Para, prep., *for, in order to.*
Paráguas, s. m., *umbrella.*
Parecer, s. m., *opinion.*
Parecer, v. n., *to appear, to seem.*
Pared, s. f., *wall.*
Parte, s. f., *part.*
Particularmente, adv., *particularly.*
Partir, v. n., *to set out.*
Pasado mañana, *the day after to-morrow.*
Pasage, *or* pasaje, s. m., *passage.*
Pasarse, v. r., *to pass.*
Pasearse, v. r., *to take an airing, to walk.*
Pasion, s. f., *passion.*
Paso, s. m., *step.*
Pastoral, adj., *pastoral.*
Patata, s. f., *potato.*
Patria, s. f., *native-country.*
Paz, s. f., *peace.*
Pedir, v. a., *to ask.*
Pedro, s. m., *Peter.*
Peine, s. m., *comb.*
Pelo, s. m., *hair.*
Pena, s. f., *pain.*
Pensamiento, s. m., *thought.*
Pensar, v. n., *to think.*
Peor, adj., *worse.*
Pequeño, a, adj., *small.*
Perder, v. a., *to lose.*
Perdonar, v. a., *to pardon.*
Perfeccion, s. f., *perfection.*
Perfecto, a, adj., *perfect.*
Perjudicial, adj., *hurtful, prejudictal.*
Perla, s. f., *pearl.*
Permanecer, v. n., *to remain.*
Permanente, adj., *permanent.*
Permitir, v. a., *to permit.*
Pernicioso, a, adj., *pernicious.*
Pero, conj., *but.*
Perro, s. m., *dog.*
Pertenecer, v. n., *to belong.*
Pesado, a, adj., *heavy.*
Pesca, s. f., *fishing, fish.*
Pescado, s. m. *fish.*
Pescador, s. m., *fisherman.*
Pescuezo, s. m., *neck.*
Peso, s. m., *weight, dollar.*
Pez, s. m., *fish.*
Pidió, (past. def. of pedir,) *asked.*
Pié, s. m., *foot.*
Piedra, s. f., *stone.*
Piel, s. f., *skin.*
Pierna, s. f., *leg.*
Pintar, v. a., *to paint.*
Pintor, s. m., *painter.*
Pintura, s. f., *painting, picture.*
Pipa, s. f., *pipe.*
Pirámide, s. m., *pyramid.*
Pirineos, s. m. pl., *Pirenees.*
Pitaco, s. m., *Pittacus.*
Placer, s. m., *pleasure.*
Plata, s. f., *silver.*
Pluma, s. f., *pen.*
Plutarco, s. m., *Plutarch.*
Pluton, s. m., *Pluto.*
Poblacion, s. f., *population, town.*
Pobre, adj., *poor.*
Pobreza, s. f., *poverty.*
Poco, a, adj., *little;* pocos as, *few.*
Poco, s. m., *a little.*
Poco, adv., *little;* poco á poco, *slowly.*
Poder, v. n., *to be able.*
Poder, s. m., *power.*
Poesía, s. f., *poetry.*
Poeta, s. m., *poet.*
Política, s. f., *politics.*
Pollo, s. m., *chicken.*
Polvo, s. m., *powder, dust.*
Pólvora, s. f., *powder.*
Poner, v. a., *to place.*
Ponerse, v. r., *to be placed.*
Popular, adj., *popular.*
Por, prep., *for, by;* por donde, *where.*
Porcion, s. f., *portion.*
Porque, conj., *because.*
Posible, adj., *possible.*
Posterior, adj., *later.*
Postrer, postrero, a, adj., *last.*
Precioso, a, adj., *precious.*
Preferido, a, part. p., *preferred.*
Pregunta, s. f., *question.*
Preguntar, v. a., *to ask.*
Preparar, v. a., *to prepare.*
Presidente, s. m., *president.*
Presidir, v. a., *to preside.*
Prestar, v. a., *to lend.*
Prima, s. f., *cousin.*
Primer, primero, a, adj., *first.*
Primero, adv., *first, firstly.*
Primo, s. m., *cousin.*
Principal, s. m., *principal.*
Príncipe, s. m., *prince.*
Principio, s. m., *beginning.*

Prision, s. f., *prison.*
Probar, v. a., *to prove.*
Procurar, v. n., *to endeavor.*
Prodigio, s. m., *prodigy.*
Producir, v. a., *to produce.*
Profesar, v. a., *to profess.*
Profundidad, s. f., *depth.*
Profundo, a, adj., *profound, deep.*
Pronto, a, adj., *quick, fast.*
Pronto, adv., *fast, quick, quickly.*
Propio, a, adj., *proper, fit, own.*
Proponer, v. a., *to propose.*
Proserpina, s. f., *Proserpine.*
Provincia, s. f., *province.*
Próximo, a, adj., *very near, next.*
Proyecto, s. m., *project.*
Prudente, adj., *prudent.*
Publicado, a, part. p., *published.*
Pudiendo, (part. pres. of poder,) *being able.*
Pudo, (past def. of poder,) *was able, could.*
Pueblo, s. m., *people.*
Puede, (ind. pres. of poder,) *is able, can.*
Puerta, s. f., *door.*
Puerto, s. m., *port.*
Pues, adv., *then, since.*
Puesto, a, part. p., *put.*
Punto, s. m., *point, place;* al punto, *instantly.*
Puro, a, adj., *pure.*

Q.

Que, pron., *what, who, which, whom, that.*
Que, conj., *that, than.*
Quedar, v. n., *to remain.*
Quemar, v. a., *to burn.*
Querer, v. a., *to wish for, to will, to be willing.*
Querer decir, *to mean, to signify.*
Querido, a, part. p., *wished.*
Queso, s. m., *cheese.*
Quien, pron., *who, which, whom.*
Quijada, s. f., *jaw.*
Quince, num., *fifteen.*
Quinto, a, adj., *fifth.*
Quitar, v. a., *to take away.*

R

Rabo, s. m., *tail.*
Raíz, s. f., *root.*
Real, adj., *royal.*
Realmente, adv., *really.*
Rebanar, v. a., *to cut, to slice.*
Recibir, v. a., *to receive.*
Recompensar, v. a., *to recompense.*
Reconocerse, v. r., *to be recognized.*
Recto, a, adj., *upright.*
Rededor, s. m., *environs;* al rededor de, *around.*
Redondo, a, adj., *round.*
Referencia, s. f., *reference.*
Referir, v. a., *to relate.*
Reflexion, s. f., *reflection.*
Regalo, s. m., *gift, treat.*
Regar, v. a., *to water.*
Regla, s. f., *rule.*
Regular, adj., *common, ordinary.*
Reina, s. f., *queen.*
Reinar, v. a., *to reign.*
Reino, s. m., *kingdom.*
Religion, s. f., *religion.*
Religioso, a, adj., *religious.*
Reloj, s. m., *watch.*
Replicar, v. a., *to reply to.*
Reposar, v. n., *to repose.*
Representacion, s. f., *representation.*
Representar, v. a., *to represent.*
República, s. f., *republic.*
Residir, v. n., *to reside.*
Respirar, v. a., *to breathe.*
Resplandeciente, adj., *resplendent.*
Responder, v. n., *to reply.*
Respuesta, s. f., *reply.*
Restante, adj., *rest, remaining.*
Restituir, v. a., *to restore.*
Restos, s. m., *remains.*
Retirarse, v. r., *to recede, to retire.*
Retiro, s. m., *retired place.*
Revelacion, s. f., *revelation.*
Revolucion, s. f., *revolution.*
Rey, s. m., *king.*
Reyno. See *reino.*
Rico, a, adj., *rich.*
Rio, s. m., *river, stream.*
Riqueza, s. f., *riches.*
Roberto, s. m., *Robert.*
Robusto, a, adj., *strong, sturdy, robust.*
Roca, s. f., *rock.*
Rodar, v. n., *to roll.*
Rodas, s., *Rhodes.*
Rogar, v. a., *to ask, to entreat.*
Roma, s. f., *Rome.*
Romano, a, adj., *Roman.*

Rama, s. f., *branch.*
Rápido, a, adj., *rapid, swift.*
Razon, s. f., *reason.*
Romper, v. a., *to break.*
Ropa, s. f., *clothing.*
Rosa, s. f., *rose.*
Ruína, s. f., *ruin.*
Rústico, a, adj., *rustic.*

S.

Sábado, s. m., *Saturday.*
Saber, v. a., *to know, to know how.*
Saberse, v. r., *to be known.*
Sabiduría, s. f., *wisdom.*
Sabiendo, part. pres., *knowing.*
Sabio, a, adj., *wise.*
Sacar, v. a., *to draw.*
Sacarse, v. r., *to be drawn.*
Sacrificar, v. a., *to sacrifice.*
Sagrado, a, adj., *sacred.*
Salir, v. n., *to go out, to come out, to come up;* salir con, *to succeed in.*
Salobre, adj., *brackish.*
Saludable, adj., *healthful.*
Sano, a, adj., *healthy, sound.*
Santiago, s. m., *James.*
Santo, a, adj., *sacred, holy.*
Sastre, s. m., *tailor.*
Satisfacer, v. a., *to satisfy.* (Compounded of *satis* and *hacer;* conjugated as *hacer*, changing *h* to *f.*)
Satisfizo, (past def. of satisfacer,) *satisfied.*
Saturno, s. m., *Saturn.*
Sé, (pres. ind. of saber,) *I know.*
Se, pron., *himself, herself, itself, one's self, themselves.*
Seco, a, adj., *dry.*
Secreto, s. m., *secret.*
Sed, s. f., *thirst.*
Seda, s. f., *silk.*
Segundo, a, adj., *second.*
Seis, num., *six.*
Semejante, adj., *similar.*
Sencillo, a, adj., *simple.*
Señor, s. m., *sir, mister, lord.*
Señora, s. f., *madam, mistress, lady.*
Señorita, s. f., *miss, young lady.*
Sentado, a, part. p., *seated.*
Sentimiento, s. m., *sentiment.*
Sentir, v. a., *to feel.*
Separar, v. a., *to separate.*
Séptimo, a, adj., *seventh.*
Sepulcro, s. m., *sepulcher.*
Sepultar, v. a., *to bury.*
Ser, s. m., *being.*
Serpiente, s. f., *serpent.*
Servidumbre, s. f., *servitude.*
Servir, v. a., *to serve.*
Servirse, v. r., *to make use of.*
Sesenta, num., *sixty.*
Sexto, a, adj., *sixth.*
Si, conj., *if.*
Si, adv., *yes.*
Sí, pron., *one's self, himself, herself, itself, themselves;* sí mismo, *himself, one's self.*
Sicilia, s. f., *Sicily.*
Sido, a, part. p., *been.*
Siempre, adv., *always.*
Sierra, s. f., *saw.*
Siete, num., *seven.*
Siglo, s. m., *century, age.*
Siguiente, adj., *following.*
Sila, s. m., *Sylla.*
Símbolo, s. m., *symbol.*
Simple, adj., *simple.*
Sin, prep., *without.*
Sin embargo, conj., *notwithstanding, nevertheless.*
Sinó, conj., *but, only.*
Sitio, s. m., *siege, situation.*
Situacion, s. f., *situation.*
Soberano, s. m., *sovereign.*
Soberbia, s. f., *pride.*
Soberbio, a, adj., *proud, superb.*
Sobre, prep., *on, upon, above, about.*
Sobrina, s. f., *niece.*
Sobrino, s. m., *nephew.*
Socorrer, v. a., *to help, to aid.*
Sofá, s. m., *sofa.*
Sol, s. m., *sun.*
Solamente, adv., *only.*
Soldado, s. m., *soldier.*
Solo, a, adj., *single, alone.*
Solo, adv., *only.*
Sombra, s. f., *shadow.*
Sombrear, v. a., *to shade.*
Sombrero, s. m., *hat.*
Sorprendido, a, part. p., *surprised.*
Sostener, v. a., *to support.*
Sostenido, a, part. p., *supported.*
Suave, adj., *soft, sweet.*
Suavemente, adv., *sweetly, gently.*
Suceder, v. n., *to happen.*
Sud, s. m., *south.*

Page.

153. Imperfect of the Indicative denotes continuance — Mi hermano tenía muchas frutas cuando vivía en el campo; y me traía algunas todos los días — tenía, vivía, & traía, express continuance.

154. Pasaba el tiempo en las diversiones — (continuance)

156. un árbol tal como aquel — such a tree as that — Tener mal en el dedo — To have a sore finger —

157. Ha visto V. jamas tal pescado como aquel que mi cocinero tiene?

159. Past Definite (preterite) — finished in a past time — Tuve frio anoche — I was cold last night —

Past Indefinite (compound of the present) — finished in present time, from which the present is not excluded — He tenido frio hoy. — I have been cold today —

Has sido tu jamas pobre? (nothing which necessarily excludes the present time) —

161. The three past tenses — thus.

Continuous or unfinished — the Imperfect —

Finished, but admitting the present — Past Indefinite — — ¿Has estado en mi casa esta semana —

162. Finished entirely in past time Past definite. — Estuve allí el Sábado —

Indefinite sometimes used for definite, when but one period is spoken of —

Tuve (or he tenido) frio anoche —

Estuvo (he estado) allí ayer —

174. Andar to go. to go along. (not always to walk).

Cuando fuí al campo esta mañana, anduve la mitad del camino á caballo — (here fuí expresses nothing of present time) —

177. Tirar to throw away — Los tiro porque no valen nada.

180. Contento con, de — (lo segundo huele á galicismo. Salva p. 277.)

El maestro está contento de (con) V.

Ve, (imperative, of *ir*,) *go thou.*
Veces, (s. f., pl., of *vez*,) *times;* algunas veces, *sometimes;* unas veces, *sometimes.*
Vecina, s. f., *neighbor.*
Vecino, s. m., *neighbor.*
Vecino, a, adj., *near.*
Vegetable, s. m., *vegetable.*
Veinte, num., *twenty.*
Vela, s. f., *candle.*
Vencer, v. a., *to conquer.*
Vencido, a, part. p., *conquered.*
Vender, v. a., *to sell.*
Venir, v. n., *to come.*
Ventaja, s. f., *advantage.*
Ventura, s. f., *good fortune.*
Ver, v. a., *to see.*
Verdad, s. f., *truth;* á la verdad, *in truth.*
Verdaderamente, adv., *truly.*
Verdadero, a, adj., *true.*
Verde, adj., *green.*
Verduras, *vegetables.*
Verse, v. r., *to be seen.*
Vestido, s. m., *clothes, dress.*
Vestir, v. a., *to dress.*
Vestirse, v. r., *to be clothed.*
Vez, s. f., *time, turn:* á veces, *at times.*
Viajar, v. n., *to travel.*
Viajero, s. m., *traveler.*
Victoria, s. f., *victory.*
Vida, s. f., *life.*
Vidrio, s. m., *glass.*
Viejo, a, adj., *old.*
Viento, s. m., *wind.*
Viérnes, s. m., *Friday.*
Vino, s. m., *wine.*
Violencia, s. f., *violence.*
Virtud, s. f., *virtue.*
Virtuoso, a, adj, *virtuous.*
Visitado, a, part. p., *visited.*
Vista, s. f., *sight.*
Vivido, a, part. p., *lived.*
Vivificar, v. a., *to vivify, to make alive.*
Vivir, v. n., *to live.*
Vivo, a, adj., *alive, living.*
Volver, v. a., *to turn, to return.*
Voy, (pres. ind., of *ir*,) *I go.*
Voz, s. f., *voice.*
Vulgo, s. m., *multitude, rabble.*

Y.

Ya, adv., *now, already.*
Yacer, v. n., *to lie, to repose.*
Yerba, s. f., *herb, grass.*

Z.

Zapatero, s. m., *shoemaker.*
Zapato, s. m., *shoe.*

Page.

15. Su de V. more polite than el de V. -

19 Su (your) not his or her, must have de V. to be clear.

31. el suyo de V, yours - de V. to show it is not his.

34. Where, without motion, Donde; with it, adonde.

38. Feminine nouns beginning with a, take el in the singular - el agua, el ala -

40. Active verbs take á, if the noun be a person or a personified thing, if spoken definitely, not otherwise - á sometimes used to avoid ambiguity, sometimes omitted for sake of sound -

47. Aquí, allí, donde, en donde - denote rest -
Acá, allá, adonde . . . -" - motion.

48 Very, with an adjective, muy; without it, mucho.

50, National designations, as adjectives, take the small letter; as nouns, the capital - el Francés, el idioma francés -

51. But, after a negative & verb not repeated, sino -
-" no negative, or verb repeated, pero -
No quiero este, sino aquel -
-" -"- -"- pero quiero aquel -
-" -"- pero no aquel -

52 - nouns, used in a partitive sense, omit the article.
Nosotros tomamos sopa, y los niños toman leche.

57 - tercero may omit or retain the o -

59 - vestido, clothes only; ropa, all domestic articles of cloth.

61 - nouns in a universal sense take the article -
el oro es amarillo -

63, neuter forms used when the object is not a noun, or referred to vaguely, so that the gender is not clear.
ello me gusta - sabe V. esto? lo que estudio -
Que es esto, aquello? Esto es lo mio, lo tuyo,
lo sometimes used for le, when gender can be applied - irregular, but admitted; because adopted by many good writers -

Habitual titles & epithets take the article -
el general, el señor - el capitan -

Page 218. The Subjunctive Mood, generally preceded by "que" or a relative pronoun, expresses doubt, uncertainty, not as actually existing, but as regarded by the mind.

all cases may be reduced to this one rule —

Verbs expressing will, desire, doubt, fear, command, consent, (mental affections generally), govern the subjunctive, when the subject of the verb governed is different from the verb governing — thus,

Quiero que estés satisfecho. I wish that thou mayst be satisfied —

Here the governing verb "quiero" has "yo" for its subject & the verb governed, estés, has "tu" (understood) for different subject —

Quiero el libro que tienes — I wish the book thou hast.

"tienes" is not in the subjunctive because it is governed by "libro" —

But "Quiero estar satisfecho" — "estar" is not in the subjunctive because its subject "yo" is the same —

Quiero que seas bueno —
Deseo — " — " — " —
Dudo — " — " — honrado.
Temo — " — estés enfermo —
Ordeno — " — " — quieto —
No aprueba " seas — soberbio —
Siento — " — " — pobre —
Ignoro — " — estén en el campo.
Ignora — " — sean nuestros amigos —

221. Impersonal verbs, followed by an adjective & que, govern the following verb in the subjunction, when not affirming positively —

222. Importa mucho que V. le dé dinero —
Es menester que yo se le dé —
Es conveniente que les demos dinero —
Es imposible que ellos se lo den —
Puede ser que él vaya —
Es cierto que ella le ama (affirming positively)

In salutations, día, tarde, noche always plural.

Buenos días — buenas tardes — buenas noches —

Desde cuando — desde ayer —
Desde cuando está V. aquí? Estoy aquí desde ayer —

224. The Subjunctive mood, expresses not a fact, but as a conception of the mind – thus,
Vd le da dinero – this is a fact – you give him money –
El quiere, es menester que } represents the giving of
V. le dé dinero – money not as a fact, but as a desire or obligation –

Que, quien, cuyo, when general & suppositions, take the subjunctive; but definite & known, take the indicative –

Compraré una casa que sea grande –
– " – la – " – " es – " –
Quiero un empleo que sea agradable –
Tengo – " – " – " es – " –
Me casaré con una mujer cuya alma sea sensible
Voy á casarme con una mujer – " – " es – " –
In the 1st of each of these examples, the house, employment & the woman not fixed;
In the others they are spoken of as facts. –

232 – The verb after cuando &c, having a future sense, is put in the subjunctive, when followed by another future (expressed or understood).
Cuando le vea, hablaré con él –
A menos que V. venga, yo no iré –
Con tal que tenga dinero, estará contento –
Aun cuando tenga dinero, será pobre –
Cuando comprará V una casa? Cuando yo tenga dinero (future understood)

233 – Ella anda visitando á sus amigas, y no estará en su casa hasta que no sea hora de comer –
(See Salvá p. 216 – Salet. p. 159 –) –

235 – Hace dos horas que almorzé – (since I breakfasted)
Hace un año que no bebo vino – (since I drank wine)

238. Imperative mood –
2d person singular – like 3d pers. sing. of pres. of Ind.
3d " " } " – present of the Subjunctive –
1st " " plural }
3d " " " } 2d pers. plural – ad – ed – id.

Page
240. Do you give it up - Se da por vencido?
I give it up - Me doy -

245. Of the 3 forms of the conditional, ra & se are formed from the 3d plural person of the past indicative, changing ron into ra & se -
Hablaron into Hablára, Hablase
ia, from the 1st per. sing. of the Future, changing ~~ré~~ é into ia -
Hablaré, into Hablaría -

263. Subjunctive Future (tuviere), used with si, to denote a future time -
Si yo tuviere dinero, viajaré -

264. also with cuando, & aque relatives, with future time -
Cuando tuviere libros, leeré -
Comprarán lo que encontraren -
Premiaré al que fuere industrioso -
The Subjunctive present might be used in most cases instead - tenga for tuviere -

270. By (de), after passive verbs, expressing mental action,
Ha sido amado de sus amigos (also por)

274. Two verbs connected by and, the second, being the object of the first, takes the infinitive -
Yo iré á comprar vino -
The infinite takes the ~~in~~definite article when in an enlarged sense -
El estudiar es útil -
El perdonar - generoso.
Never in my life - En mi vida (nunca understd)
En mi vida he sentido mas el frio.

5. No es verdad? is any form of affirmation -

Page

275 – Son las nueve y media, es hora de que vayamos á casa.

277. Proper Names – those in English ending in a, al, ul, el, il, generally the same –
Diana, Juvenal, Rias, Socrates, Anacárcis, Asia –
a double consonant in English, simple in Spanish –
Isabella – Isabela –
Ph changed to F – Philadelphia – Filadelfia –
Ae, oe, into e – Aneas – Eneas –
Th into t – Pythagoras – Pitágoras – y into i –
Ch before e or i – into qu Achilles – Aquiles –
Ch – " – a, o, u, – " – c Achates – Acates –
S with a consonant, takes e before it –
Spain – España – Sparta – Esparta –
Ending in o commonly add n – Pluto – Pluton –
– " – " es – " change to o – Bacchus – Baco –
– " – " ander – " – " – andro – Lysander – Lisandro –
– " – " burg – " – " – burgo – Hamburg – Hamburgo.

279 – Some, the family ate – algunas se comia la familia –
I applied to borrow it of him – Se lo pedí prestado – (p. 321)

291 – For dimensions – To be with an adjective – "tener de" –
How high is it? Cuanto tiene de alto?
It is 4 yards high – Tiene cuatro varas de alto.

292. 14 y 4 going on to 15 – Catorce y va en los quince (á entrar, understood) –

293. Ha sido (not estado, on account of siempre) siempre muy enfermo –

294. No es estraño que se casara de esa edad, porque una prima mia se casó de catorce años –
a menos que no tenga quince años –

It is not strange that he should marry at that age, because a cousin of mine married at that age (or 14)
unless he be fifteen years old –

Page.

294. El clima de Cuba es muy diferente al de Madrid.
Y a los cinco meses de casada - in or not after being married

296. Weights, measures - plural without the article -
(310) por docenas - by the dozen - por libras - by the pound -
(see pass la libra. 310)
To sell by retail - vender menudeando - por menor

297 - I will buy of you a box - Compraré á V. una caja.
(see page 101.)

298. That at the hotels when - que en las posadas
he arrived - que llegaba -

299 - Alcanzar al acierto (to the hit) - to hit the meaning -

301. Se siente V. con apetito? Do you feel an appetite?

304. Se está quejando continuamente, porque
está con sarampion, el reumatismo -

305. Desde anteayer no está muy bueno, porque
parece triste y que tiene algun dolor -
(que, probably not to repeat porque).

Es necesario tener mucho cuidado con él -

310. Remote countries, & places personified, take the
definite article even with the preposition (p. 65)
del Brazil, del Japon, de la India, de la China -

article omitted before dates of letters &c.
á 10 de Noviembre de 1857 -

Definite article generally preferred to possessive
pronouns (mi, su, &c), when the possessor is
sufficiently denoted - (p. 78.) (Se de V. more polite than el del. p. 15.)
me duele la cabeza -

Definite article repeated before different nouns, of
different genders & especially when emphatic.
la prudencia y el valor del Rey -

omitted with nouns in partitive sense - Tiene V. dinero? (p. 52)

omitted before names of cities & towns, - Londres es una
ciudad - month, Julio es un mes. - Nouns, in apposition
Pablo, apostol de los Gentiles; Paris, atenas de Francia
(p. 123).

Page.

310. Definite article omitted before numeral adjectives, titles of books, headings of chapters, paragraphs, &c.
Guillermo Tercero - Vida de Franklin
Leccion Décima - Capítulo cuarto -
omitted before a noun, expressing, like an adjective, some character of the subject -
mi amigo es Ramírez - este hombre es soldado -

312. An adjective qualifying 2 or more nouns singular, must be plural, if of diff^t gender, masculine.
la vaca y el buey son negros

An adjective qualifying 2 or more nouns plural, agrees with the nearest -
Buenos diccionarios y gramáticas -
Diccionarios y gramáticas buenas -
better way to have an adjective for each -
Adjectives agree, not with titles, but with the persons - Su alteza está enfermo -

315. When possessive pronouns follow the verb 'to be', if the subject is omitted, the article is also -
Es suya - It is his -
Esta es la suya - It is his -

Cual, preceded by the article, generally used to prevent the repetition of quien or que. -
la casa que vimos, y de la cual hablamos -

Whom, preceded by a preposition, always quien.
él con quien V. estaba -

316 - As the relative takes the number & person of the antecedent, the verb which follows does the same -
Yo soy que (or quien) lo hago. Tu que crees mi amigo.
Nosotros somos los que lo hacemos.
Collective nouns indicating unity, take the verb in the sing^r; indicating number, in the plural
el ejército era numeroso. Parte de ellos estaban

— Remarks on Verbs —

Page 316 — The indicative mood affirms something or asks a question —

Present Tense, action unfinished in present time — Yo escribo — I am writing —

another present — estar, with the gerund — this denotes continuous action or being — (p. 206. & 321.)

Estoy escribiendo — I am writing —

cannot say Estoy yendo — Estoy viniendo —

Anything begun in past time & still continuing takes the present tense — (202.) —

Vivo en esta ciudad, hace un año —

Imperfect Tense — action, in past time, unfinished & continuous —

El escribia — He was writing —

Compound of the present — action, finished in present time —

He escrito I have written, (this morning, week &c.)

Compound of the imperfect — finished prior to some other time specified —

Yo habia comido ya, cuando mi hermano llegó.

Past Tense — entirely finished in past time.

Escribí una carta ayer —

Compound of the past, finished immediately (Immediate pluperfect) prior to some other time specified —

Apenas hube salido cuando llegó —

Page 317. Future Tense. going to take place in some future time — escribiré mañana —

Compound of the Future. going to take place prior to some other time —

Habré comido á las dos —

Imperative Mood. for commanding & requesting —

Escribe (tu) una carta — Préstame (V.) el dinero —

Subjunctive present used for negation —

No me moleste V. —

Subjunctive mood, for doubt & uncertainty —

this is its peculiarity —

The Indicative asks or affirms something as a fact or an existing reality —

The Subjunctive, something as doubtful, or suppositious, existing in the mind of the speaker.

Digo que va á la escuela —

Quiero — a — vaya — " — " — a —

The first is a fact — He goes to school — therefore the indicative —

The second is only a wish, a conception of the mind, therefore the subjunctive.

The subjunctive, preceded by que, may be used when the governing verb expresses — will, desire, doubt, fear, command, consent (affections of the mind generally) when its subject is different from that of the governing verb —

El desea que yo esté aquí — (p. 218.)

where the subject of the two verbs is the same the infinitive, not the subjunctive, used.

Quiero (yo) estar satisfecho — (p. 218.)

Impersonal verbs & phrases, followed by que, take the subj. when the dependent verb expresses doubt &c.

Es menester que yo le dé dinero —

[illegible] refer to

[illegible] indicative.

[illegible] subjunctive

[illegible] indicative

[illegible] relatives [illegible] solo,

[illegible] consequence [illegible] mejor —

[illegible] relatives [illegible] modo de,

solo, [illegible] consequencia

[illegible] conocer

[illegible] que puede [illegible]

[illegible] which imply a supposition

[illegible]

[illegible]

a no que.

[illegible] —

[illegible] subjunctive

[illegible] doubt

[illegible]

Page.

318. The present Subjunctive is used, when the governing clause is present or future, to denote a time either present or future to it.

Dudo / Dudaré } que él venga aquí.

The compound of the present is used when the governing clause is present or future, to denote a time past to it.

Dudo / Dudaré } que él haya venido aquí.

The 1st or 3d form (ra or se) of the Imperfect is used when the governing clause is past, to denote a time present or future to it.

El queria que su hijo fuera ó fuese docto.

319. The Imperfect of Subjunctive also used in conditional phrases (should or would) and commonly attended by if & a verb in the Imperfect. The verb accompanying if may take the 1st or 3d form (ra or se), & the other, the 1st or 2d (ra or ria) form.

If I had money, I would travel.

Si yo tuviera / tuviese } dinero, { viajara / viajaria } (See Sales' Gr. p. 49. Note)

This tense is used with several other expressions equivalent to above, with other conjunctions implying condition, & sometimes without any other clause.

Si él viniese, ellos se irian. Sales p. 49.

Aunque él fuese pobre, seria feliz.

El querria ser rico (without any other clause)

The compound of this Imperfect (~~with the past participle~~) is used, like the above, but to denote time past in the governing clause & some condition connected with past time.

thus.

Page.

294. El clima de Cuba es muy diferente al de Madrid — y á los cinco meses de casada — in subs. after being married

296. Weights, measures — plural without the article —
(310) por docenas — by the dozen — por libras — by the pound —
(see pass. la libra. 310)
To sell by retail — vender menudeado — por menor

297 — I will buy of your shop — Compraré á V. una caja. —
(See page 101.)

298. That at the hotels when he arrived — que en las posadas que llegaba —

299 — Alcanzar al acierto (to the hit) — to hit the meaning —

301. Se siente V. con apetito? Do you feel an appetite?

304. Se está quejando continuamente, porque está con sarampion, el reumatismo —

305. Desde anteayer no está muy bueno, porque parece triste y que tiene algun dolor —
(que, probably not to repeat porque).

Es necesario tener mucho cuidado con él —

310. Remote countries, & places personified, take the definite article even with the preposition (p. 65)
del Brazil, del Japon, de la India, de la China —

article omitted before dates of letters &c.
á 10 de Noviembre de 1857 —

Definite article generally preferred to possessive pronouns (mi, su, &c), when the possessor is sufficiently denoted — (p. 78.) (See de V. more polite than el dell. p. 15.)
Me duele la cabeza —

Definite article repeated before different nouns, of different genders & especially when emphatic.
la prudencia y el valor del Rey —

omitted with nouns in partitive sense — Tiene V. dinero? (p. 52)

omitted before names of cities & towns — Londres es una ciudad — month, Julio es un mes. — Nouns in apposition
Pablo, apostol de los Gentiles; París, atenas de Francia
(p. 123).

Page.

318. The present Subjunctive is used, when the governing clause is present or future, to denote a time either present or future to it.

Dudo / Dudaré } que él venga aquí.

The compound of the present is used when the governing clause is present or future, to denote a time past to it.

Dudo / Dudaré } que él haya venido aquí.

The 1st or 3d form (ra or se) of the Imperfect is used when the governing clause is past, to denote a time present or future to it.

El quería que su hijo fuera ó fuese docto.

319. The Imperfect of Subjunctive also used in conditional phrases (should or would) and commonly attended by if & a verb in the Imperfect. The verb accompanying if may take the 1st or 3d form (ra or se), & the other, the 1st or 2d (ra or ria) form.

If I had money, I would travel.

Si yo tuviera / tuviese } dinero, { viajara / viajaria } (See Sales' Gr. p. 49. Note)

This tense is used with several other expressions equivalent to above, with other conjunctions implying condition, & sometim. without any other clause.

Sales p. 49.

Si él viniese, ellos se irían.

Aunque él fuese pobre, sería feliz.

El querría ser rico (without any other clause)

The compound of this Imperfect (~~with the past participle~~) is used, like the above, but to denote time past in the governing clause & some condition connected with past time.

thus.

Page 319. Compound of Imperfect Subj: (cont.) thus,

Did you doubt that he had been sick?

Dudaba V. que él { hubiera / hubiese } estado enfermo?

If I had had money, I should have travelled.

Si yo { hubiera / hubiese } tenido dinero, { hubiera / habría } viajado.

Cual de estos habria preferido V? (without any other clause)

-other forms of expression-

Yo le he escrito (afinde) que venga.

Cree V. que me lo negasen, si les suplicara?

— " — " — " — " hubiesen negado, si les hubiera suplicado?

Ha habido jamas un hombre que haya trabajado mas?

The subjunctive Future, used in conditional phrases with if, instead of the Subj: Imperfect (ra, ria, se), to denote future time.

Si yo tuviere dinero, viajaré.

also used with cuando, & relatives of vague sense.

cuando yo tuviere libros, leeré.

El que fuere estudioso, será docto.

320. The compound of the Subj: Future is used instead of the future when have in English is used with future time.

When I shall have finished my work, I will go with you.

Cuando yo hubiere acabado mi trabajo, iré con V.

The Infinitive Mood often used with a preposition instead of the gerund.

Trabaja sin cesar. (Span. sin cesar. 1 Thess. v. 17) and as a noun with the nominative.

el leer me gusta mucho.

Two verbs, connected in English, the 2d the result of the 1st, the 2d is in the infinitive.

Iré á comprar vino. Vengan barrer mi cuarto

Page
321. Verbs, reflective in Spanish (tho' not in English) which express a doing of something to a part of oneself.

Me lavo las manos —

Phrases, where the proper object of the verb is made the subject — are made reflective —

Cotton sells well — el algodon se vende bien.

also passive forms,

That book is easily understood — } Este libro se entiende facilmente.

—

Many verbs are essentially reflective, for which no general rule can be given; and others, not essentially so, are often made so, when they express doing anything for one's own benefit — and verbs followed by each other — one another —

El se abstiene de vino —

He abstains from wine —

El se comió la fruta,

He ate the fruit —

y se bebió el vino.

and drank the wine —

Se aborrecen el uno al otro —

They hate each other —

Two actions performed at the same time, the more enduring takes the gerund —

El habló durmiendo —

The past participle never varies with haber: in all other cases, it agrees with its noun, in gender & number —

Ha visto V mi pluma?

No la he visto —

Ella es amada de él.

Ellos seran pagados por mi —

46. Ser — Estar — Ser (permanent) Estar (transient) } to be —

Page
319. Compound of Imperfect Subj: (Cont.) thus,

Did you doubt that he had been sick?

Dudaba V. que él { hubiera / hubiese } estado enfermo?

If I had had money, I should have travelled.

Si yo { hubiera / hubiese } tenido dinero, { hubiera / habria } viajado.

Cual de estos habria preferido V? (without any other clause)

-other forms of expression -

Yo le he escrito (afirmativo) que venga -

Cree V. que me lo negasen, si les suplicara?

-" - " - " - " - " - " hubiesen negado,

si les hubiera suplicado?

Ha habido jamas un hombre que haya trabajado mas?

The subjunctive Future, used in conditional phrases with if, instead of the Subj: Imperfect (ra, ria, se), to denote future time -

Si yo tuviere dinero, viajaré -

also used with cuando, & relatives of vague sense.

Cuando yo tuviere libros, leeré -

El que fuere estudioso, será docto.

320. The compound of the Subj: Future is used instead of the future when have in English is used with future time -

When I shall have finished my work, I will go with you.

Cuando yo hubiere acabado mi trabajo, iré con V.

The Infinitive Mood often used with a preposition instead of the gerund -

Trabaja sin cesar. (Ord. sin. cesar. 1 Thess. 5.17) - and as a noun with the art. el / lo - me gusta mucho -

Two verbs, connected in English, the 2d the result of the 1st - the 2d is in the infinitive -

Iré a comprar vino. Vengan barrer mi cuarto

Page
321. Verbs, reflective in Spanish (tho' not in English) which express a doing of something to a part of oneself.

Me lavo las manos —

Phrases, where the proper object of the verb is made the subject — are made reflective —

Cotton sells well — el algodon se vende bien.

also passive forms,

That book is easily understood — } Este libro se entiende fácilmente.

—

Many verbs are essentially reflective, for which no general rule can be given; and others, not essentially so, are often made so, when they express doing anything for one's own benefit — and verbs followed by each other — one another —

El se abstiene de vino —

He abstains from wine —

El se comió la fruta,

He ate the fruit —

y se bebió el vino.

and drank the wine —

Se aborrecen el uno al otro —

They hate each other —

Two actions performed at the same time, the more endearing takes the gerund —

El habló durmiendo —

The past participle never varies with haber: in all other cases, it agrees with its noun, in gender & number —

Ha visto V. mi pluma?

No la he visto —

Ella es amada de él.

Ellos serán pagados por mí —

46. Ser — Estar — Ser (permanent) Estar (transient) } to be —

Page The Subjunctive Mood, generally preceded by "que" or a relative pronoun
218. expresses doubt, uncertainty, not as actually existing, but as regarded by the mind.
all cases may be reduced to this one rule —

Verbs expressing will, desire, doubt, fear, command, consent, (mental affections generally), govern the subjunctive, when the subject of the verb governed is different from the verb governing — thus,

Quiero que estés satisfecho. I wish that thou mayst be satisfied —
Now the governing verb "quiero" has "yo" for its subject, & the verb governed, "estés", has "tu" (understood) for its subject — different subjects —
Quiero el libro que tienes — I wish the book thou hast —
"tienes" is not in the subjunctive because it is governed by "libro" —
But "Quiero estar satisfecho" — "estar" is not in the subjunctive because its subject & is the same —

Quiero que seas bueno —
Deseo — " — " — " —
Dudo — " — " — honrado.
Temo " — estés enfermo —
Ordeno — " — " — quieto —
No aprueba " seas — soberbio —
Siento — " — " — pobre —
Ignoro — " — estén en el campo.
Ignora — " — sean nuestros amigos —

221. Impersonal verbs, followed by an adjective & que, govern the following verb in the subjunctive, when not affirming positively —
222. Importa mucho que V. le dé dinero —
Es menester que yo se le dé —
Es conveniente que les demos dinero —
Es imposible que ellos se lo den —
Puede ser que él vaya —
Es cierto que ella te ama (affirming positively)
In salutations día, tarde, noche always plural.
Buenos días — buenas tardes — buenas noches —

Desde cuando — desde ayer —
Desde cuando está V. aquí? Estoy aquí desde ayer —

7e

224. The Subjunctive mood, expresses not a fact, but a conception of the mind – thus,

Ud le da dinero – this is a fact – you give him money.
El quiere, es menester que } represents the giving of
V. le dé dinero – money not as a fact, but as a desire or obligation —

Que, quien, cuyo, when general & suppositions, take the subjunctive; but definite & known, take the indicative —

Compraré una casa que sea grande –
— " — la — " — " es — " —
Quiero un empleo que sea agradable —
Tengo — " — " — " es — " —
Iré a casarme con una mujer cuya alma sea sensible
Voy á casarme con una mujer — " — " es — " —

In the 1st of each of these examples, the house, employment & the woman not fixed;
In the others they are spoken of as facts. –

232 – The verb after cuando &c, having a future sense, is put in the subjunctive, when followed by another future & expressed or understood.

Cuando le vea, hablaré con él —
A menos que V. venga, yo no iré —
Con tal que tenga dinero, estará contento —
Aun cuando tenga dinero, será pobre —
Cuando comprará V una casa? Cuando yo tenga dinero (future understood)

233 – Ella anda visitando á sus amigas, y no estará en su casa hasta que no sea hora de comer –
(See Salvá p. 216 – Salet. p. 159 –) –

235 – Hace dos horas que almorzé – (since I breakfasted)
Hace un año que no bebo vino – (a year that I drank wine)

238. Imperative mood –
2d person singular – like 3d per sing. of pres. of Ind.
3d " " } " " present of the Subjunctive –
1st " plural }
3d " " } 2d pers. plural – ad – ed – ed.

240. Do you give it up? — Se da por vencido?
I give it up — Me doy —

245. Of the 3 forms of the conditional, ra & se are formed from the 3d. person plural of the past indicative, changing ron into ra & se —
Hablaron into Hablara, Hablase
ia, from the 1st per. sing. of the Future, changing é into ia —
Hablaré, into Hablaria —

263. Subjunctive Future (tuviere), used with si, to denote a future time —
Si yo tuviere dinero, viajaré —

264. also with cuando, & vague relatives, with future time —
Cuando tuviere libros, leeré —
Comprarán lo que encontraren —
Premiaré al que fuere industrioso —
The Subjunctive present might be used in most cases instead — tenga for tuviere —

270. By (de), after passive verbs, expressing mental action,
Ha sido amado de sus amigos (also por)

274. Two verbs connected by and, the second, being the object of the first, takes the infinitive —
Yo iré á comprar vino —
The infinitive takes the definite article when in an unlimited sense —
El estudiar es útil —
El perdonar es generoso.
Never in my life — En mi vida (nunca
En mi vida he sentido mas el frio. Ribadenei)

275. No es verdad? to any form of affirmation —

Page
275 – Son las nueve y media, es hora de que vayamos á casa.

277. Proper Names – those in English ending in a, al, ar, el, ès, generally the same –
Diana, Juvenal, Rias, Socrates, Anacárcis, Asia –
a double consonant in English, single in Spanish –
Isabella – Isabela –
Ph changed to F – Philadelphia – Filadelfia –
Ae, oe, into e – Aneas – Eneas –
Th into t – Pythagoras – Pitágoras – y into i –
Ch before e or i – into qu Achilles – Aquiles –
Ch – " – a, o, u, " – c Achates – Acates –
S with a consonant, takes e before it –
Spain – España – Sparta – Esparta –
Ending in o commonly add n – Pluto – Plutón –
" – " ces – " change to o – Bacchus – Baco –
" – " ander – " – " – andro – Lysander – Lisandro –
" – " burg – " – " – burgo – Hamburg – Hamburgo.

279 – Some the family ate – algunas se comia la familia – p. 321
I applied to borrow it of him – Se le pedí prestalo –

281 – For dimension – To be with an adjective – "tener de" –
How high is it? Cuanto tiene de alto?
It is 4 yards high – Tiene cuatro varas de alto.

292. 14 yrs going on to 15 – Catorce y va con los quince (á entrar, understood) –

293. Ha sido (not estado, on account of siempre) siempre muy enfermo –

294. No es estraño que se casara de esa edad, porque una prima mia se casó de catorce años –
a menos que no tenga quince años –

It is not strange that he should marry at that age, because a cousin of mine married at that age (or 14)
unless he be fifteen years old. –

Page.

294. El clima de Cuba es muy diferente al de Madrid — Y a los cinco meses de casada — in not after being married

296. Weights, measures — plural without the article —

(310) por docenas — by the dozen — por libras — by the pound — (see page 310) (la libra. 310)

To sell by retail — vender menudeando — por menor

297 — I will buy of you also — Compraré á V. una caja. — (see page 101.)

298. That at the hotels when he arrived — que en las posadas que llegaba —

299 — Alcanzar al acierto (to the hit) — to hit the meaning —

301. Se siente V. con apetito? Do you feel an appetite?

304. Se está quejando continuamente, porque está con sarampion, el reumatismo —

305. Desde anteayer no está muy bueno, porque parece triste y que tiene algun dolor — (que, probably not to repeat porque).

Es necesario tener mucho cuidado con él —

310. Remote countries, & places personified, take the definite article even with the preposition (p. 65) del Brazil, del Japon, de la India, de la China —

article omitted before dates of letters &c.
á 10 de Noviembre de 1857 —

Definite article generally preferred to possessive pronouns (mi, su, &c), when the possessor is sufficiently denoted — (p. 78.) (See de V. more polite than el dell. p. 15.)
me duele la cabeza —

Definite article repeated before different nouns, of different genders & especially when emphatic.
la prudencia y el valor del Rey —

omitted with nouns in partitive sense — Tiene V. dinero? (p. 52)

omitted before names of cities & towns, — Londres es una ciudad — month, Julio es un mes. — Nouns, in apposition Pablo, apostol de los Gentiles; Paris, ademas de Francia (p. 123).

310. Definite article omitted before numeral adjectives, titles of books, headings of chapters, paragraphs, &c,
Guillermo Tercero - Vida de Franklin
Leccion Décima - Capítulo cuarto -
omitted before a noun, expressing, like an adjective, some character of the subject -
mi amigo es Francés - este hombre es soldado -

312. An adjective qualifying 2 or more nouns singular, must be plural, if of diff^t genders, masculine,
la vaca y el buey son negros
An adjective qualifying 2 or more nouns plural, agrees with the nearest -
Buenos diccionarios y gramáticas -
Diccionarios y gramáticas buenas -
better way to have an adjective for each -
Adjectives agree, not with titles, but with the persons - Su alteza está enfermo -

315. When possessive pronouns follow the verb 'to be', if the subject is omitted, the article is also -
Es suya - It is hers -
Esa es la suya - It is hers -
Cual, preceded by the article, generally used to prevent the repetition of quien or que -
la casa que vimos, y de la cual hablamos -
Whom, preceded by a preposition, always quien -
él con quien V. estaba -

316 - As the relative takes the number & person of the antecedent, the verb which follows does the same -
Yo soy que (or quien) lo hago. Tu que crees mi amigo.
Nosotros somos los que lo hacemos.
Collective nouns indicating unity, take the verb in the sing^r; indicating number, in the plural
el ejército era numeroso. Parte de ellos estaban

— Remarks on Verbs —

Page 316 — The indicative mood affirms something or asks a question —

Present Tense, action unfinished in present time — Yo escribo — I am writing —

another present — estar, with the gerund — this denotes continuous action or being — (p. 206. 14 — 321.)

Estoy escribiendo — I am writing —

cannot say Estoy yendo — Estoy viniendo —

Anything begun in past time & still continuing takes the present tense — (202.) —

Vivo en esta ciudad, hace un año —

Imperfect Tense — action, in past time, unfinished & continuous —

El escribía — He was writing —

Compound of the present — action, finished in present time —

He escrito — I have written, (this morning, week &c

Compound of the Imperfect — finished prior to some other time specified —

Yo había comido ya, cuando mi hermano llegó.

Past tense, entirely finished in past time —

Escribí una carta ayer —

Compound of the past, finished immediately (Immediate pluperfect) prior to some other time specified —

Apenas hube salido cuando llegó —

Page 317. Future Tense. going to take place in some future time — escribiré mañana —

Compound of the Future - going to take place prior to some other time -

Habré comido á las dos —

Imperative Mood. for commanding & requesting -

Escribe (tu) una carta - Préstame (V.) el dinero -

Subjunctive present used for negatives —

No me moleste V. —

Subjunctive mood, for doubt & uncertainty - this is its peculiarity —

The Indicative asks or affirms something as a fact or an existing reality -

The Subjunctive, something as doubtful, or supposititious, existing in the mind of the speaker

Digo que va á la escuela -

Quiero — a — vaya — " — " —

The first is a fact - He goes to school - therefore the indicative -

The second. is only a wish, a conception of the mind therefore the subjunctive.

The subjunctive, preceded by que, may be used when the governing verb expresses - will, desire, doubt, fear, command, consent (affections of the mind generally) when its subject is different from that of the governing verb —

El desea que yo esté aquí - (p. 218.)

where the subject of the two verbs is the same the infinitive, not the subjunctive, used.

Quiero (yo) estar satisfecho - (p. 218.)

Impersonal verbs & phrases, followed by que, take the subj^e when the dependent verb expresses doubt &c

Es menester que yo le dé dinero -

Page 317. Relatives que, quien, cuyo, when they refer to what is general & suppositious, govern the subjunctive; otherwise the indicative.

Compraré una casa que sea grande
He comprado — " — " — " es — " —

In the 1st the particular house is not known.
— " — " — 2nd " " house is bought & known to be large —
the 1st is therefore in the subjunctive —
" 2nd — " — " — " — indicative —

318. Relatives, preceded by el, lo, todo & cuanto, used vaguely, govern the subjunctive.

Compraré el que sea mejor —

Relatives, preceded by a superlative, or by solo, ninguno, cualquiera, nadie &c, govern the subjunctive —

Es el hombre mas sabio que yo conozca.
Es el solo hombre que pueda ayudarnos —

Conjunctions which imply a supposition or character in the following verb, generally take the subjunctive —

a fin que,
ansi que
aun cuando que
siempre que } V. Veya —
&c

The verb following cuando, is in the subjunctive, when it has a future sense & is accompanied by another verb with a future sense, expressed or understood.

Cuando le vea, hablaré con él —

Verbs, used interrogatively or negatively, take the dependent verb in the subjunctive if the speaker expresses, with the latter, doubt or uncertainty.

Dice V. que el está enfermo?
No digo " " está —

Page.

318. The present Subjunctive is used, when the governing clause is present or future, to denote a time either present or future to it.

Dudo / Dudaré } que él venga aquí.

The compound of the present is used when the governing clause is present or future, to denote a time past to it –

Dudo / Dudaré } que él haya venido aquí.

The 1st or 3d form (ra or se) of the Imperfect is used when the governing clause is past, to denote a time present or future to it –

El quería que su hijo fuera ó fuese docto.

319. The Imperfect of Subjunctive also used in conditional phrases (should or would) and commonly attended by if & a verb in the Imperfect – The verb accompanying if may take the 1st or 3d form (ra or se), & the other, the 1st or 2d (ra or ria) form –

If I had money, I would travel –

Si yo tuviera / tuviese } dinero, { viajara / viajaría – (See Sales' Gr. p. 49. Note)

This tense is used with several other expressions equivalent to above, with other conjunctions implying condition, & sometim. without any other clause –

Sales p. 49.

Si él viniese, ellos se irían.

Aunque él fuese pobre, sería feliz.

El querría ser rico (without any other clause)

The compound of this Imperfect (~~with the past participle~~) is used, like the above, but to denote time past in the governing clause & some condition connected with past time – thus.

Page
319. Compound of Imperfect Subj: (Cont.) thus,

Did you doubt that he had been sick?

Dudaba V. que él { hubiera / hubiese } estado enfermo?

If I had had money, I should have travelled.

Si yo { hubiera / hubiese } tenido dinero, { hubiera / habria } viajado.

Cual de estos habria preferido V? (without any other clause)

-other forms of expression -

Yo le he escrito (afirmativo) que venga -

Cree V. que me lo negasen, si les suplicara?

-" " " - " - " hubiesen negado,

si les hubiera suplicado?

Ha habido jamas un hombre que haya trabajado mas?

The subjunctive Future, used in conditional phrases with si, instead of the Subj: Imperf. (ra, ria, se), to denote future time -

Si yo tuviere dinero, viajaré -

also used with cuando, & relatives of vague sense.

Cuando yo tuviere libros, leeré -

El que fuere estudioso, será docto.

320. The compound of the Subj: Future is used instead of the future when have in English is used with future time -

When I shall have finished my work, I will go with you.

Cuando yo hubiere acabado mi trabajo, iré con V.

The Infinitive Mood often used with a preposition instead of the gerund -

Trabaja sin cesar. (Thess. 5.17) - and as a noun with the art. el: - me gusta mucho -

Two verbs, connected in English, the 2d the result of the 1st - the 2d is in the infinitive -

Iré a comprar vino. Venga a hacer mi cama.

Page
321. Verbs, reflective in Spanish (tho' not in English) which express a doing of something to a part of oneself.

Me lavo las manos —

Phrases, where the proper object of the verb is made the subject — are made reflective —

Cotton sells well — el algodon se vende bien.

also passive forms,

That book is easily understood — } Ese libro se entiende fácilmente.

—

Many verbs are essentially reflective, for which no general rule can be given; and others, not essentially so, are often made so, when they express doing anything for one's own benefit — and verbs followed by each other — one another —

El se abstiene de vino —
He abstains from wine —
El se comió la fruta,
He ate the fruit —
y se bebió el vino.
and drank the wine —

Se aborrecen el uno al otro —
They hate each other —

Two actions performed at the same time, the more enduring takes the gerund —

El habló durmiendo —

The past participle never varies with haber: in all other cases, it agrees with its noun, in gender & number —

He visto tu mi pluma?
No la he visto —
Ella es amada de él.
Ellos serán pagados por mi —

46. Ser — Estar — Ser (permanent) Estar (transient) to be —

Pt. Para – Particular explanations not given in this grammar –

Salvá says –

Por serves in its most common signification to denote the origin, motive, or cause of an action or desire –

Para, an end or object to which one is directed.

Comerá por acompañar á Vds. –
Habio por beber –
these denote clearly the motive –

Como para satisfacer el hambre
Me preparo para entrar en el baño –
these denote the tendency of the action.

But where the phrases admits of both significations, either of the prepositions may be used –

Mudé de tono por or para no disgustar á mi padre.

See Salvá p. 255 – 257 –
" Sales " 160.
" de Vere " 157 –

Para has a close relation with parar (or á un termino ó llegar á un fin) – since it signifies the object to which the action of the verb is directed –

"El uso actual distingue ambas partículas, denotando para, el fin ó objeto, y por, la razon ó causa –" Clemencin – D. Quijote
V. 11, p. 315. Note –

[illegible]
[illegible] - [illegible]
[illegible] - [illegible]
Fridento - [illegible] to [illegible]
Fdeau - to [illegible]
Fideau - to [illegible]
[illegible] - a remnant
[illegible] - [illegible] (show) case
[illegible] - measure (for measuring)
[illegible]
[illegible] - [illegible] false [illegible]
[illegible] - lace (for [illegible])
[illegible] - [illegible] (journey) [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] - [illegible] lion) 307.
[illegible]

[illegible] (Clan - [illegible])
Barandx - fence (lit. [illegible])
[illegible] - language, [illegible]
[illegible] 97.
[illegible]
[illegible] - [illegible]
[illegible]

p 275 - Alguna de comer la familia y [illegible]
-4- Siempre andaba cazando - always went a hunting
-4- Suplicar le tomar el tiempo de la posesión prestada - [illegible]
277. Important rule about spelling proper names - Solar ground [illegible]
281. Dimensiones - tener de ancho a nosotros - Cuando tenga de alto [illegible]
283 - Vengo a pedir prestado a V. I come to borrow of [illegible]
288. Cuiero cortarme el pelo - here my [illegible]
292 - 14 years & going on 15 yrs - Catorce años y va en los quince
293 - Ha sido (not estado) siempre un hombre muy [illegible]
-4- V puede tener 50 años o muy cerca de ellos (dice).
294 - No es extraño que se casara de esa edad (at that [illegible]
-4- de catorce años (at) - A menos que no tenga 15 años
-4- el clima de Cuba es muy [illegible] al de Marzo
-4- ya los cinco meses de casada - [illegible] 5 months [illegible]
296 - Nouns of weight, measure, number take the plural [illegible]
por docenas - [illegible] - por docenas, por leños
297 - El precio de altura - He [illegible] the measure [illegible]
-4- No compraré á V. una casa - [illegible]
298 No tiene V. aceite para las [illegible] muy dedicado? at [illegible]
-4- Que en los pasados que llegaba - [illegible]
299 - Alcanzar (reach) (attain) a hit) [illegible]
301. Se siente V. con apetito? Do you feel [illegible]
304 [illegible] con el reumatismo - [illegible] - que [illegible]
305. Bebe antiguos no es muy bueno porque [illegible]
que tiene algún [illegible] - que no [illegible]
[illegible] Es necesario tener mucho cuidado [illegible]
[illegible]
-4- [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
312 - [illegible]
316 - [illegible] nouns - [illegible]
[illegible] - [illegible]
el [illegible] era - parte de [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] Tayo mui ala [illegible] de.

[illegible] – Qué hace fué esta mañana.

[illegible] Fuce á mitad del camino á [illegible] –

[illegible] y en la [illegible] ? – Dió por [illegible] mal Tuce a [illegible]

[illegible] que [illegible] – What did they do after they [illegible]

[illegible] la [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] que llevaba el perro.

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] Quitarse – le tiró off –

[illegible] se pusieron su sombrero.

[illegible] [illegible] la casaca.

[illegible] [illegible] de quitarse su sombrero ?

[illegible] [illegible] de quitarse los guantes

[illegible]

[illegible] (continuance)

[illegible] (continuance) –

[illegible] (continuance) –

[illegible] segunda –

[illegible] hora de comer

[illegible]

Le lo – [illegible]

Le lo le (before a dark) } p. 91 –
– – – –